



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

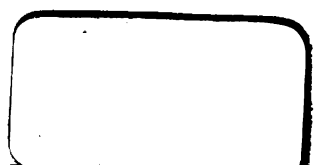
Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

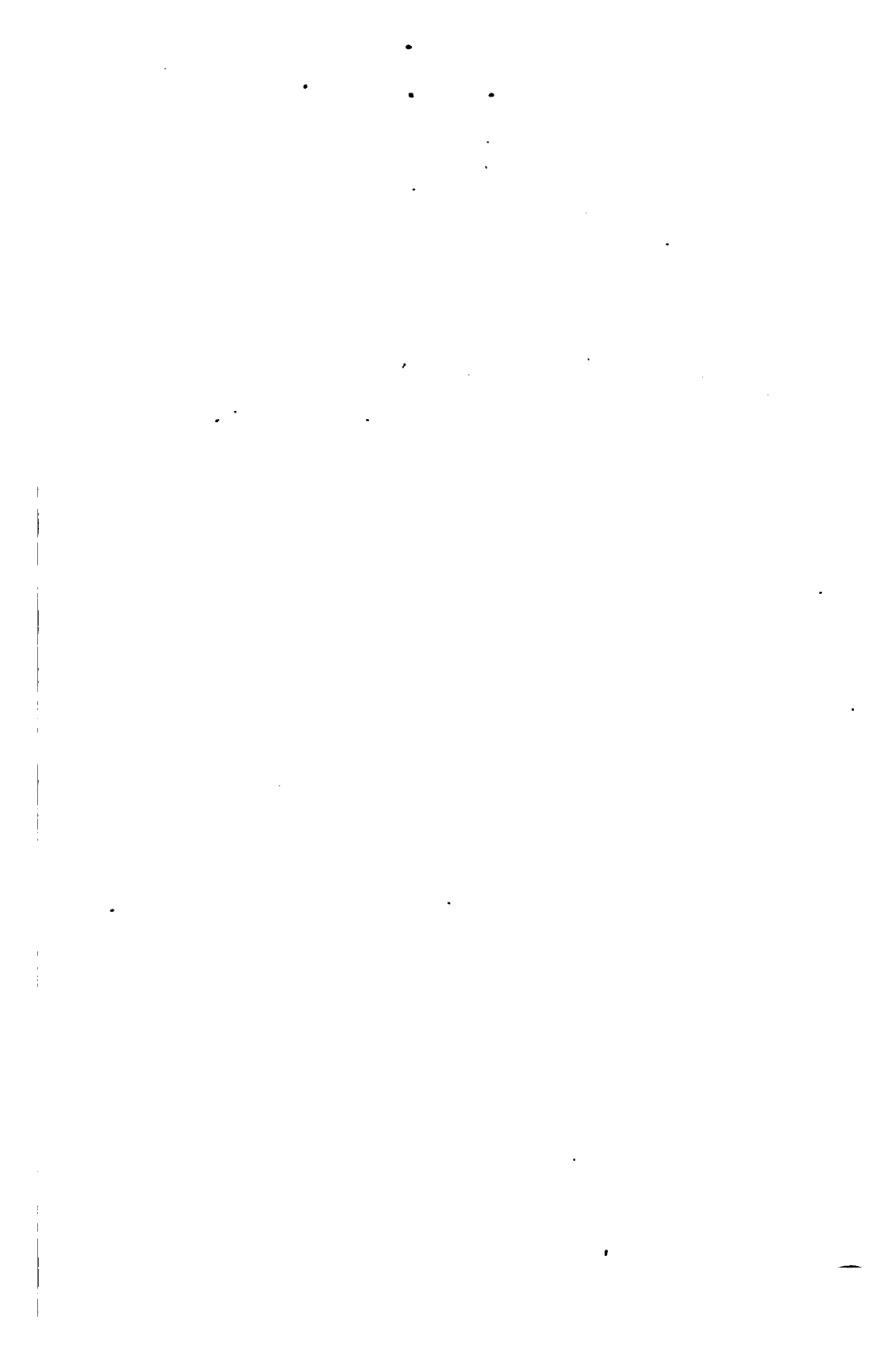
- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>







241

BRAZILIAN BIOGRAPHICAL
ANNUAL

BY

Joaquim Manoel de Macedo

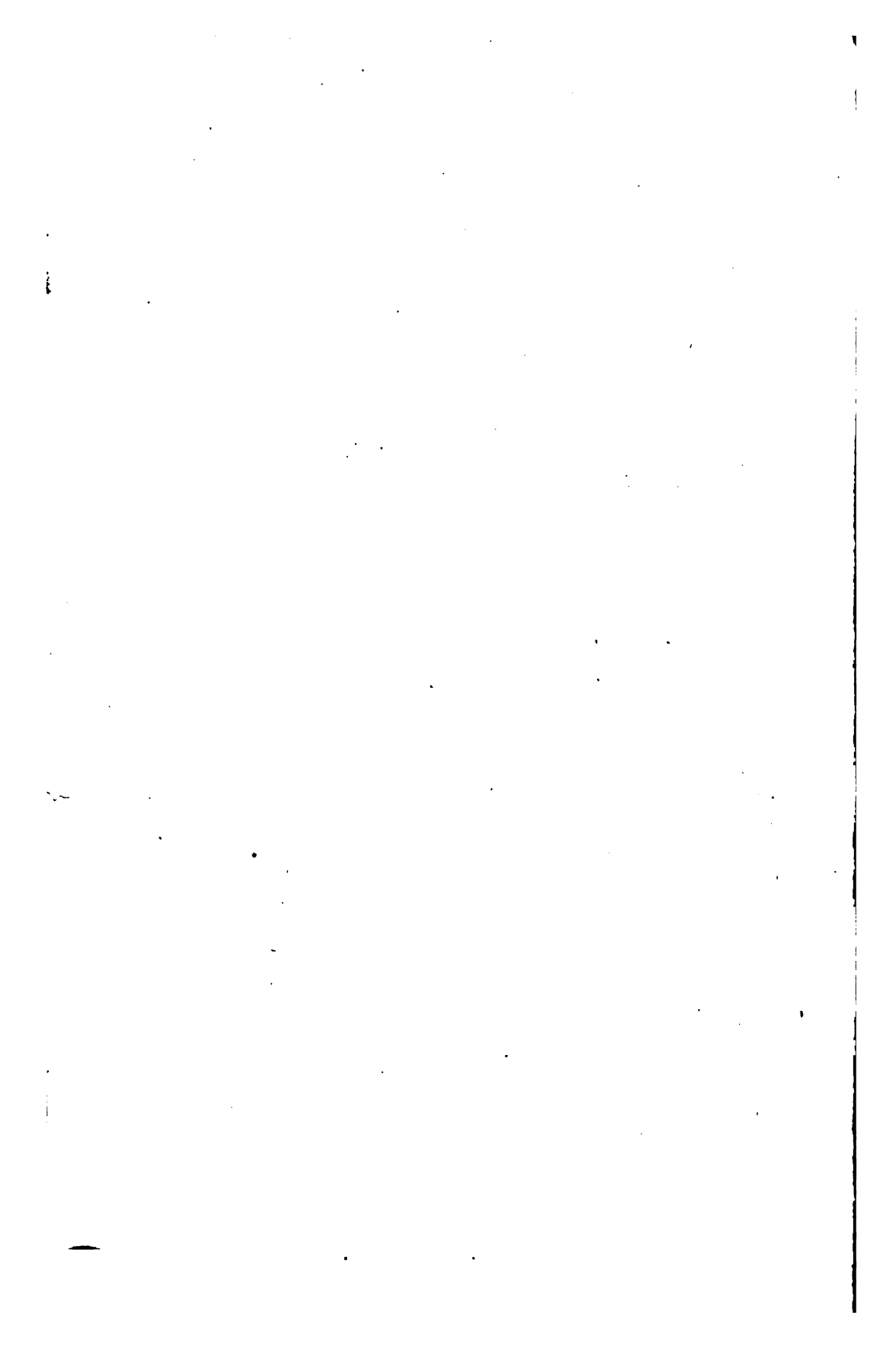
VOLUME III

RIO DE JANEIRO

TYPOGRAPHIA E LITHOGRAPHIA DO IMPERIAL INSTITUTO ARTISTICO

61 — Rua d'Ajuda, Chacara da Floresta — 61

1876



BRAZILIAN BIOGRAPHICAL

ANNUAL



BRAZILIAN BIOGRAPHICAL
ANNUAL

BY

Joaquim Manoel de Macedo

VOLUME III.

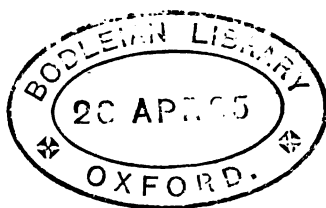
RIO DE JANEIRO

TYPOGRAPHIA E LITHOGRAPHIA DO IMPERIAL INSTITUTO ARTISTICO

61 — Rua d'Ajuda, Chacara da Floresta — 61

1876

ع . ٢ . و ن ا



HIGH COMMISSION
OF THE
NATIONAL EXHIBITION
OF
1875

PRESIDENT

H. R. H. Gaston d'Orleans, Count d'Eu

MEMBERS

H. E. the Viscount of Jaguary

H. E. the Viscount of Bom Retiro

H. E. the Viscount of Souza Franco (died on May 5)

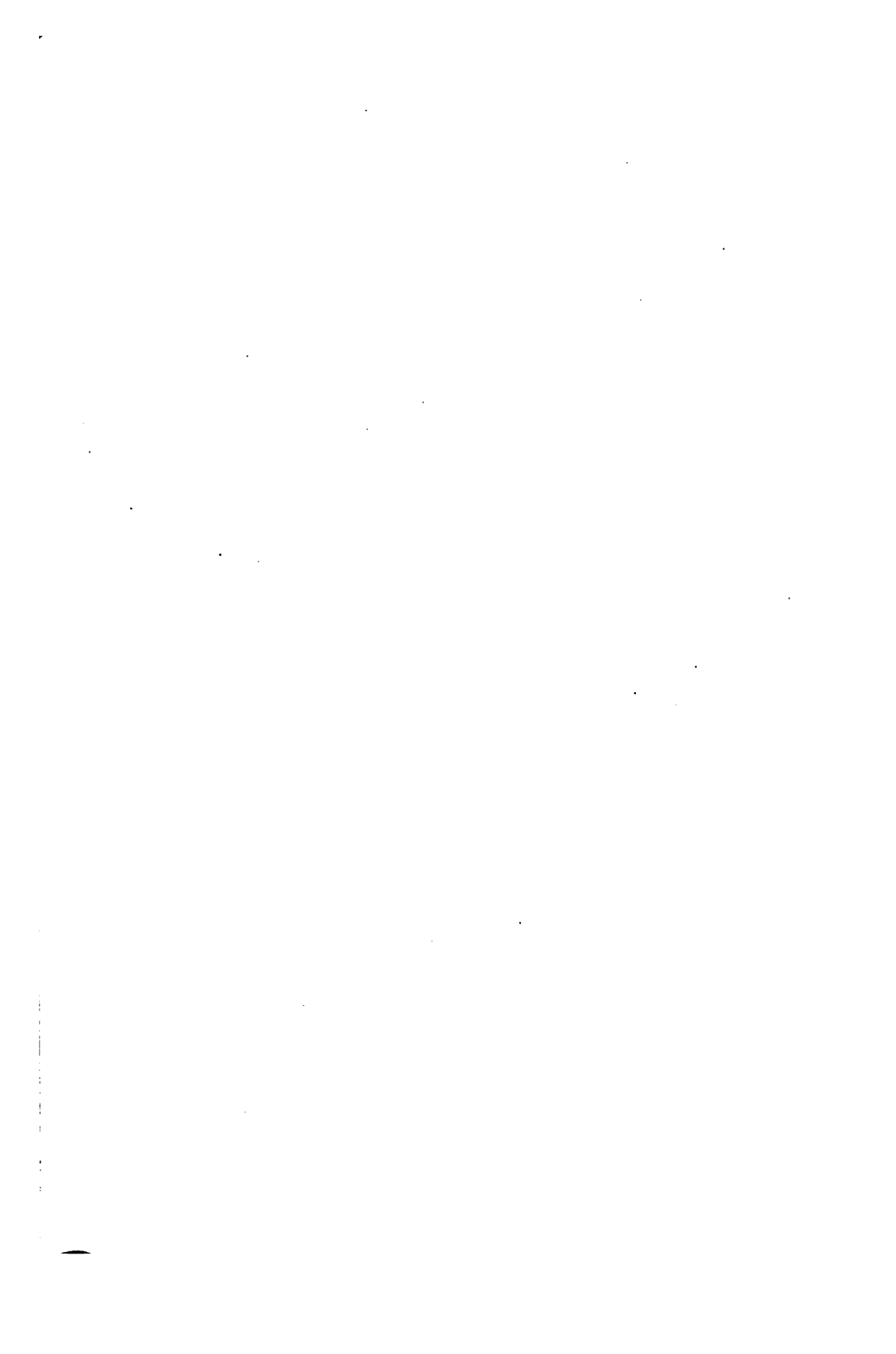
Commendador Joaquim Antonio d'Azevedo



Written, at the invitation of the Illustrious High Commission of the National Exhibition of 1876, for the purpose of appearing in the Centennial Exhibition at Philadelphia, this work is the property of the said Commission and to its humble author belongs alone the responsibility of the errors and imperfections, which without doubt blemish it.

J. M. de Barros.

Rio de Janeiro, on the 15th of April 1876.



I OF SEPTEMBER

D. MARIA URSULA DE ABREU E LANCASTRO



A native of Rio de Janeiro, and daughter of João de Abreu de Oliveira, D. Maria Ursula de Abreu e Lancastro was scarcely eighteen years of age when she abandoned the house of her parents, embarked for Lisbon, and there enlisted as a soldier on the 1st September, 1700, taking the name of Balthazar do Couto Cardozo.

Evidently of an exalted and romantic mind, and of a manly spirit, Maria Ursula does not for that reason deserve praise for those first acts of reprehensible forgetfulness of her duty as a daughter. Some people wish to explain away her conduct by her natural martial propensity, and by ambition of glory which charmed her ; but some casual reminiscences of the family, which have reached our days, attribute the fact to the lively resentment felt at being crossed in violent love. Let it be as

it will, the fearless courage and the feats of the young soldier, Balthazar do Couto Cardozo, caused the imprudence and error committed by the girl Maria Ursula to be forgotten.

The heroine, Balthazar do Couto, was a soldier in India, in the fields of the greatest glories of the Portuguese, and made herself renowned by her indomitable valor in numerous combats.

In the deadly assault of Ambona, she was one of the first braves to enter the fortress: in the taking of the islands of Corjuem and Panelem she distinguished herself so much that she merited the appointment of chief of the bulwark of the Madre de Deus in the fortress of Chaul, and here she signalized herself even more by the intrepidity with which she fought in all the attacks of the enemy, always repulsed. In many other fights she continued to be celebrated for her martial prowess.

At the end of thirteen years of war service, she got her discharge on the 12th May, 1714, and having returned to the sweet and great mission of her sex, she married the valiant officer, Affonso Teixeira Arraes de Mello, who had been, a few years before, the governor of the fortress of S. João Baptista in Gôa.

The name of Balthazar do Couto Cardozo had long ceased to conceal the sex of Maria Ursula, in the fortresses and in the fields of battle; but as a guarantee for her feminine virtue the choice that so distinguished a cavalier, Arraes de Mello, made of the Rio de Janeiro heroine for his wife is sufficient.

On the 8th of March, 1718, the King D. João V granted to the renowned female warrior, as a reward, the free use of the Palace of Panguim, for the term of six years, and a *serafim* per diem (a coin that was worth three

hundred reis, in *that time*) paid by the customs of Gôa with the power to leave it to her descendants, and in default of these, to whom she might think fit.

Maria Ursula de Abreu Lancastro died in Gôa, being up to the end of her life an object of veneration to all who treated with her, and of the admiration of her contemporaries.

It was a pardonable vanity in one who so gloried in being a warrior: Maria Ursula, even after she became a wife, preferred wearing the military uniform.



II OF SEPTEMBER

THOMAZ ANTONIO GONZAGA



A Brazilian from his early youth, a martyr to Brazil, — the Petrarch of the Brazilian Laura — Thomaz Antonio Gonzaga, although born in Oporto in the kingdom of Portugal, in 1744, and baptized there on the 2d September of the same year, belongs to the gallery of illustrious Brazilians, at least in heart.

He was the legitimate son of João Bernardo Gonzaga, *a native of Rio de Janeiro*, and of D. Thomazia Izabel Gonzaga.

His father was a magistrate, and Gonzaga accompanying him had resided in Pernambuco even in infancy, and later, in Bahia: he says in his most sweetest verses:

« Where I passed the flower of my youth. »

From Bahia he went to Portugal, where, at the University of Coimbra he took his degree in law in the year

1763, and after exercising for some years the duties of magistrate in that kingdom, he was appointed magistrate of Villa Rica (afterwards the city of Ouro Preto), capital of Minas Geraes, in Brazil, to which place he immediately passed.

From that time forward the whole life of Gonzaga is summed up in the following words : a distinguished magistrate, a most impassioned lover, a famous poet, inspired by love, and finally a martyr.

A magistrate, rich in instruction and probity, he obtained, in Minas Geraes, the esteem and veneration of all men, being even consulted and much attended to by the governors, who held him in the highest consideration.

But in Villa Rica, he loved the youthful D. Maria Joaquina Dorothea Seixas Brandão, a wondrous beauty, praised and admired by all who could see her even many years afterwards.

Lost in love, and softly loved by that most beautiful and virtuous young lady, Gonzaga, to whom nature had given the gift of Poetry, showed himself to be a poet of the first order, singing always, and only to his *Marilia*. Impassioned, he did more than Petrarch, singing to his Laura : with his own hands, that wrote severe sentences and the sweetest lyrics, he embroidered a mantle for his *Marilia*, a fact which may now be considered documented.

In his sphere of magistrate and of man of learning, and in the expansive and praised revelations of his amorous and charming lyrics, he is aided by the friendly relations of poets such as Claudio Manoel da Costa, and Alvarenga Peixoto who then flourished in Minas-Geraes.

The appointment of Chief Judge of the Court of Appeal of Bahia comes to Gonzaga ; he, however, waiting to effect

his marriage with the beautiful D. Maria Dorothea, remains in Villa Rica.

It was in the year 1789.

The conspiracy for the independence and the republic, which was being plotted in Minas, is denounced, and Thomaz Antonio Gonzaga, the *Dirceu de Marilia*, the friend of Claudio Manoel da Costa, of Alfarenga Peixoto, and of influential miners, all conspirators, is arrested on the 23d May, like them, and loaded with irons, passes, conducted on foot, before the house of his *Marilia*, who, bathed in tears and holding by the window and still with anxious love, bids him adieu ! and a last adieu it was of perpetual farewell.

In spite of Gonzaga denying, and other chiefs of the conspiracy denying, and notably *Tiradentes* his friend, that he had involved himself in the revolutionary plot, the terrible sentence fell on the head of the unfortunate man, the terrible sentence of the chief judge, the terrible sentence of death, and merely, thanks to the previous and commuting decree of that penalty sent by D. Maria I, he went into perpetual banishment to Pedras de Angoche in 1792, the sentence being modified by a supreme judgment of the 2d May, and being reduced to 10 years of banishment in Moçambique.

The dungeons of the Island das Cobras had not succeeded in quenching the flame of poetry : there, as he himself says in feeling verse, he made ink out of the dregs of his lamp, a pen from the point of an orange (stalk), and on the walls of his prison wrote those most beautiful lyrics which will always be read with admiration, but the cruel sentence that killed his hope of his absolution and of his love, completely broke down his spirit and withered his poetic talent.

In the land of exile in Moçambique, the wretched Gonzaga ingulphed in deep melancholy, weeping sad regrets of his Marilia and of Brazil, was soon attacked by a most serious illness, which for some days threatened him with death, and finally having conquered his disorder, it left him in such confusion, and so weakened his mental faculties, that he no longer remembered either Brazil or his beautiful Marilia.

Silent and sad, they did not know the disorder that had commenced to affect him : he married, almost immediately afterwards, D. Julianna de Souza Mascarenhas ; but this union neither brought him happiness, nor restored him to health. Commonly at the change of the seasons he suffered from fits of madness, when he used to weep, and cry out, wound himself with his nails and his teeth, and afterwards fall into a state of prostration.

Thomaz Antonio Gonzagã died in Moçambique in the year 1807, at the end of fifteen years of banishment ; for he left Rio de Janeiro to fulfill his fatal sentence on the 22d May, 1792.

The Lyrics of Gonzaga form a collection of love poems, the sweetest, tenderest, and fullest of sentiment that can be read in the Portuguese tongue.

The first edition of these lyrics, under the title of *Marilia de Dirceu*, contain the 1st and 2d part.

The second edition, published in 1800, presents an augmentation of a third part, which the critics do not consider authentic.



III OF SEPTEMBER

ANGELO DOS REIS

Born in Bahia in 1664, Angelo dos Reis commenced studying with the Jesuits, and entered the Company enjoying the particular esteem of Father Antonio Vieira, who was his master, and afterwards, the applauder of his great talent, and of his triumphs in the sacred tribune. He passed for a notable philosopher and profound theologian. He taught the humanities in the colleges of the Company of Jesus, of Bahia and of Rio de Janeiro.

Father Angelo dos Reis was a supernumary associate of the Royal Academy of Portuguese History.

He died in 1723, in the interior while occupied in catechizing the Indians.

In the total want of ascertained dates, his name is registered in this article on the 3d September.



IV OF SEPTEMBER

BENTO DE FIGUEREDO TENREIRO ARANHA



The legitimate son of Raymundo de Figueredo Tenreiro, and of D. Thereza Joaquina Aranha, he was born on the 4th September, 1769, in the town of Barcellos, the ancient head place of the district of Rio Negro, now the Province of the Amazonas, being a descendant on the father's side, of the capitão-mor of the town of Gurupá, and administrator of the Royal treasury of Pará, Bento de Figueredo Tenreiro, and by his mother's side of Bento Maciel Parente, the grantee of the capitania of Cabo do Norte.

Having lost his parents when he had scarcely smiled on the world, he was carried in his infant years to the *country*; but when he had reached his twelfth year, burning to study, his godfather, the Vicar General, José Monteiro de Noronha (who formed the subject of the article

of the 15th April) protected him, and until he was nineteen years of age, he employed himself in preparing himself in the humanities, and became distinguished for notable talent and application.

A sequestration of the Royal treasury on the property inherited from his grandfather, hindered his already projected departure for Coimbra, and Tenreiro Aranha retired to a rural establishment.

The Governor and Captain-General, Martinho de Souza Albuquerque, being made acquainted with the capacities and moral qualities of Tenreiro Aranha, appointed him, giving him the commission of an ensign of militia, to the post of Director of Oeiras, a town of the Indians.

The illustrious Barcelan, contrary to what almost all the other Directors of Indians did, proceeded in a manner that was considered that of a friend and father by the children of the desert, subject to his direction, which beneficial acts attracted many savages, thus augmenting relatively, the population of Oeiras, and the produce of the labor of the Indians.

D. Francisco de Souza Coutinho, successor of Martinho de Albuquerque, expecting the abolition of the Directories of the Indians, did not wish that measure to affect Oeiras, the distinguished Director, in order that he might not be confounded with the self-interested and barbarous men, that the expected measure would humble with a reproof given in public; he therefore appointed Tenreiro Aranha captain of his own regiment of infantry, and at the same time, scrivener of the custom-house on its being opened in Pará.

Discord, and intrigues, having supervened between the Governor, the bishop, and the magistrate Luiz Joaquim Trota de Almeida, and Tenreiro Aranha, being the inti-

mate friend of the last-named, was dismissed from his employment, and he again returned to his country retirement until the Count dos Arcos, taking possession of his Government, and being made acquainted with the unjust dismissal, called him to be a writer of the great table of the customs of Pará, which post was confirmed to him for life by the Prince Regent D. João.

Bento de Figueiredo Tenreiro Aranha, died in the city of Our Lady of Belem, of Grão Pará, on the 11th November, 1811.

This distinguished Brazilian, who had aspired to so much and could gather no laurels beyond the scientific degree of the University of Coimbra, always cultivated learning in the Province of Pará, and was a poet of great merit, according to the opinion of his contemporaries; but his numerous compositions, dramas, cantatas, idylls and sonnets, were almost all lost.

Monteiro Baena, of whom notice is given in another article, wrote and sent to the Brazilian Historical Institution, the biography of Tenreiro Aranha. He assures us that some of his poetical compositions were printed separately; but he remembers as having escaped the *voracity of carelessness*, a Horatian ode to Martinho de Albuquerque, and another Pendaric one to Manoel da Gama Lobo e Almeida, Governor of Rio Negro, and a sonnet to the mulatto woman Maria Barbosa: he informs us that he (Aranha) had written sundry patriotic poems, hailing the removal of the Royal Family of Portugal to Brazil.

Unfortunately there is only now known and appreciated as written by Bento de Figueiredo Tenreiro Aranha an *Oration, or short speech made on the occasion of the most happy birth of the most Illustrious Lady, D. Maria Izabel, infanta of Portugal etc.*, in which abound liberal

ideas; and the following sonnet to the mulatto woman, Maria Barbosa who preferred death to adultery:

« If perchance you meet with my cold body, already a
« corpse. Pityingly carry, with a concerned countenance,
« this errant news to the afflicted husband. Tell him that
« you saw me, as a faithful woman, with the penetrating
« steel fixed in the bosom.



V OF SEPTEMBER

HONORIO HERMETO CARNEIRO LEÃO

MARQUIS OF PARANA'

The town of Jacahy, Province of Minas Geraes, was, on the 11th January, 1801, the birthplace of Honório Hermeto Carneiro Leão, the legitimate son of Colonel Nicoláo Netto Carneiro Leão, and of D. Joanna Silveira Augusta de Lemos.

Having made his preparatory studies in Minas Geraes, Honório Hermeto set off for the University of Coimbra in 1820, and there took the degree of bachelor of law in the year 1825.

He made his first essay as a magistrate in the following year, being nominated magistrate of S. Sebastião, he went on serving in sundry places, as for instance, as

the *auditor* of marine, and *ouvidor* of Rio de Janeiro, and at the end of four years he rose to be a chief judge of the Court of Appeal of Pernambuco, with the exercise of the office in this Capital: at the time he ought, he presented himself to the supreme tribunal of justice, he retired; because the law prevented him from exercising the respective functions in that tribunal in his capacity of Councilor of State which he already was.

In the magistrature, he therefore wanted the last step to rise to the judiciary hierarchy for the reason explained.

As a judge he distinguished himself by his luminous and penetrating intellect, by a spirit of justice and a certain harshness natural to his disposition, which often gave him a rough manner.

Entering the House of Parliament in 1830, Honório Hermeto allied himself to the liberal party, and at once commenced speaking.

He was not an orator, he was wanting in some of the chief gifts to be one: his tone of voice was not agreeable; his words often failed him, and his speeches neither recommend themselves for their correctness or by their brilliancy of manner. Honório Hermeto, however, distinguished himself by his close logic.

Gaining neither applause nor influence in the tribune, he was nevertheless influential in his party, by at once showing the activity and the energy that always characterized him.

In 1831 he was one of the deputies who met in the house of Father Custodio José Dias, and one of the twenty-four who signed the representation of the 17th March addressed to the Emperor D. Pedro I demanding repara-

tion for the affront suffered by the nation on the 13th and 14th of the same month.

After the abdication of D. Pedro I, Honório Hermeto made a great figure in the councils of the moderate liberal party which directed affairs in the situation of the time.

In 1832, urged by the wants of the provinces, embarrassed by the clear and the positive dicta of the constitution of the Empire in the matter of constitutional reform depending on the powers conferred on the deputies by their electors to legislate them, fearing on the one hand threatening revolts, and on the other almost certain of meeting an invincible barrier in the Senate, the predominant party, represented by their parliamentary chiefs, met at the house of Father Custodio Dias, and in a real and most serious conspiracy resolved that the ministry should resign, that the permanent Regency should also send in their resignation to the Chamber of Deputies, which, to make the crisis a prouder one, would be raised to a *national assembly*, which would immediately decree a new Constitution, which moreover was already elaborated.

It is asseverated that Honório Hermeto had combated most warmly the perilous and tremendous plan, and that his political friends barely obtained from him a promise of a silent vote in the Chamber.

On the 30th July, was pronounced the coup d'état, according to what had been concerted at the Floresta, which was the name given to Father José Custodio Dias's house, situated in the Rua d'Ajuda.

The proposition of the *National Assembly* burst out in the Chamber: the opposition attacked it vigorously. Martim Francisco, Montezuma (Viscount de Jequitinhonha, afterwards) Ernesto França, Calmon (later on Marquis of Abrantes), some others still, and more eloquent and enthu-

siastic than all, the venerated Dr. Antonio Pereira Rebouças, combated the revolutionary motion. But in the midst of the titanic battle, Honório Hermeto either had not held himself to any compromise whatever or sacrificed himself in view of the crisis and of his immense political duty, arose and energetically destroyed the projects of the coup d'état; the majority vacillated, were shaken, and broke in fractions at the voice of the bad orator, who had suddenly raised himself to become a notable statesman.

The coup d'état of 30th July failed, thanks, in a great part, to the enlightened and strong opposition of Honório Hermeto, who from that day forth established in the Chamber his political influence.

Ministerial power escaped from the grasp of the moderate party, who reconquered it shortly afterwards by causing the fall of the ministry, called the forty days. On the 13th September, 1832, a new cabinet was organized of moderate liberals, and Honório Hermeto took part in the same as minister of justice. He was then thirty years of age, independent and active, he wished to govern by himself. Vasconcellos, and other chiefs of his own party in politics, did not pardon his glorious attitude on the 30th July, nor his dignified action in the ministry. In March, 1833, the youthful statesman retired from the government; but notwithstanding his displeasure, he remained firm in his post of moderate liberal.

In 1834, the death of the ex-Emperor D. Pedro I annihilated the hopes and plans of the restoring party, and the fear of restoration broke the close alliance of the liberal party.

Bernardo Pereira de Vasconcellos, hoisted in 1836 the flag of the conservative party, declaring himself in opposition to the regent, Father Feijó. Honório Hermeto

allied himself, through the force of his convictions, to his most implacable adversary in 1833; and was to him the first, most intelligent and active assistant.

In 1836 and 1837 Honorio Hermeto began to be imposing as a speaker of merit. The reaction gave to his voice less disagreeable tones, and when his adversaries attacked him, his difficulty in finding words turned into an impetuous torrent of them.

Vasconcellos was paralytic, Honorio Hermeto agile and impetuous. His power of will, his devotedness, untiring activity, his energy somewhat dominating, and his unsurpassed talent as a disciplinarian, and parliamentary strategist, gave him an instructing prerogative, the guide and chief of his party adherents in opposition in the Chamber.

On the 19th September, 1837, the conservative party rose to power. Honorio Hermeto did not become minister, but aided the organization of the ministry; he remained, in the Chamber, the chief of the majority, and was notably influential in the direction of the policy.

In 1840 he combated the decreeing the majority of D. Pedro II and with herculian efforts and extraordinary activity, he hindered the defection of the deputies of the majority from being greater. On the 23d July, his party fell from power, and he was the first to declare himself in opposition.

In the elections of that year for the legislature that was to commence in 1842, he was not re-elected deputy; but in March, 1841, the conservative party was again called to the Government. In the same year the Crown chose for senator, in the list offered by the Province of Minas Geraes, the statesman Honorio Hermeto. The Chamber of the new legislature was dissolved before it was

installed in 1842. The liberal revolts broke out in S. Paulo and Minas Geraes, and Honório Hermeto, who had accepted from the ministry of March, the Presidency of Rio de Janeiro, went to the nearest districts of those other provinces, and rendered important services to the cause of order.

The ministry of March, 1841, having resigned, he was intrusted to organize the cabinet of the 20th January, 1843, in which he took charge of the ministry of justice, and afterwards of that of foreign affairs until February of the following year in which, with the vivacity and force of his character, he provoked a cabinet question that changed the politics of the country.

In that ministry he had the honor to be present at the marriage of H. M. the Emperor, and to prepare the sponsals of the Most Serene Brazilian Princess Senhora D. Francisca and hail her union with the Illustrious Prince de Joinville, son of Louis Philippe, then King of the French.

From 1844 to the 29th September, 1848, Honório Hermeto made constant, and the strongest opposition to the liberal ministries.

The conservative party returned to power on that day of 1848.

Honório Hermeto was already a Councilor of State since 1842; but in 1849 he left the capital of the Empire, having accepted the presidency of Pernambuco, where the « Praieira » revolt, although already overcome, was not quite extinguished, and he had there to combat the exigencies and the passions of the conquerors, and with the strong resentment of the conquered; but public order was indebted to him for considerable service, notwithstanding his energy gave rise to complaints on the part of the imprisoned chiefs of the revolt.

On his return to Rio de Janeiro he had immediately, in 1851, to set out for the River Plate as Envoy Extraordinary and Minister Plenipotentiary of Brazil, and in that mission, he maintained in the highest degree, the dignity of the Empire, whose most just interests he knew how to watch over nobly.

On the 10th July, 1852, H. M. the Emperor, conferred on him the title of Viscount of Paraná, and on the 5th December, 1854, that of Marquis.

But on the 5th September, 1853, he was already President of the Council, and Minister of Finance of the Cabinet organized by himself on that date.

That was the ministry called the *conciliation*.

The Marquis of Paraná saw the liberal party ousted from every official position, and the conservative party becoming spoiled by the abuse of victory, disbelief and weariness had taken possession of the people's minds, sterile struggles in parliament and in the elections since 1840, the Government being the sole and real electors.

The statesman of the 30th July, 1831, showed himself such again in the Cabinet of the 5th December, 1854.

His political programme was one of concord: the ministry would avail themselves of the loyal co-operation of every Brazilian citizen, without any distinction of party.

In hoisting the flag of conciliation the Marquis of Paraná knew that he was withdrawing himself from his friends the conservative chiefs, as on the 30th July, 1832, he had withdrawn from his friends the liberals. He was, however, a statesman, who, convinced of the usefulness of an idea, realized it with all the frankness, decision, and greatness of his mind.

The Marquis of Paraná announced and proclaimed the *conciliation* policy ; the conservative chiefs, respecting

his prestige in the party, conformed to the times : at first merely making some observations and moderate protests ; but in 1856, in face of the project of electoral reform, creating elections of deputies by districts of the provinces, they rose in opposition at the idea that abusively weakened the electoral action of the government, and which certainly opened the doors of the Chamber to their adversaries.

The struggle was a gigantic and desperate one ; but the Marquis of Paraná knew how to will, and he alone was capable of obtaining the victory in the herculean campaign on which he ventured. He conquered by means of superhuman efforts ; he exhausted his strength in the fights he used to have in the ante-chamber of the House of Commons. He was suffering from a chronic bilious affection, the chief cause of his days, or of his hours of rough peevishness, and of his easily excited irascibility ; that disorder became aggravated during that most laborious suit, painful through his being undeceived in some cases in which he had received the assurances of personal devotion ; by nights lost in long and irritating conferences and to sleepless nights to which the meditations of the statesman obliged him, and the haughty and prizeful endeavor to obtain the palm of victory.

Some friends observed to the Marquis of Paraná, that the alteration of his health was visible to all.

— « Certainly, as long as this struggle lasts my mind will be stronger than my liver ; after the victory I shall fall ill ; and then the liver shall be looked to. »

This answer, we are assured by the testimony of two friends of the Marquis of Paraná, was made to them by him.

To the campaign in the Chamber of Deputies succeeded

that of the Senate, and the unmovable will of that extraordinary man made him boast in the tribune, of all the glory of his most brilliant triumphs. He measured himself with puissant orators. Above all, Euzebio de Queiroz, in a most eloquent, vigorous, and deeply learned speech attacked his project of electoral reform. After rising from the session the Marquis of Paraná, meeting a friend on going out, said to him :

« Go to Euzebio, and tell him from me, that his speech today will be sufficient to perpetuate his name in the parliamentary history of Brazil. » And on the following day he answered Euzebio, suffocating him with his iron arms of closest logic.

On one of the latest days of August, the last voting of the Senate confirmed the complete victory of the Marquis of Paraná. The Giant could scarcely smile at the laurels which were about to crown his haughty forehead....

In a last splintering of lances, the Marquis repelled, being injured thereby, the accusation of scepticism hurled at him by one of the conservative chiefs. A few days afterwards, the Marquis of Paraná, already a conqueror, took to his bed. His spirit had nothing to fight against.

The action of his liver was sickly, and seriously inflamed, was pronounced threatening. All the efforts of the doctors were in vain,

On the night of the 2d of September, the Marquis of Paraná, broken down in strength, pronounced his last words, already clipped and unconnected :

Scepticism.... the noble Senator... country.... liberty....

At daybreak on the 3d September he died.

The immense political splendor of the Marquis of Paraná eclipse his great administrative services in the Ministry of 1853 to 1856, as those which he rendered to the

D. Pedro II railway, and to sundry industrial and colonization societies.

Away from the Government of the State, he was he successor of José Clemente Pereira in the administration of the Santa Casa da Misericórdia of Rio de Janeiro, and his continuer in the construction of the great works, and in the administrative zeal of the same pious institution.

Honorio Hermeto, Carneiro Leão, Deputy, subsequently Senator of the Empire, Councilor of State, retired chief judge, with the honors of a member of the Supreme Tribunal of Justice, Viscount and Marquis of Paraná, officer of the Order of the Cruzeiro, Knight Grand Cross of the Order of Christ, he was also Grand Cross of the White Eagle of Russia, and of the Military Order of Conceição de Villa Viçosa of Portugal. A man who united in his person such rare qualities, could not escape from some corresponding defects.

In private as in public life, he was loyal to a fault, and devoted to a degree of sacrificing himself personally: in serving his friends, he permitted no hindrance, nor did he give way in the face of any difficulty whatever; in political struggles, he rushed to the front of his own party who were attacked, he received in their stead the heaviest blows, and was not fearful of hard language and insults; he never lied; he was a man of firm will and unshakeable energy.

With these superior qualities, notwithstanding his being irascible, and, at times, rough, exacting in services and devoted support, without dissimulation in his imperious will when he was impelled by an idea which possessed him, no one had a greater number of faithful friends than the Marquis of Paraná.

He had a prodigious memory; extraordinary keenness

and perspicacity as well as great intelligence, notwithstanding his not having any varied learning.

As an orator he preserved to the end of his life, although somewhat modified, his notable defects, difficulty in expressing himself, and incorrect language, weakness of imagery and brilliancy but the heat of the debate used to animate him, and irritated by contradiction, or wounded by some acrimonious *aside*, his voice became louder, his speech flowed without hesitation, and the logic which served him for eloquence, astonished his very adversaries. He would answer three or four orators on the spur of the moment, combating, one by one, all their arguments without ever taking any note. The Marquis of Paraná was a statesman moulded on a gigantic scale; for the great crises of the State, and for times of the greatest difficulty, and disputed political undertakings.

VI OF SEPTEMBER

JOAQUIM JOSÉ RODRIGUES TORRES

VISCOUNT OF ITABORAHY



The legitimate son of Manoel José Rodrigues Torres, Joaquim José Rodrigues Torres was born on the 13th December 1802, in the parish of S. João de Itaborahy in the then nascent hamlet, afterwards parish of Our Lady of the Conception of Porto das Caixas.

He studied the humanities in the Seminary of S. José in the city of Rio de Janeiro, and in 1821 went to Coimbra, in which University he went through a course of mathematics, and graduated in 1825.

The brilliant reputation he acquired in the University, both for his intelligence and application as well as for his exemplary conduct, reached Brazil, so that on returning

to Rio de Janeiro in 1826, he was, in the same year, and at twenty-four years of age, nominated substitute Professor of the Military Academy.

He flourished but a short time as a master; for in 1827 he made a voyage to France, and remained in Paris till 1829, perfecting his studies, and frequenting academies and scientific schools; and in returning to Brazil, politics tore him from his teaching, he tendering his resignation of substitute professor in 1833. The name of Joaquim José Rodrigues Torres does not appear in the history of the conflicts and of the national exaltation of the month of March, and the popular declaration of the 6th April, 1831, followed by the abdication of D. Pedro I on the 7th; it is certain, however, that his political ideas had already bound him to the moderate liberal party, in which he commenced distinguishing himself immediately.

He showed himself to be a political man both in the press and in the government. In the press, he wrote the periodical *Independente*, maintaining liberal ideas put forward with vigorous force of argument and skillful form; his newspaper, which, however, had not a long duration, passed for one of the best written, and in the purest style at that time.

In public administration, he began where others end.

On the 16th July, 1831, he entered, taking charge of the ministry of marine, that famous ministry of which were members : Lino Coutinho, Bernardo de Vasconcellos, the Priest Feijó, and Manoel da Fonseca Lima, afterwards Baron of Suruhy. Besides the charge of marine affairs, Rodrigues Torres occupied *ad interim*, the post of Finance, from which Vasconcellos had retired on the 10th May, 1832. He asked to resign his post of minister on the 29th or 30th July, 1832, which appears to indicate that he was

not unaware of the attempt to bring about a coup d'état on that last day. On the 7th November of the same year, he again returned to the government in charge of marine affairs in the ministry which had succeeded, on the 13th September, that of the forty days, and continued therein till the 30th July, 1834.

Rodrigues Torres was therefore minister of marine (save the interval of four months and six days) from the 16th July, 1831, to the 30th of the same month of 1834 ; that is, in the laborious and afflictive times of military sedition, revolts of parties, and grand crises. He gave proofs of his activity and energy whenever the navy had to co-operate in maintaining or re-establishing order in the capital, or in conveying aid from this, and from some provinces, to others where anarchy raised its neck ; and he could still find time to occupy himself about the marine academy, and the arsenal of the capital in which important improvements were made, and which was, by his order, planted with trees.

Being elected deputy to the third legislature by the court and capital of Rio de Janeiro, he took his seat in the Chamber in 1834, and co-operated in reforms of the Constitution of the Empire.

These reforms being additional or the act promulgated, and being about to be put in execution, Joaquim José Rodrigues Torres was appointed president of the province of Rio de Janeiro (from which the district of the court had become separated) the glory having then pertained to him of inaugurating the government and creating all the provincial administration of Rio de Janeiro. In his presidency, which was a long one, he enjoyed the full confidence of the provincial assembly, which then contained in its body statesmen, men advanced in years, men of great learning

and notabilities of every political party ; the whole province supported and applauded him.

But ever since 1836, Bernardo Pereira de Vasconcellos, declared in opposition to the government of the regent Feijó, had given the signal of the scission in the moderate liberal party, and had hoisted the flag of the conservative party.

The editor of the *Independente* also, like so many other liberals from 1831 to 1834, had modified his political ideas, and free from suspicions of less worthy motives ; for his honesty and his honor were generally, or rather by all, without exception, acknowledged, and strong in the consciousness of duty, he in 1836 made protests and observations to be heard against the direction which the affairs of the State were taking, and in the session of 1837, declared himself to be a decided conservative, and from the tribune made lively and vigorous opposition to the ministries of the Regent Feijó, who resigned the regency on the 18th September of the same year.

On the following day the conservative party rose to power, and Rodrigues Torres was for the third time minister of marine in the historical ministry of the 19th September, which maintained itself in the government till the 16th April, 1839, when all resigned on account of a justifiable misunderstanding with the regent, with the personal responsibility of the politics which he had always boasted of.

On the 23d May, 1840, Rodrigues Torres, entered the ministry for the fourth time in charge of the affairs of the Empire ; and *ad interim* of marine, and was as the representative of the ministerial politics. But his influence, considerable as it was, could not resist the cause of the

decreeing the majority of the Emperor adopted by the liberal opposition. The ministry fell on the 23d July.

Rodrigues Torres declared himself in opposition ; it was in that year, in spite of the hostile efforts of the government, that he was re-elected deputy for Rio de Janeiro. The new chamber did not arrive at being installed ; for the Crown dissolved it when in preparatory sessions in 1842.

Being again elected deputy, Rodrigues Torres, was included in the triple list offered by the province of Rio de Janeiro, and was chosen Senator by His Imperial Majesty.

In the Senate he made constant and severe opposition to the Liberal Cabinet from 1845 to 1848.

In that last year he entered the conservative ministry of the 29th September, in charge of the affairs of finance.

Ever since 1840, Rodrigues Torres studied profoundly political economy and financial administration : in eight years of reading and cogitation of a wise man and practical administrator, he raised himself to be the chief of the school, and to a financier of grand movement. In the ministry of 1849, he created the Bank of Brazil ; and in the discussion of the respective project, he did battle in the Chamber, one giant against the other giant, the valorous and great orator Souza Franco.

In 1852 Rodrigues Torres assumed the presidency of the Council, and was chief of the Cabinet of the 11th May, which on the 6th September, 1853, gave up the power to the Viscount, afterwards Marquis of Paraná. In the same year, 1853, he was nominated to a Counsilorship of State, in which post he served with enlightened zeal, more especially in the section of the ministry of finance, with the high qualifications which he brought to weigh on the matter and which his great study had given him.

On the 2d December, 1854, H. M. the Emperor did him the grace to raise him to the title of Viscount of Itaborahy.

The Councilor Lisboa Serra dying in the presidency of the Bank of Brazil, the Viscount of Itaborahy was appointed to that post, which he knew how to fill worthily, as was to be expected from the minister who had created that most important institution.

He left the presidency of the Bank of Brazil in 1857, in face of the Cabinet of the 4th May, to which he made violent opposition, attacking above all the financial system of the minister of finance, Souza Franco, chief of the School of Economy opposed to his own.

In 1859 and 1860 he was Inspector-General of Primary and Secondary instruction of the district of the capital; he presided at the execution of a reform of the studies of the Imperial College of D. Pedro II, and rendered other notable services.

In 1864, the Government passing into the hands of the liberal party, Viscount of Itaborahy took his seat in the opposition benches.

He was for more than 20 years one of the principal chiefs of the conservative party; but death had first taken off Vasconcellos, afterwards the Marquis de Paraná; worse than death, a cruel disorder had shakled the speech, inutilized the eloquence of Euzebio de Queiroz; there remained to him as a companion of the most prestige among the directors of the party, the Viscount de Uruguay, and he, even, already ill and shunning political influence, died in 1866.

Viscount de Itaborahy was, since 1864, the principal chief and the man of the greatest parliamentary influence among the conservatives, who united, gathered round him, and without giving ear to his excuses, which he based on

his age and ailments, maintained him in command at the head of the party.

In 1867 the illustrious statesman went to seek a lenitive to his sufferings in a voyage he made to Europe; returning, however, in the following year, and the fact of a ministerial crisis occurring together with the retirement of the Progress-Ministry, he was called to organize a new ministry, of which he, on the 16th July, took the Presidency of the Council, together with the charge of Financial Affairs.

The change of politics was complete : the Cabinet of the 16th July, being purely conservative, dissolved the Chamber, who received it with an ostentatious and formal vote of opposition given, nominally, by a very great majority.

The Paraguayan war was still going on, and the Cabinet of the 16th July, 1868, maintaining itself in power till the 29th September, 1870, lived long enough to have the glory of hailing the complete victory of the Brazilian arms, towards which they co-operated with patriotic solicitude.

But the prolonged war forcibly imposed enormous sacrifices on the country ; the financial situation got worse daily, and became afflictive ; Viscount de Itaboraahy met the danger haughtily and with wise measures, and the resources that his great intelligence, financial ability, and consummate administrative practice gave him, he perpetuated his memory as well deserving of his country.

The reaction of party in 1868, the elections flawed by abuses and signalized by the violence of the authorities, gave the Government unanimity of votes in the chamber was exaggerated, and much more so than was necessary for the new conservative cabinet. The press, and the senators of the liberal party attacked, for that reason, the ministry with the most lively heat.

Viscount de Itaborahy found himself in many of those censures victimized by the excesses of his own party ; but generous and strong he sprang forward to receive the blows.

On the 28th September, 1870, Viscount Itaborahy and all the members of the Cabinet asked to be permitted to resign.

In the following year, faithful to his known ideas, Viscount Itaborahy declared himself in opposition to the project which had become law on the 28th September of that year, declaring to be free all the children born of slave mothers in Brazil. The illustrious statesman was not an apologist of slavery ; but he was fearful of the disastrous consequences which would result to the country from the principle of emancipation of the slaves, by ruining and causing to dry up the principal source of her riches.

The statesman overcame the philosopher, and it is both a just and an unavoidable duty to respect the reasons, and the conscience of everyone.

On the 8th January, 1873, Viscount de Itaborahy died in the city of Rio de Janeiro.

He was a Deputy, Senator of the Empire, Counselor of State in 1841, officer of the Imperial Order of the Cruzeiro, a member of the Brazilian Historical Institution, of the Agricultural Institution of Rio de Janeiro, and of some scientific societies.

The Brazilian Navy owed important services to him, the financial administration of the state was still more indebted to him. In finance, he leant towards the restrictive and severe school ; he preferred being practical rather than to be an idealist. His endeavors were made to advance ; but to advance on solid and safe ground.

In Parliament he was often a speaker, and did honor to the House by his elucidating speeches ; he had an organic defect which told against his enunciation ; he did not distinguish himself by any brilliancy of imagination, nor by bursts of fiery eloquence ; he was, however, a plain, severe, and rigid orator, having both for attack, and for a cuirass of defense, his logic, and with logical argumentation always strong, and very often indistructable.

On beginning to speak, he fixed his object in his mind, and no one was capable of turning him aside from it.

He united clearness of ideas with correctness of speech, style and manner ; always urbane and that of a perfect gentleman.

But above his gifts of oratory, of his high merit as an administrator and statesman, the soft and fine light of continence shone brightly in Viscount Itaborahy.

During forty-two years of public life and public struggles, never was an adversary's voice heard to cast a doubt upon his probity.

In his private life he left a noble example of pure habits, of morality without a flaw, and of admired virtues.



VII OF SEPTEMBER

FRANCISCO DE MELLO FRANCO

In the village, now city of Paracatú, province of Minas Geraes, was born, on the 7th September, 1757, Francisco de Mello Franco.

He studied until he had reached fifteen years of age, in the Seminary of S. Joaquim, in the city of Rio de Janeiro, where he showed himself to possess a powerful intellect and a mischievous talent; he left the Seminary, a great Latin scholar, and other incompleated studies of the humanities, being besides this an appreciator of the poets and a youthful cultivator of school-boy poetry.

He went to the University of Coimbra, matriculated in the faculty of medicine and philosophy, and having an easy, a prodigious power of comprehension, he was a distinguished student in the schools, and had leisure besides to devote himself to poetry, preferring the themes of love and satire

for his compositions, in which he was encouraged by a company of academicals of that time.

Among his poetical works, the greatest part of which were lost, his poem—*Reino da Estupidez*—was conspicuous; praised and applauded by many of the Professors, and by all his fellow-pupils; but detested and condemned by not a few, who considered themselves (perhaps with reason) the subjects of the satire of the student-poet.

The tribunal of the Holy Office attended to their resentful and hate-engendered complaints, and seeing offense to morality and to religion in the poetry of the young Brazilian student, put its claws on him and dragged him to their fearful dungeons, where they ferociously detained him for four years!...

Here shines forth a fine and worthy action, corresponded to by another not less worthy and fine.

The youth Mello Franco loved and was beloved, and the lady who was the object of his love, otherwise little dissembled, generously and haughtily braving the threats and the fury of the Holy Office, would not depose against her lover, and was shut up for the space of a year in the prisons of the sacrilegious tribunal.

Mello Franco had no sooner recovered his liberty than he ran to meet her, and gave her his hand in marriage.

Continuing on with his studies, he took his degree of Doctor of Medicine, established himself in Lisbon, acquired an extensive practice, and gained great reputation, besides the friendship of high personages. He wrote works on the science of medicine, he was a member and became vice-president of the Academy of Sciences of Lisbon, which he assiduously frequented; and lived happily and in excellent circumstances when the Eagles of Napoleon invaded Portugal in 1807.

Dr. Francisco Mello Franco was already a great notability ; he had in 1799 already been one of the founders of the Academy of Geography, and the Prince Regent, D. João, had nominated him honorary physician of his chamber ; but either the remembrance of four years of cruel abandonment, in which he had remained, undergoing, with impunity, the furies of the Inquisition, or his liberal ideas which made him dislike the system of the Government in Portugal, or some other feeling not explained, induced him to remain in Lisbon, appearing to be indifferent to the Foreign Invasion.

He was a devoted, an enthusiastic patriot, and had been known in the University of Coimbra to be audacious and intrepid. His friends, the Brazilians José Bonifacio, the Bishop of Elvas, and Luiz Paulino Pinto da França, called him in vain, and set him an heroic and splendid example of battling against the invading hosts. Dr. Mello Franco did not stir, he remained impassive in Lisbon curing his sick patients.

The invasion was repulsed and the invaders vanquished ; the Meteor Napoleon was quenched at Waterloo. Mello Franco learnt all this in Lisbon without any demonstration of enthusiasm and patriotic feeling of gladness : he was as if his heart was dead ; his spirit, alone, lived for science.

But in 1817 a letter written by D. João VI himself, the King of Portugal, Brazil and the Algarves, invited him to go to Italy to join the persons who were to accompany to Brazil, the Archduchess of Austria, D. Maria Leopoldina, the bride of the Prince Royal, D. Pedro.

Dr. Mello Franco obeyed, and having arrived in Rio de Janeiro, served the Royal Family with devotion, as physician in ordinary to the Royal Chamber, and had besides a

practice more exacting and more lucrative in the city than he had in Lisbon.

And notwithstanding, even in the bosom of his country, Dr. Mello Franco was indifferent to the march of the affairs of the State, he was merely a famous doctor and exclusively given up to the cares of his practice.

But there bursts forth in Portugal the revolution of 1820, the electric cry of Liberty resounds in Brazil in the following year, and Dr. Mello Franco, heart resuscitating, declares himself, and that immediately and with enthusiasm for the constitutional cause and for the triumph of democratic ideas.

D. João VI already hurt by the proceeding of Dr. Mello Franco in Lisbon in the year 1807, and in 1821 was still more resentful on account of his enthusiasm for the constitutional revolution, easily found a pretext to dispense with his services as physician of the royal chamber, and to deny him entry in the Palace.

Dr. Mello Franco was pained at the intolerent punishment he had received, and almost immediately after the failure of a merchant, his friend, to whom he had confided the whole of his fortune, reduced him in his old age to extreme poverty, to the complete ruin of his fortune, and to the necessity of daily and constant toil to buy daily bread.

Attacked by serious illness subsequently, he went to S. Paulo, and for more than a year continued there, suffering more and more; the hope of the miracle to be effected by climate being quite lost, he embarked to return to Rio de Janeiro, and at Ubatuba, at which port they touched, he being in a dying state, he died on the 22d July, 1823.

Dr. Francisco de Mello Franco was a physician of great and well-deserved fame, a poet of notable merit; and

he left the following estimable works on science and letters.

O Reino da Estupidez, a heroic comic poem in four cantos.

Tractado da educação physica dos meninos, para uso da nação Portuguesa — published by order of the Royal Academy of Sciences of Lisbon.

Elementos de Hygiene.

Ensaio sobre as febres, com observações analyticas acerca da topographia e clima do Rio de Janeiro.

Discurso recitado na sessão publica da Academia Real de Sciencias de Lisboa, being its vice-secretary.

Besides these writings, he left others, besides poetry in manu script.





VIII OF SEPTEMBER

PEDRO MIGUEL LUIZ TEIXEIRA



The legitimate son of Simão de Abreu Teixeira, Miguel Luiz Teixeira was born on the 8th September, 1716, in the parish of S. Gonçalo, of the town, afterwards city of Cachoeira, in Bahia.

Gifted with much intelligence, he received an excellent education, studying with his paternal uncle, Gaspar da Cunha Coutinho, Latin, rhetoric, philosophy, and theology with so much advantage and showing such poetic genius, that at eighteen years of age he composed his first work, an epic poem in Latin, and in twelve books singing the *Triumph of Jesus Christ, our Lord, over death*.

He afterwards studied the higher sciences in the College of the Jesuits and there got his degree of Master of Arts. He embraced the ecclesiastical state, went deeper still into ecclesiastical knowledge, and making a brilliant

figure in the sacred tribune, he passed, in Bahia for the best preacher of his time.

Leaving his country, Father Miguel Luiz Teixeira, studied in the University of Coimbra, canon law, and graduating as doctor, he merited from the Bishop of Algarves so much esteem and consideration that the latter appointed him Vicar-General, and his own delegate ; he always gave himself praise for the wise choice he had made.

We are ignorant of the date of the decease of Father Miguel Luiz Teixeira.

He left works, of which some were printed, others in manuscript were lost.



IX OF SEPTEMBER

ANGELA DO AMARAL RANGEL.

At the end of the first quarter of the eighteenth century was born, but did not see the light, in Rio de Janeiro, for she entered the world blind, Angela do Amaral Rangel, of the already ancient and distinguished family of the Rangel.

She received a careful moral and religious education from her parents.

From them she inherited a large fortune, from nature, the gift of beauty ; but there was wanting to her face which was charming, that other charm which causes to radiate the feeling, passion, enthusiasm, the soul, finally, in the eyes. Angela was born blind. It was a long time before yesterday when in Rio de Janeiro, that most charitable, consoling, holy, prodigy of vision without eyes, inspired by God, the invention of the Abbot of Calais

progressively perfected, offered to the Institution of the Blind Children a literary and artistic education to the unfortunates, who are born deprived of the sense of sight.

It is not known whether Angela do Amaral Rangel did or did not receive any instruction by ear ; it is probable, almost certain, that to console her, and to administer to the sweet demands of her natural poetic talent, they read to her the works of the Portuguese poets.

At all events, it is certain that the child Angela became famous for the verses which she composed either spontaneously or after brief reflection.

The people admiring her, for her, otherwise, light poetical compositions, forgot her baptismal name, so pretty as it was and which suited her, ceased to call her *Angela*, and called her the *little blind girl*.

Angela, the *little blind girl*, could not have, and had not the amount of instruction indispensable to a poet. She was a genius ; but a genius without light in her eyes ; she was a most precious brilliant ; but in its rough state.

She had never been able to see the heavens, nor the stars, nor the sea, nor the flowers, nor to appreciate the light, nor the sun, nor the stars, and, poor woman, nor the face of a man, and in spite of all that she was a poetess !

When the Academy of the Select in Rio de Janeiro paid tributes of gratitude, in a literary feast and exaggerated self-praise proper to the time, to the illustrious Governor, Gomes Freire de Andrade, who had taken her under his very praiseworthy and civilizing protection, Angela, the little blind girl, sent to that Academy, sonnets, and two poetical romances in honor of the hero welcomed, and at the session of the 9th September, were read other sonnets of her own inspiration.

Those poetic compositions of Angela, the little blind girl could not be, nor were they, masterpieces of art; but their authoress had not, nor could she have, instruction, but poetized by the rude inspiration of her nature, without the light of instruction, without a master, and abandoned to herself.

Her sonnets and other poetry are certainly wanting in that merit which depends on the refinement of art and of study; but they reveal natural inspired fire, and notable talent in one who had been so deprived of masters lessons.





X OF SEPTEMBER

FRANCISCO GONÇALVES MARTINS

VISCOUNT OF S. LOURENÇO

A native of the province of Bahia, where he was born on the 12th March, 1807, at Rio Fundo, district of the city of Santo Amaro, Francisco Gonçalves Martins, the son of a well-to-do estate owner, was, while still very young, sent to Portugal.

He studied the humanities in the seminary of Sarnache, in 1823 he matriculated in the faculty of Coimbra, graduated as bachelor in 1827, went through his fifth year's course and qualified himself for honors; but being persecuted by the Government of D. Miguel on account of his

manifesting ideas favorable to the constitutional cause of the Queen D. Maria II he could not complete his fifth years' study and left Portugal, and after traveling through Spain, France and England, arrived at Bahia in 1830.

He brought with him a great fund of learning and a notable knowledge of classic literature. He practised advocacy, till in 1833 he was appointed a chief judge and chief of police of the district of the city of Bahia by decree of the 15th July.

In the career of magistracy he rose to be a chief judge of the court of appeal of Bahia in 1851, to the presidency of that tribunal in 1853, and was superannuated with the honors of a minister of the supreme tribunal of justice, in 1858.

He was Chief of Police when on the 6th November, 1837, the revolt broke out, which had for its aim the separation of the province, and having subdued in the city the factious party, he emigrated to Pirajá, and there rendered important services to the cause of legality till the 14th March, 1838, when the city of S. Salvador was restored to the empire of law. At the same time that he distinguished himself by enlightened intelligence and for his rectitude as a judge in the magistracy, he showed himself in Parliament to be an orator of as much talent as wit.

In the third legislature of 1834 to 1837 he always had a seat in the House as proxy, and in the fourth and following legislatures he was a deputy till 1850, when he took his seat in the Senate, chosen Senator by the Crown in a list offered by the province of Bahia.

He was also a member of the Provincial Chamber in Bahia and was, there, very influential from his knowledge and ability. He always fought in the ranks of the conservatives.

In the Chamber of Deputies, he belonged from 1845 to 1847 to the clique of oppositionists that were called the *patrol*, and in this clique he made himself singular by his delicate epigrams, and by the humoristic style in which he delivered his speeches.

In 1848 his party rose to power, and he accepted the nomination to the Presidency of the province of Bahia, and almost immediately afterward, the «Praieira» revolt broke out in Pernambuco. Gonçalves Martins, in the short space of twenty-four hours, caused to march to that province, in defense of legality, all the troops of the line existing in Bahia, and even the very garrisons of the fortresses ; he became by such considerable service one of the principal restorers of order in Pernambuco.

In the Presidency of Bahia, he occupied himself greatly in works of material improvement, solicitously attended to the undertaking of the navigation of the rivers S. Francisco, Mucury, Pardo and Belmonte. In 1850, he energetically and actively took measures in the capital and in the sundry populated places, which had been invaded by the yellow fever, to aid with necessary succors the scourged populace. He did all he could to favor free labor, causing to be executed, in spite of complaints and protests, which he overcame without severe measures and by means of persuasion and of his personal influence, a provincial law which excluded slaves from the traffic of the port of Bahia effected by boats and lighters.

He created the general diretory of public instruction and improved the same by useful reforms. Besides other things, he promoted the navigation of coasting steamers, that of interior or fluvial navigation, contracting for both with the *Bahiana* Company.

The material progress of the province owed to him an

incontestably patriotic impulse, in the influence of the Government on political affairs. The President Gonçalves Martins was a pure and devoted conservative : he suffered, for that reason, vehement and incessant opposition from the liberals ; but, in compensation up to his death, he was the accepted, recognized, and most influential chief of the Bahian conservative party.

In 1852, being at the capital of the court to take his seat as Senator in the Senate in the Legislative sessions, he was by decree of the 11th May nominated to be minister of the Empire, and fulfilled the duties of this high charge till the 6th September of the following year.

During his ministry, legislative measures of considerable importance were promulgated, and the executive power expedited decrees of magnificent action for the progress of Brazil.

The first railroad in Brazil, that of Maria, an iron railroad of as short extent as it is of immense influence, for it inflamed the enthusiasm, and encouraged immensely great undertakings perpetuates the name of Gonçalves Martins.

On leaving the ministry, he supported in the Senate with voice and vote, the conservative cabinets.

From 1860 to 1863, inclusive, he did not appear at the Legislative sessions.

In 1864, the party opposed to his political views having risen to power, he returned to the Senate, and in a notable speech, he said:

« I am finally, gentlemen, a man risen from the dead, who have come from a country in which the passions have no dominion, and into which they do not penetrate. »

Was the country of which he spoke his province, or his retreat for four years?...

He declared himself in opposition from 1864 to 1868, in which, on the return of the conservative party to the government, he again received the appointment of President of Bahia, where he made to be felt the same action of a man of political party, and the same influence pertaining to an able administrator devoted to the material progress of the country.

In his second Presidency of the province of Bahia, he protected and encouraged sundry enterprizes of great public utility.

Years before 1868 he had already been honored with the title of Baron de S. Lourenço, and later on raised to the title of Viscount.

Discord spreading through the midst of the conservative party, Viscount de S. Lourenço asked and obtained in 1871 permission to resign his post of President of the Province.

That year was also the last in which he appeared and spoke in the Senate.

On the 10th September, 1872, he died in the city of Bahia.

He was the 1st Baron, with the honors of a grandee, and 1st Viscount de S. Lourenço, a Counsitor, a Senator of the Empire, a superannuated Chief Judge, with the honors of a minister of the supreme tribunal of Justice, and commander of the Order of Christ.

He was, in the Province of Bahia, the most influential chief of the conservative party, and as Minister of the Empire and President of the Province, he rendered in his administration the most important services.

In the Senate, he was conspicuous by his gifts of oratory, of his powerful debating qualities softened by his natural grace of style.

A man of deep political opinions, he died without his having once given the lie to them or hesitated to defend them in times of the greatest adversity or in those of the greatest political unbelief.

And he died poor and in debt.



XI OF SEPTEMBER

CASSIANO SPIRIDÃO MELLO E MATTOS

Cassiano Spiridião de Mello e Mattos had for his birth-place the city of Bahia, where he was born on the 11th September, 1793.

Destined to a literary career, more owing to the talent which he showed from his earliest years, than to the fortune of his parents, he studied the humanities in his natal Province, and in 1814 went to Europe, and at the University of Coimbra frequented with distinction the schools of the faculty of law, in which he took his degree in 1819.

He had no sooner finished his studies, and gained the palm for his literary labors, than he returned to his country, and arrived in Rio de Janeiro, and was appointed

Magistrate of Ouro Preto, departing for his seat of office in May, 1820.

The doors of Astréa had opened with ease and promptitude to the young adept, but the times were difficult ones; the tempest of revolution was roaring, and so young a pilot must run some serious risks in the midst of the rough tempest.

At the cry of liberty sent forth from the banks of the Tagus and repeated throughout the whole extent of Brazil, at the retreat of D. João VI and at the imprudent measures of the Portuguese Assembly, that with impotent and mad vanity dreamed of transforming laurels into handcuffs, and a kingdom into a colony the Brazilians answered by hoisting the sacred standard of their political regeneration.

Events hastened on; the car of the revolution rolled impetuously on, and the Prince, who was to be the founder of the Empire, pronounced the first word of Independence in the glorious « *I stay* » of the 9th January, 1822.

In the midst of the patriotic enthusiasm of the Brazilians, a voice which seemed a protest against the noblest of causes, and which was perhaps the fear of the results of an undertaking which to some, here and there, appeared imprudent, was heard from the centre of the government of the province of Minas Geraes; it was a vote contrary to the heroic aspirations of the patriots, and to that vote Cassiano Spiridião de Mello e Mattos had contributed. That which could be tolerated in Avilez and Madeira, could not be pardoned in a Brazilian. It behooves us to confess it: Cassiano Spiridião de Mello e Mattos committed a grave error; he was the young pilot who ran the risk of foundering in the most violent fury of the storm.

But the historian should study the causes of certain

acts, in order not to take as a grave fault that which, often times, only amounts to an error. In 1822 there were still some Brazilians who were, doubtless, devoted patriots, who nevertheless consider inopportune demonstrative declarations for the Independence, fearful of its being retarded by what they supposed to be the precipitation of patriotism.

The most advanced liberals also saw in the Portuguese constitution the liberal element, the victorious representation of the constitutional revolution of 1820 and feared to support the prince regent against it, supposing him to represent absolute royalty in reaction, and creating obstacles to that assembly. Cassiano had thought so.

He erred together with some others, and with them received the greatest punishment for his error, not being placed among the well deserving, who, before his eyes, had acclamations of the whole nation showered on them, and were worthily rewarded by the sovereign.

Being pardoned by the hero of Ypiranga, who had become Emperor of the new Empire, he very soon caused to be forgotten the misfortune of his not having contributed towards the independence of the country, by subsequently devoting himself to it and serving it to the last day of his life.

Being unemployed during two years, he was, in 1824, appointed a Chief Judge of the court of appeal of Pernambuco.

The cry of the *Federação do Equador*, which followed on the dissolution of the Brazilian Assembly, transformed the fine province of Pernambuco into a field of war. The revolutionary hydra proudly raised its neck; and when Cassiano reached the port of Recife, the illegal president Manoel de Carvalho Paes de Andrade, was in the full enjoyment of its triumph. The new Chief Judge refused to

recognize the legitimacy of such a government ; he did not give way, he did not retreat before the powers that were. The intrusive president, irritated, ordered him to come before him and wished to hear the reason why the Chief Judge appointed would not take possession of the place which belonged to him.

« My credentials are addressed to the President, Paes Barreto, who has not yet been dismissed by the government of his Majesty : to him then, and to him alone, will I deliver them. »

On the night that followed the day of this interview, Cassiano's house was surrounded, and he was arrested, and ordered to be delivered on board one of the vessel of war which were blockading the port of Recife.

Some time afterwards, Cassiano Spiridião de Mello e Mattos had a seat in the Court of Appeal of Bahia, and finally in the last years of his life, he attained the end of the career of magistracy, by rising to the Supreme Tribunal of Justice.

From his duties of magistrate he was only withdrawn to answer to the voting of the people and to the choice of the Regent, in the name of the Emperor, who called him to the legislative body, and gave him an important part to perform on the political boards.

Elected deputy by his province for the Legislature which commenced in 1830, he had to witness the tremendous changes of the year 1831, and those which continued to follow. Seated amidst the supporters of constitutional monarchy, keeping himself quiet during the heat of the storms, fearless in the face of danger, without despairing of the salvation of the country, he was always a firm paladin for the constitution and the throne.

In July, 1832, when the highly excited spirits of the party which predominated, and which had moreover rendered such important services, tended to revolutionize profoundly the country, implanting therein a dictatorship which would bring it to ruin, Cassiano Spiridião de Mello e Mattos was one of the first to rise in honor of his oath and of his duty, making himself a companion of Rebouças, Honório, and others.

The party which up to that time had saved the nation from the talons of anarchy, yielding to a fatal giddiness, was about to become an anarchy in its turn, and among the vigilant sentinels of the throne and of liberty Cassiano was conspicuous, being therefore at that time one of the strong sustaining columns of the Monarchy.

In 1836 the doors of Senate opened to Cassiano Spiridião de Mello e Mattos, and there he occasionally merited the distinction of being chosen to fill the vice-presidential chair, the honor falling to his lot in 1840 to go, in the quality of orator of the deputation of the General Legislative Assembly, to announce to His Majesty that his majority had just been proclaimed.

Cassiano Spiridião de Mello e Mattos died at the age of 64 years, a victim to a long illness, on the 5th July, 1857, drawing his last breath in the midst of his family, and surrounded by friends.

His services were rewarded by the monarch, who honored him with high distinction; and by the nation, who with the voice of the electoral urns proclaimed him worthy of their confidence. In the magistracy he rose to the highest grade to which he could, and was besides that, a Senator of the Empire, a member of His Majestys Council,

a nobleman of the Imperial Household and a commander of the Order of Christ.

In parliament, he had not the privilege of being reckoned a brilliant orator ; but his argumentation was close, and, in his speeches, he went straight to the point.

XII OF SEPTEMBER

MANOEL ANTONIO ALVARES DE AZEVEDO

The legitimate son of Dr. Ignacio Antonio Alvares de Azevedo and of D. Maria Luiza da Motta Azevedo, Manoel Antonio Alvares de Azevedo, was born in the city of S. Paulo on the 12th September, 1831, when his father was studying law, for he had married when still a student.

He manifested extraordinary intellect from his infancy. Brought to Rio de Janeiro, of which place his father was a native, and where he followed the career of the magistracy, which he abandoned for advocacy—he commenced in the capital of the Empire his literary education to the admiration of all his masters, whom he surprised by his rare talent and the brilliancy of his imagination.

In 1845, after the necessary examinations had been passed, he matriculated in the fifth year of the course in

the Imperial college of D. Pedro II, and in 1841 he took his degree of bachelor in letters.

In 1848 he matriculated in the first year of the juridic course of S. Paulo, and until 1851, in which he completed his fourth and penultimate academic year, he shone as a student of the first order, who was not content with the study of matters in the magistral authors adopted, but rendered himself learned by consulting and carefully examining numerous works of great juris-consults.

But even so, that privileged intellect had much spare time, for his young eagle flights to take a diligent view of the immense space of literature. The Eagle sought the eminences; the Bible, the songs of Ossian, Goethe, Uhland, Shakespeare, Chenier, Lamartine, Tasse, were the books and poets of his predilection.

And of all of them the most beloved, the one who caused in him the greatest enthusiasm, perhaps the most influential, was Byron.

Alvares de Azevedo began to write, and discovered himself to be, from the first day, an inspired poet, and prose writer of great merit.

Having passed his fourth years' examinations, he withdrew from S. Paulo in order to pass his months of vacation with his parents; but a remarkable presentiment took possession of Alvares de Azevedo the idea that the end of his life was near and that he would not be permitted to complete his academical course, and crown himself with the degree of Doctor, which he aspired to with every right.

Among the body of academicians of S. Paulo, the prejudice was accepted that in the fifth year there always died one of the students of that class.

Alvares de Azevedo used to say:—I am the fifth year student who will die in 1852.

And effectually it was him.

A terrible and unexpected illness prostrated him on his bed at the commencement of March of that year, and after forty-six days passed in torment, in sinister apprehensions, and in dubious hopes, death at length came, and that genius was extinguished at the age of twenty-one years.

The extreme resources, alarms, tears, and affliction, the almost infinity of care, every imaginable resource, all the loving endeavors of the parents, of the brothers, and of the doctors were fruitless.

The youthful poet received, resignedly and contrite, the succors of religion.

On the morning of the 21st April, he consoled his mother, feigning a merciful hope that he himself had not, and a few moments afterwards, seeing she had withdrawn and that there was only near his bed the watchful Dr. Ignacio Manoel Alvares de Azevedo, who unable to speak, was pressing his hands, he said sorrowfully:—« What fatality, father!... »

These were his last words. He lost his voice, shut his eyes, and some hours afterwards the angel of love, and the angel of harmony carried to the Lord on their white wings, the soul of that youthful *genius*.

A poet with the imagination of a volcano, Manoel Antonio Alvares de Azevedo almost frightens one by the severe studies he made in jurisprudence. He was deeply read in Roman law; in mercantile law he left annotated with the clearest elucidation the book adopted for teaching the juridic course in S. Paulo, and the commercial code of Brazil, had been analyzed and confronted by him with

the codes of other nations, which notes, observations, and annotations, which he wrote, bore testimony to. As a poet and prose writer, Alvares de Azevedo, left compositions which fill three volumes, which were published after his death.

A poet and prose writer, he was a man who made his débüt without pretensions, and as if he were writing by chance and without premeditation. And it is necessary not to forget that all these compositions are antecedent to, and barely a few were written at twenty years of age.

All that he wrote was the first flower of spring, barely opening: none of his compositions could be called fruit in season.

And nevertheless, what extacies, what daring, and at times, stupendous ideas! What fiery imagination, what inspirations often so sweet and delicate! His place was marked among the first poets of the Portuguese language, had not death so early robbed him from the country.

His evident predilection for Byron was the cause of some defects which are noted in his poetical compositions, in which he boasted of certain extravagant originality; but even in them flamed out his romantic and rich imagination.

And whenever Alvares de Azevedo poetized, allowing himself to be led by his own genius, and free from the influence of the great poets whom he loved, he showed himself to be better and purer through his originality and sentiment.

His last poem, the song of the swan, inspired (some days before he became ill) by the idea of his shortly ending his life, was the following:

Should I die to-morrow.

Should I die to-morrow, my sorrowful sister
Would at least come to close my eyes;
My mother would die of fond regret,
Should *I die* to-morrow.

How much glory I feel before hand,
What an aurora of the future and what a morning,
I had lost regretting those lost crowns,
Should I die to-morrow!

What a sun! what a blue sky! that sweetly in the soul
Awakens nature, more beautiful!
So much love will not beat in my breast;
Should I die to-morrow!

But that pain of life which devours me
The longing for glory, the sore toil...
The pain in the breast would at least, be dumb,
Should I die to-morrow.





XIII OF SEPTEMBER

NICOLÃO PEREIRA DE CAMPOS VERGUEIRO

This illustrious man was born on the 20th December, 1778, in the parish of S. Vicente Ferrer, in Valporto, district at that time of the city of Bragança, in the kingdom of Portugal.

In 1808 he took the degree of bachelor in civil law in the University of Coimbra, and coming over to Brazil in the following year, he went to S. Paulo where he established himself, and exercised the profession of an advocate.

That magnificent province made a conquest over his imagination and at once seized on his heart. Vergueiro marrying a worthy and virtuous Paulistan lady, D. Maria Angelica de Vasconcellos. Vergueiro abandoned advocacy and, being the son of a farmer, he went to the interior of Piracicaba, to found an agricultural establishment

which being prosperous, spread improvements and kindled animation in the feeble industry which existed there.

In 1821 the electrical demonstration favorable to the Portuguese revolution of 1820, having broken out in S. Paulo, Vergueiro, without thinking of such a thing was nominated a member of the provisional government; being a slave to duty, he accepted the charge, saying, on taking possession of it: « How I shall come out of it, I know not; but although I may be looked upon with disfavor by all, I shall be on good terms with my conscience. »

In the same year he was elected by the Province of S. Paulo, deputy to the Portuguese assembly.

During the act of election, Dr. José Bonifacio de Andrada e Silva, Vice-President of the Provisional Government and an elector, said to Vergueiro, showing him his ticket: « I will not give you my vote, for you would be greatly wanted by the Government. »

In the Lisbon assembly, Vergueiro distinguished himself as the defender of the cause of his adopted country, and in a separate vote which was drawn up as a member of the political commission of the affairs of Brazil, he wrote an opinion that was attacked as being an energetic vindication of the independence of the trans-atlantic kingdom.

He would not sign the constitution elaborated by the Portuguese assembly and returned to Brazil with his brow crowned with laurels owed to the faithful and resolute Brazilian.

In 1823 he was a deputy to the Brazilian Chamber, and there he manifested himself to be a frank and decided liberal. On the dissolution of that assembly, he entered as one among the number of the deputies who were arrested, and spared from the banishment which the

Andradas and others suffered ; for obtaining his enlargement soon after, he returned to S. Paulo, where he again devoted himself to agriculture.

Being elected deputy in the first legislature of the Empire in 1826, he took his seat in the Chamber and declared himself a liberal, as before.

In 1828 he was chosen Senator in the list offered by the Province of Minas Geraes.

In the senate he took the first place, as an immovable and strenuous liberal, and became one of the most popular and influential among the opposition.

The name of Vergueiro was then the type of the liberal party ; his moral influence was worth an army ; for the people reposed in him the most decided confidence.

In 1831 he was the first to sign the representation addressed to the Emperor D. Pedro I by a Senator (himself) and twenty-three deputies on the extremely perilous and threatening aspect of the State.

On the night of the 6th April and in the face of the revolution, or the demonstration requiring the dismissal of the ministry organized on the eve before, many people say and maintain that D. Pedro I sent to search for Vergueiro to entrust to him the organization of a cabinet, which, doubtless, would content the people in revolutionary distrust. If Vergueiro was really looked for, it is certain that he was not met with.

The Emperor D. Pedro I abdicated the crown at one or two o'clock of the morning of the 7th April, and D. Pedro II, the heir to the throne, being five years and four months old ; the senators and deputies who were in the capital met in the senate house, and appointed a provisional regency, and one of the three members who composed it was Vergueiro.

In 1832 he entered the ministry, occupying the post of minister of the Empire, and *ad interim*, that of finance.

From 1837 to 1842 he exercised the office of director of the juridical course of instruction in S. Paulo.

In 1840 he was, in the senate, one of the strongest advocates for the majority of H. M. the Emperor D. Pedro I, and in the following year, at the great ceremony of the coronation, the Emperor did him the grace of presenting him with the grand cross of the Cruzeiro.

In 1842, the Senator Vergueiro was, together with other liberal chiefs of S. Paulo, prosecuted on account of the revolt which had broken out in that province and been smothered; but the Senate judged the prosecution to be incompatible.

Five years afterwards the illustrious citizen returned to the government by accepting the ministry of justice; but bordering on his seventieth year, and rendered peevish by illness, his strength failed him, and he suffered from a most serious attack of cerebral fever.

Vergueiro lived still for years, and in each legislative session the venerable old man always rose and made his trembling but energetic voice heard in defense of liberal principles. In each speech, there was almost sure to be an idea, seemingly predominant—the freedom of the vote, free election—which he ardently called for. Away from political and party questions, he constantly fought for the interests and necessity of colonization.

One of the well-deserving of his country, he was among the number of the glorious paladins of the Independence; in the political and parliamentary struggles of the Empire of Brazil he was, during nearly forty years or until his death, one of the chiefs of greatest prestige of the liberal

party, and he never, for a single day, became cool, much less hesitating, in the maintainance of his ideas.

The glory pertained to him of taking the initiative in S. Paulo of introducing free agricultural labor, by admitting on his estates a great number of European colonists, with whom a trial was made of joint interest.

Nicoláo Pereira de Campos Vergueiro died at 80 years of age.

XIV OF SEPTEMBER

ANTONIO ELIZIARIO DE MIRANDA E BRITO



A native of Lisbon, where he was born in 1786, Antonio Elizario de Miranda e Brito, destined for a military career, he took the oaths in 1796.

He matriculated in the naval academy in Lisbon in 1802, the year in which he was acknowledged a cadet, and there went through the course of mathematics, and was approved with distinction in the two first years in fortification, artillery and drawing.

In 1808 he came to serve in Brazil, with the rank of ensign in the 3d regiment of infantry of the line of the capital, and by decree of the 19th July of the same year, he served as 2d lieutenant of the corps of engineers, being employed in the telegraph service at the orders of the respective director.

From that date forward, his life is signalized by a series of important services rendered as an engineer, as a soldier, and as an administrator.

From 1809 to 1816 the young officer was incessantly occupied, now in raising plans of fortifications and in constructing sundry bridges for the new capital of the Portuguese monarchy and of neighboring places, now in levellings and in works for conducting the water through pipes to serve the fountain in the Campo da Acclamação.

In 1817 he went to Pernambuco to give his valuable aid to re-establish order, and when he had sheathed his sword, he returned to continue the works that had been interrupted, and he executed other new ones.

In 1822 he nobly and gallantly adhered faithfully to the Prince Regent of Brazil, and therefore adhered to the cause of the Independence, which ensured to him a new, a fine and grateful country. He obtained honorably the epaulettes of a Lieutenant-Colonel, when serving under the command of Colonel Nobrega, and executing with zeal and activity the notable commission of assembling in the camp of Brandão the militia of the semi-circular bay districts that were to oppose the Luzitanian division commanded by Avilez, according to what he himself had proposed in writing, to the Prince D. Pedro, afterwards first Emperor of Brazil.

For so brilliant a service, he was mentioned with distinction in the order of the day, as he will have a place of honor among the well deserving of the political regeneration of Brazil.

In 1826 Antonio Eliziario de Miranda e Brito marched to the plains of the south, where war had been kindled ; he there served as quarter-master general of the army. He became remarkable for praiseworthy actions, and

taking part in the battle of the *Passo do Roxario*, he obtained his brevet-colonelcy for distinguished service. The grades which are gained through the whistling of balls and the noise of arms are the finest and most undeniable testimonies of the valor and worth of a soldier.

From 1829 to 1831 he was Governor at Arms of Maranhão.

In 1836 the rebellion of Rio Grande do Sul had taken increment and imposed on the Empire the necessity of employing the efforts of her bravest and most loyal subjects to combat it.

Antonio Elizario could not remain forgotten ; he went to take the command of a force in the south ; shortly afterwards he was appointed President and Commander of Arms of the Province, being in that same year removed to exercise the same functions in Santa Catharina.

In 1837 to 1839 he returned to and remained in Rio Grande do Sul in the quality of President of the Province and commander of the forces in operation. More than ever threateningly spread the rebellion in that extremity of the Empire ; the commission was therefore an arduous one, most important, and replete with grave responsibility. Antonio Elizario showed that he did not undervalue it ; if he did not return with laurels of victory adorning his forehead, he, at least, left a disciplined army, and fit to achieve daring triumphs, as it afterwards showed it was. The Government acknowledged and rewarded the services of Antonio Elizario by promoting him to a brevet Field Marshalcy.

Retiring to the capital, the illustrious general was called to fulfill sundry commissions, and took *ad interim* in 1845 the command of arms of the capital, and kept it till the following year. In 1846 he was nominated as a


voter in the Supreme Military Council, and by decree of 2d December, 1850, was further named a member of the Commission of Engineers created by decree of 14th September of the same year, and finally by that of the 22d April, 1852, was superannuated in the rank of marshal of the army, he continuing in the exercise of Counselor (of the department) of war.

Intelligence and zeal in command, fidelity and discipline at all times and under every circumstance, prudence and sagacity to prevent a disaster, calmness and valor in the attack and unabating vigor in resistance, are some of the principal qualities that recommended Marshal Elizario as a soldier.

A good friend, an affectionate relation, an honorable and beneficent citizen, is what he was in social life.

In 1858 an old and rebellious disorder which suddenly increased in malignity prostrated the old general on a bed of pain, from whence he never moved save when he was taken to his last resting-place. Long and torturing was the malady, but not even so were the patience and the resignation of the noble veteran overcome, who died calm and resigned as a good Catholic should, making his last adieu to the earth with almost a smile.

Antonio Elizario de Miranda e Brito was a full marshal of the army, counsellor of war commander of the Order of Aviz, and officer of that of the Cruzeiro.



XV OF SEPTEMBER

D. FRIAR BERNARDO DE NOSSA SENHORA

This pious and illustrious man was born in Pernambuco in the eighteenth century.

Devoting himself to the priesthood, he distinguished himself so greatly for his profound learning and exemplary virtues, that he was elected and consecrated Bishop of Meliapor; he was of the order of Santo Agostinho, confessor of both the Marquis and Marchioness of Tavora, when that Portuguese nobleman filled the post of viceroy of India.

In a precious manuscript left by General Abreu e Lima, the latter says that D. Thomaz de Noronha, the ex-Bishop of Olinda, had informed him of the immense intellectual and moral worth of D. Frei Bernardo de Nossa Senhora, his learning being transcendent, and his virtues were so

great that at his death, in 1788, the population of his bishopric held him to be a saint.

The same D. Thomaz de Noronha assured Abreu Lima that he had seen the portrait of D. Frei Bernardo de Nossa Senhora—a full-length one, at the bottom of which could be read his name, and the declaration that he was a native of Pernambuco.

A son of colonial Brazil had not risen to the height of a Prince of the Church without he had had an extraordinary well-merited reputation of a learned and virtuous man, as he certainly was.

In the absence of precise dates, fruitlessly searched for, General Abreu Lima himself could not mark them in his biographical notes of the illustrious Bishop of Miliapor, let the name of D. Frei Bernardo de Nossa Senhora be registered on the 15th September.



XVI OF SEPTEMBER

FRIAR JOSÉ DA COSTA AZEVEDO



In a humble birthplace, which was all that his honest but poor parents could give him, was born José da Costa Azevedo, in the city of Rio de Janeiro, on the 16th September 1763, and showing at a yet tender age notable talent and a love of study, he went through a course of schooling such as there then was in Rio de Janeiro, and was soon enabled, thanks to the generous co-operation of some protectors, to carry himself to Lisbon, where he entered the college of the nobility.

His preparatory studies having terminated, he matriculated in the University of Coimbra, in which he obtained considerable reputation, and feeling that he had a vocation for the cloister he took the coarse habit of a Franciscan,

and almost immediately afterwards the chair of professor of theology in his convent of the saintly order.

Besides profound knowledge, as a theologian and philosopher, he studied with enthusiasm natural sciences.

From Lisbon he was called to be public professor, there, of philosophy; and shortly was considered worthy to be chosen as corresponding associate of the royal academy of sciences.

D. José Joaquim da Cunha de Azevedo Coutinho, being elected Bishop of Pernambuco, his friend, claimed the coadjuvation of Friar José da Costa in the seminary which he was about to found in that diocese, and obtaining from the Government the necessary *bene placite*, he entrusted the priest, his fellow-countryman, with the direction of the seminary, and with the professors chairs of philosophy and rhetoric.

In the fulfillment of so delicate and noble a commission, the priest José da Costa left a glorious memory behind him.

His proved merit was so great, that the great minister, Count de Linhares, when the military academy was being established in Riode Janeiro, called the Priest José da Costa Azevedo to this city, destining for him in that school the professorship of mineralogy, and appointed him afterwards as Director of the Museum.

Friar José da Costa Azevedo continued to hold this situation until the day of his death, the 7th November 1822.

This venerated clergyman left many sermons in which *the beauty of the style of S. Carlos, unites with the purity of diction of Vieira*, according to what the learned Canon Fernandes Pinheiro thought and said, who *read them*, and speaks of them in his biography of José da Costa Aze-

vedo, which is owed to his pen, and was the source of this article.

But the sermons alluded to all remain in manuscript, and are still at least preserved by the heirs of the illustrious deceased.

Father José da Costa did not wish to have his works printed.

The bishop, Azevedo Coutinho, in a letter which he addressed to him, greatly commended the *Dissertation on the salubrity of the air of Olinda*, which he had sent him.

Adriano Balbi, laments that Friar José da Costa had not published the elements of mineralogy which, following the method of Wermer, he had written for his scholars.

It is certain that he had also composed, and had communicated to his friends sundry memoirs on subjects pertaining to the sciences which he cultivated ; no one, however, knows where they are.

The friar was poor, the press had barely commenced giving light to Brazil ; but that light was dear.



XVII OF SEPTEMBER

AURELIANO DE SOUZA E OLIVEIRA COUTINHO

VISCOUNT DE SEPETIBA



In the parish of Itaipú, district of the town of Praia Grande, later on city of Nictheroy, capital of the province of Rio de Janeiro, was born, on the 21st July, 1800, Aureliano de Souza e Oliveira Coutinho, son of the Colonel of Engineers, of the same name and surname.

Aureliano studied Latin in the seminary of S. José, and merited the highest praise and particular esteem of his professor, the celebrated Latin scholar, Father João Baptista Soares de Meirelles; he afterwards matriculated in

the military academy, in which for two consecutive years he carried off the first prize.

The King D. VI, in consideration of the services of his father, granted to Aureliano a modest pension, with the express condition of his graduating in natural sciences at the University of Coimbra.

The young Brazilian student went off to Portugal on the 21st July, 1820 ; but could not avail himself of the King's favor because he preferred taking his degree in law.

As soon as he obtained his degree he returned, in 1825, to his country and was appointed to S. João d'el-Rey and Ouro Preto as magistrate and judge : strictly fulfilling his duties of a magistrate, he dealt out justice with exemplary impartiality, collected very large sums which had been looked upon as lost, and being an active man and much given to progress, attempted to found a library. He honored with his esteem young men of talent, and finally proceeded in such a way that the Province of Minas Geraes elected him deputy to the second legislature, and having, for that reason, to come to Rio de Janeiro, he was accompanied, to take leave of him, by a numerous concourse of citizens, and received a written testimony of their gratitude and regret at his departure, signed by six hundred of them, and in which could be read the following memorable words : « Go, covered with blessings, you man of probity and loyalty : the purity of your conscience obtained for you a glorious title ; you well know that you are called here the upright Judge. »

In 1830 Aureliano accepted the presidency of the province of S. Paulo, then shaken by violent political exaltation, and he was still there, fulfilling the duties of his office, when events were hurried on in the capital of

the Empire, and terminated in the abdication of the Emperor D. Pedro I on the 7th April, 1831.

On his return to Rio de Janeiro, Aureliano occupied the office of Judge of Orphans, afterwards intendent-general of police, and he was appointed a chief judge of the court of appeal of the capital.

In the chamber of deputies, of which he was a member, he leagued himself with the moderate liberal party, and he distinguished himself in the predominant circle of the meritorious Evaristo Ferreira da Veiga. He always gave his support to the famous Ministry in which, from July, 1831, forward, the energy of the Minister of Justice, Father Diogo Antonio Feijó, more than once saved public order and the institutions.

That ministry resigned by mutual agreement, and with it the Regency asked to be permitted to resign according to what had been agreed upon, to effect the coup d'état of the 30th July, 1832, by which the Chamber of Deputies constituting itself a National Assembly would promulgate a new constitution already prepared.

The coup d'état was frustrated. The Regency consented to withdraw their request for permission to resign, on the invitation and patriotic dissuasion of the Chamber. They appointed to the government men who did not represent the moderate liberal party in majority, and as was to be expected, that ministry which was called the *forty days*, was overthrown by a vote of Parliament, of confidence and financial importance.

The moderate party returned to power with all their influence. It had two grand and principal tasks to perform:— to maintain the order, the integrity of the Empire and the monarchical institutions, and to give the nation the promised constitutional reforms, assured to the

provinces. The new ministry was organized, and in it the deputy, Aureliano, had the ministry of justice.

Aureliano, being very modest, was not known as an orator of note; he spoke with precision, simplicity, assurance and perfect courtesy. He had fluency, was concise, and of imposing gravity, but he rarely spoke in the House.

Appreciated in consultations of his party, and in research when on committees, they wished to try him in government, and he showed himself so apt that besides the department of justice, he was afterwards intrusted with that of foreign affairs and likewise of the affairs of the Empire.

In that ministry which for him lasted from the 23d May, 1833 to the 16th January, 1835, Aureliano at once showed two of the principal and very salient qualities which markedly characterized him in his public career.

A most remarkable administrator, and active with all, he was a lever of progress, a light of civilization; where and when his influence was made to be felt institutions and great works, that his intelligence and power of will caused to be realized, gave testimony to the same.

In politics, he showed himself a man tempered to resist, to master proudly all storms. Aureliano was of a pleasant disposition, a beneficent heart, a candid soul; in the magistracy, the *upright judge*, most honorable, a zealous slave of the law, Aureliano was in the Government, a statesman admirably adapted by his own nature for great crises, and for the most terrible political struggles. Always serene, imperturbable in the most dangerous times, tranquil without ever losing the charm of his amiability, without a wrinkle in his forehead, or one word of excuse, the strength of his unshaken will obeying the empire of conviction, of duty, and manifesting itself in the most energetic acts,

rendered him in the Government celebrated as the Hercules, crusher of political conspiracies, and of violent and provoking opposition of political adversaries.

Aureliano entered the ministry when it was in a most difficult and dangerous situation. The government had no army, they depended almost exclusively on the national guard, and revolts were breaking out in some provinces.

In the capital of the Empire, the restoration party was becoming strongly organized, and in 1833 conspired audaciously. In August of that year the *Military* society was installed in Rio de Janeiro, with the apparent purpose of attending to the interests of the respective class; but from the first suspected of political plans for realizing the restoration of the Emperor, as Regent of the Empire. The guardian of the Emperor in his minority, the venerable José Bonifacio de Andrada e Silva, a wise man, a patriot and one of the patriarchs of the Independence of the Empire, passed for being the principal influential person of that party. On the approach of the end of the year 1833, affairs were in a most grave state.

On the night of the 2d December groups of the populace smashed the illuminations of the *Military* society, and on the night of the 5th, having again met, they, with impunity, in the presence of the justice of peace, invaded the house of the said society, threw the furniture out of the windows and then proceeded to attack two or three printing establishments which published the journals of the restoring party.

Everything tends to the belief that the Government was desirous of a popular outbreak that should give color to the necessity of taking extraordinary measures, allowed the moderate party to prepare the disturbance of the 2d to the 5th December with unpardonable tolerance on the part

of the justices of peace, who were the police authorities of the time, and without the smallest sign of repression on the part of the Government.

The disturbances had exceeded by far the calculations of the instigators ; in this disorderly conduct of excited and furious people political passion had attained to committing deplorable and scandalous violence.

The capital had been agitated and the people trembled with fear. The restoring party, deeply resentful, and in angry fermentation, and Aureliano laid it low with a terrible blow, by suspending and arresting the guardian, who was sent into retirement to Paqueta, he being substituted in his guardianship by the Marquis de Itanhaem.

The crisis of 1833 had been terrible, the government of the Regency escaped its fall, and the capital a sanguinary revolt, through the energy of Aureliano, who also made it felt in the provinces.

The factions were put down ; audacious criminals, who availed themselves of the political disorders, perpetrated frequent robberies, and other crimes in the city of Rio de Janeiro and in its suburbs, fell into the hands of the authorities, or disappeared through the vigor of the measures taken by the minister of justice, who rendered still further services.

Bernardo de Vasconcellos, who had declared himself an adversary of the illustrious statesman, seeing his efforts in the government crowned with the happiest result, nobly and generously said : « Sr. Aureliano engraved his name on the base of our monarchy. »

Order having been rendered safe, society tranquillized, the minister, polite, calm, but strong, determined and immovable in the repression and crushing of conspiracies and revolts, he threw himself into the field of progress

with his creative genius. The lines of conveyances called *Omnibus*, the house of correction, the Savings' Bank, the Economical Bank, the new *Carioca* Fountain and other works and improvements recall to mind and perpetuate the name of Aureliano.

He attended to everything, to the system of conveyance, of navigation of the rivers, and projects of great works which he had not the time to realize.

He gave the first regulation for the Legations of the Empire, and for the Secretary of States office for Foreign Affairs.

On the eve of his retiring from the Government, the Deputy Ramiro, who was as learned as he was independent, said from the speaker's gallery : « Sr. Aureliano, both in and out of the House is the best citizen ! his services are both many and of the greatest importance ; and they are here very patent to all, and pray God that we shall never forget—all of us Brazilians—to appreciate and respect so well deserving a citizen ! » Almost unanimous *hear ! hear's !* drownell the voice of the speaker.

On the 17th September, 1837, the Regent Feijó, after the formal refusal of Alvez Branco to remain in charge of the Ministry of the Empire, which was to substitute him in the Regency, addressed himself to Aureliano ; but could not persuade him to take upon himself so great a charge.

In 1840, the Deputy Aureliano entered the Ministry in charge of the department of Foreign Affairs, on the 24th July in the ministry of the Majority of the Emperor Sr. D. Pedro II, of which he had been the propagater, and continued as Minister of the same department in the cabinet organized in March, 1841.

The young Emperor was barely commencing on his duties of Majesty, and being very devoted to the Monarch,

he made no difficulty about party in the change of the cabinet ; but as soon as the revolts of S. Paulo and of Minas were overcome, and strengthened and without counterpoise of opposition in the chamber, the conservative party wished to remain in all their purity and in all their political exclusiveness, otherwise, of the disposition of the system of the government of the Empire.

Aureliano resigned, and with him, the Ministry also in which he had had the honor and happiness of directing the diplomatic acts for the marriage of the Emperor with the virtuous princess, who is Empress of Brazil, and the object of the most just love of all the Brazilians.

In 1844 there was a change in politics of the government, and the cabinet of Viscount of Macahé made war upon, a *l'outrance*, by the conservative party, maintained itself by the co-operation and in the great strength of the liberals.

Aureliano was then appointed President of Rio de Janeiro.

The Chamber had been dissolved. In the Province of Rio of Janeiro, all the official and administrative posts, police commander of the national guards, all the power, all the influence belonged since some years back exclusively to the conservatives, who received the liberal President with haughty and unbridled opposition.

They had forgotten the minister of Justice of 1833.

Aureliano imperturbable in his characteristic serenity, in a few years changed the political face of the Province, sufficing for that was the changing the official face of the local influential persons ; but in that enterprize his strong will limited itself only to the complete exclusion of the conservatives from official positions. He only acted as he had a right to do, he could not govern with policemen, and with employés of confidence, his adversaries in active

hostility to him the conservative press attacked him violently and immoderately for the dismissals which in great numbers he cast at the opposition party: but Aureliano proceeded smilingly with his work.

Proceeding to the election of deputies, not a single conservative candidate was elected for the Province of Rio de Janeiro.

Always the same man, having cast down and crushed in the political field, the party that had haughtily and furiously attacked and fought him, Aureliano shone forth splendidly in the Province by his initiative measures, and his spirit of moral and material progress.

The industry of producing silk tried on a grand scale, the Magé canal, fountains for public use, roads and other works have preserved the name of Aureliano.

A decided apologist of free labor, in order to construct the new road of the « Serra da Estrella » he sent to engage for employment thereon five hundred German Laborers: the agent in lieu of sending five hundred single men, sent five hundred families of colonists, who arrived unexpectedly.

The President Aureliano who found himself in a difficulty as to the giving accommodation to so many people, his intimate friend Councillor Paulo Barboza da Silva, the Steward of the Imperial house, came to his aid, and they both planned, by inspiration, the founding of a colony on the top of the « Serra da Estrella, an idea, however, already thought of by the Engineer Frederick Keller. The lands (which were called Corrego Secco) belonged to the Emperor.

Don Pedro II went beyond what his steward asked; for besides granting the lands, he opened the coffers of his private generosity, and, almost on the spur of the moment,

the colony was founded which was named *Petropolis*, and is now the City of that name.

At the beginning of 1848, Aureliano asked for and obtained leave to resign the Presidency of Rio de Janeiro.

From that year forwards he only figured on the political scene of the Empire, as a Senator which he already was.

Almost retired into private life he occupied himself zealously in the education of his children, he was notwithstanding an assiduous frequenter of the Brazilian Historical and Geographical Institution, in which he had for many years, occupied the Vice-presidential chair.

The Emperor gave him the title of Viscount de Sepitiba.

On the 25th September 1855, Viscount Sepitiba died in the city of Nictheroy.

The Senator Manoel de Araujo Porto Alegre, present Baron of Santo Angelo, thoroughly appreciated this illustrious man as a politician and Administrator, in the following words :

« An idea of his was well thought out, and discussed in the cabinet, and as soon as he became convinced of its utility, he put it in execution. He was an impassive Titon, he marched with regular strides to his end, overthrowing coolly all obstacles, until he obtained the desired aim » Aureliano de Souza e Oliveira Coutinho, was Viscount de Sepitiba, a grandee of the Empire, a member of H. M. the Emperor's Council, a nobleman of his house, a Gentleman in waiting of his Imperial Chamber, a Senator of the Empire, a chief Judge of the Court of appeal of Rio de Janeiro, Knight of the orders of Christ and of the Rose, dignitary of that of the Imperial order of the Cruzeiro, Grand Cross of Leopold I of Belguim, of Our Lady of conception of the Villa Viçosa of Portugal, of the Roya

order of Ferdinand of Naples, of the noble and ancient order of Carlos III of Spain, of Alexander Newsky, of the four Emperors of Russia, Knight of S. John of Jerusalem, Vice-president of the Brazilian Historical and Geographical Institution, a member of the Ethnologique Society of Pariz of the Archieological Society of Brussels, of the Royal Association of Sciences, letters and arts of Antwerp & C.



XVIII OF SEPTEMBER

JOSÉ DA COSTA CARVALHO

MARQUIS DE MONTE ALEGRE

Here presents himself one of the greatest among social greatnesses created in Brazil, raised by the democracy, and ennobled and made honorable by Imperial Majesty.

José da Costa Carvalho, the legitimate son of José da Costa Carvalho and of D. Ignez Maria de Piedade Costa, was born on the 1st February 1796 in the Parish of Our Lady of the Penha in the province of Bahia.

He graduated in law in the university of Coimbra in 1819, and was Magistrate and Judge « Ouvidor » in

the City of S. Paulo in Brazil, his Country in 1821 and 1822.

He embraced with enthusiasm the cause of the Independence, rendered services thereto, cooperating greatly to the representations of S. Paulo, by asking of the Prince Regent D. Pedro to *remain in Brazil*: he was a deputy of the Brazilian assembly, elected by the Province of Bahia, where he had been born, and that assembly being dissolved, he retired to S. Paulo both much displeased and resentful on account of that coup d'état.

He was elected a deputy to the first and second legislature of the empire by the same Province which had elected him for the assembly; he was closely allied with Paula e Souza, Feijó, Vergueiro, and other liberal chiefs: he belonged in the first reign to the untractable opposition: he was President of the Chamber of deputies for some years: he established, and maintained in S. Paulo, the periodical called the *Pharol Paulistano*, the organ of exalted democratical ideas, he caused academic talented youths to write therein, and to one of them and perhaps to other students, he wrote, when he was in Rio de Janeiro, as president of the Chamber of Deputies, letters in which he always said: do not forget to pour oil into our *Pharol* » (light house).

He was one of the men most beloved by the people, and had powerful influence with the liberal party.

On the 7th April 1831 he was in S. Paulo: coming however, to take his seat in the chamber, he was, without asking for it, nominated a member of the permanent Regency, on the 17th June of that year.

In Parliament, he did not distinguish himself as an orator; he was a statesman, and of the Cabinet; but a man of great modesty, timid, and not fluent in speech.

In the Regency he felt the responsibility of power : he adopted the ideas of moderation and of order of Evaristo, and tired of struggling, dissatisfied with the way in which things were carried on, and ill, moreover, he abandoned the Regency in 1833, and retired to S. Paulo in July of that year.

In 1835 to 1836 he was Director of the Juridical Academy of S. Paulo, and in 1837 that Province elected him deputy.

Costa Carvalho had very greatly altered his political ideas. The liberal party saw him in 1838, connected with the conservative party by the side of Vasconcellos, Rodrigues Torres (afterwards Viscount de Itaborahy) and Honorio Hermeto (afterwards Viscount and Marquis de Paraná) also formerly exalted liberals as he had been. Conviction, either well or ill-founded, had made them change their opinion ; but patriotism governed them.

In 1839 Costa Carvalho entered the Brazilian Senate, having been chosen from the triple list offered to the Regent by the province of Sergipe.

In 1841 the Emperor graced the son of Democracy, the member of the permanent Regency, the patriot, Costa Carvalho, by bestowing on him the title of Baron de Monte Alegre, raising him subsequently, in 1843, to Viscount, and to Marquis of the same title in 1854 ; besides that he nominated him counselor of state, extraordinary, in 1842, making the rank effective, or ordinary in 1853.

In 1842, in the face of the conspiracy that soon after broke out into revolt, the Baron de Monte Alegre was named president of the province of S. Paulo, and showed that he was worthy of the nomination in such delicate circumstances. His influence in the province, the prestige of his past life, the sweetness and goodness of his disposition

co-operated greatly in disarming in the minds of many of the influential parties, the impulse of violent excitement.

In 1848 Viscount de Monte Alegre was the organizer of the conservative cabinet, which prorogued and afterwards dissolved the liberal chamber; which crushed, after lamentable combats, the *Praieira* revolts in Pernambuco, and which brought to a happy and glorious end the war with Rozas, the dictator of the Argentine Confederation.

In 1843, Monte Alegre had been president of the Senate; he was present as a witness to the marriage of the Most Serene Princess, D. Francisca with the Prince de Joinville, being on that account decorated with the Grand Cross of the Legion of Honor by the King Louis Philippe.

The Marquis of Monte Alegre was president of the Statistical Society of Brazil, and of the Central Colonization Society, honorary member of the Society Auxiliadora da Industria Nacional, associate of the Brazilian Historical Institution and of many other patriotic and civilizing societies.

He had a surplus of favors and decorations to ornament his breast with, and to record his services.

He was a rich man and employed a part of his income in works of charity and in the literary education of some talented but poor youths.

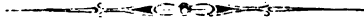
His probity never was assailed, nor ever, however slightly, suspected.

When he was already a Senator, a counselor of state, and a Marquis, everyone found him accessible, simple, modest, good, beneficent, exactly as he had been when an exalted democrat. His political opinion had changed, without his heart having suffered any change.

The Marquis de Monte Alegre, a sympathetic and vene-

rated Brazilian, beloved by many, esteemed by all, died on the 18th September, 1860.

A man of honor, well deserving of his country, he died without leaving an enemy, and descended to the tomb with general blessings.





XIX OF SEPTEMBER

ANTONIO PEREGRINO MACIEL MONTEIRO

BARON DE ITAMARACA'

A native of the province of Pernambuco, where he was born in the present century between the years 1802 and 1804, Antonio Peregrino Maciel Monteiro made his preparatory studies in the city of Olinda, and going to Europe, he went through the course of medicine in the faculty of Paris, and took the degree of doctor in the University.

Of uncommon talent, a clear and gifted intellect, a brilliant and engaging imagination, Maciel Monteiro cultivated the belles lettres, and poetry, and was not one of

the first portuguese poets of his time, only because he would not.

The province of Pernambuco elected him deputy to the third legislature, and Maciel Monteiro at once took in the Chamber a distinguished place among the most esteemed orators, declaring himself in opposition to the government of the Regent Feijó.

He had a sonorous voice, and not at all feminine, a fluent speech, and never interrupted by the slightest hesitation. purity of style, delightful eloquence, and moderated and agreeable gesture; there was never wanting in his speeches beauty of manner, and all his speeches appeared as if they had been prepared with laborious care.

A complete mistake! Maciel Monteiro was a passionate frequenter of theatres, balls, the most elegant circles of Society, and he himself was the type of the most exacting and capricious elegance in dress, always in the strictest fashion, and in speech, he was delicately refined and courteous, in which without pretension or impertinence, his subtle spirit and his poetical imagination shone forth sweetly and enchantingly.

After long hours passed at evening parties, in aristocratic company, in the Society of excellent friends, or in the theatres, Maciel Monteiro slept soundly till ten on the following morning: he then, at times, remembered that he had to speak in the chamber, and began thinking over his speech, while taking the greatest care in dressing himself with accurate neatness.

Immediately afterwards the house would hear an eloquent speech, most beautifully delivered, perfectly planned as to its order of ideas, powerful in its argumentation, and showing the learning of him who delivered it. The auditory was convinced of the laborious and lengthened

study to which the orator had given himself up, who, on the other hand had just been extemporising !..,

Marvellous talent, what would Maciel Monteiro have done, and what would he have been, if he had permitted himself to be carried away less by the lawful and honorable enjoyments, but inebriating as vain, of a life of fêtes, brilliant saloons, elegant triumphs, and aristocratic charms ?...

That weakness, the innocent defect of Maciel Monteiro, deprived the country of a great statesman, or of one of its greatest poets.

But the worth of Maciel Monteiro was so great that on the 19th September, 1837, on organizing the first and most notable Cabinet of the conservative party, he was chosen as Minister of Foreign Affairs.

In that ministry Maciel Monteiro occupied himself principally with the question of the *Oyapock* with France, showing, as he always did, superior ability.

After the resignation of the Cabinet of the 19th September, 1839, he defended it in that same year in the Chamber; he made a speech that was in itself sufficient for his parliamentary glory.

Re-elected deputy to the fourth legislature, and again for that of 1843 to 1845; the Chamber was dissolved in 1844, and Maciel Monteiro, out of parliament during the rule of the liberals, returned to it in 1850; but he no longer spoke; because he worthily and intelligently occupied the President's chair in the Chamber.

Immediately after that Legislature the Imperial Government appointed him Envoy Extraordinary and Minister Plenipotentiary of Brazil to the Court of Portugal, and in that high diplomatic commission, Maciel Monteiro drew closer the bonds of friendship between the two govern-

ments, and the two brother-people, but jealously watchful of the interests of the Empire.

H. M. the Emperor conferred on Antonio Peregrino Maciel Monteiro the title of Baron de Itamaracá with the honors of a grandee.

The Baron de Itamaracá died in Lisbon on the 5th January, 1868 ; all the troops in garrison in that capital and three batteries of artillery paid the last honors to the illustrious deceased.

The Baron de Itamaracá had been born with the most superior gifts of becoming a great poet, a great orator. In the tribune of parliament, and in numerous, but fugitive poetical compositions, for the greater part lost, some however, fortunately preserved, are shining and bright displays of his prodigious talent.

But he poetized, as he pronounced speeches, always extemporaneously !...

And in his speeches as in his verses, although they were both extemporized, the elegance and beauty of manner are distinguished in a high degree, which, however, was the weakness in other matters of that man rich enough in faculties to be a giant in the republic of letters !...

XX OF SEPTEMBER

ALEXANDRE RODRIGUES FERREIRA

On the 27th April, 1755, was born in the city of Bahia Alexandre Rodrigues Ferreira, and he there studied the humanities, showing no common talent. His father, Manoel Rodrigues Ferreira, destined him to an ecclesiastical life, and made him take minor orders on the 20th September, 1768 ; but in the determination of obtaining more extensive knowledge and perfect instruction, Alexandre Ferreira went to Portugal and in 1770, at fourteen years of age, he matriculated in the first year's course of juridical study in Coimbra, of which the university underwent reform in the following year.

The reform had interrupted the studies of the talented Bahian, who, carried away by a strong and irresistible inclination, left the faculty of law, and studied that of

philosophy with so much ardor and advantage, that two years before completing the course, he already exercised the employment gratuitously of demonstrator of natural history of the university, and in the last year gained the prize of the academy.

Having graduated as Doctor in the faculty of philosophy, Alexandre Rodrigues Ferreira, for whom a professorship was destined in that same faculty, immediately accepted another destiny.

The minister, Martinho de Mello e Castro, seeing that the government greatly required to know sufficiently the immense natural riches of Brazil, ordered Dr. Domingos Vandelli, the first professor of the faculty of philosophy, to propose to him a person every way capable of carrying out the intention of the government in a philosophical journey. Vandelli and the congregation proposed Dr. Alexandre Rodrigues Ferreira, who accepted the commission and went to Lisbon on the 15th July, 1778.

Still delaying, or being delayed in Portugal for five years, he occupied himself in examining the coal mine of Buarcos with the naturalist, João da Silva Feijó, in the reduction and description of the natural productions in the Royal Museum of Ajuda, in physical and chemical experiments ordered by the government, and in important writings of which many, it is to be lamented, are lost.

The Academy of Sciences of Lisbon nominated Dr. Ferreira their corresponding member on the 22d May, 1780, and he did himself the honor to read in the academy sundry memoirs written by himself.

In September, 1783 he departed for Brazil and landed at Pará. There he commenced his *philosophical voyage*, or that of a naturalist, in the island of Joannes, and in nine years of investigations and of work

through the interior of Pará and rios Negro, Branco, Madeira, Guaporé, through the Serra de Cuanurú, by Matto Grosso; he made most important searches, and at the same time that he studied the treasures of nature, he wrote, defending the rights of Portugal over territory invaded by the Spaniards, describing the endemic disorders of Matto Grosso, and giving a history of the nascent civilization of the *murás*.

On his return to the capital of Pará, where he remained nine months, he served as «vogal» in the Juntas of the departments of the Treasury and of Justice, and he married the daughter of Captain Luiz Pereira da Cunha, his agent for forwarding to the capital the remittances of natural productions.

The marriage was probably the result of mutual sweet affection; he proposed with some originality.

Pereira da Cunha complained that the Government did not reimburse him the amounts that he had spent in remitting those numerous products and that they had eaten up the capital which was destined for his daughter's dowry.

«That inconvenience disappears at once» answered Dr. Ferreira; «for I am ready to receive your daughter as a wife, and will dispense with her dowry.»

Arriving in Lisbon in the year 1793, Dr. Alexandre Rodrigues Ferreira was appointed a clerk in the secretary of state's office for the affairs of marine and of the ultra-marine dominions, and in 1794 was exonerated from that employment to take charge of the Royal Cabinet of Natural History, Botanical Garden and its annexations.

His leisure hours, after fulfilling his official duties, were employed by this illustrious Brazilian in preparing the precious material which he had collected in his long

and laborious voyage; they were, however so great in number, and the progress of science in the nine years of the life of the learned naturalist in the interior had been such, and required such perfect application, and so greatly did he feel the insufficiency of pecuniary resources for a work requiring not only patience and deep study, but expenditure of capital that was wanting to the poor learned man, that before concluding the organization of his scientific works Dr. Alexandre Rodrigues Ferreira, already some time before engulfed in fatal melancholy, died in Lisbon on the 23d April, 1815.

The Empire of Brazil honors gloriously the name of this her illustrious son, and as a reward to his precious memory has protected his descendants.

Dr. Alexandre Rodrigues Ferreira left numerous and most precious manuscripts, which are still kept in Lisbon.



XXI OF SEPTEMBER

JOSÉ CANDIDO DE MORAES E SILVA

In the present district of Itapicuru-mirim, in the province of Maranhão, was born on the 21st September, 1807, José Candido de Moraes e Silva, legitimate son of Joaquim Esteves da Silva, a native of Lisbon, and of D. Maria Carolina de Moraes Rego, a native of Maranhão.

At nine years of age José Candido and five brothers lost both father and mother in less than a month's space of time.

The commander, Antonio José Meirelles, a Portuguese merchant, sheltered paternally José Candido, gave him in S. Luiz primary instruction, and sent him in 1818 to France where in a college in the city of Havre he studied the subjects necessary to commerce.

The Maranhão youth fell in love with literature, and

was sent by his protector to the university of Coimbra, where in 1821 and 1822 he went through his course of Greek, and his first year of mathematics, with the intention of graduating in medicine; but the proclamation of the Independence of Brazil induced sundry Brazilian students to retire from Coimbra, and José Candido, one of them, arrived at Maranhão in 1823.

Antonio Meirelles having declared against the independence, was looked ill upon by the populace of Maranhão, and withdrew temporarily to Rio de Janeiro, leaving his protégé recommended to the care of his bookkeeper, to whom he entrusted the management of his commercial house.

The bookkeeper was a Portuguese, and in those times of unfortunate hatred, received less cordially than he ought the young Brazilian, the adopted son of his master, and employing him as a clerk, he wanted to impose on him services so low and only fit for the lowest servants, that the ex-student of Coimbra left the house of his generous protector, and in that of his maternal grandmother, joined his sisters; but almost immediately retired to a small estate which he possessed on the banks of the Itapicuru.

Two years afterwards his grandfather dies, and he takes charge of his sisters, gives himself up to teaching, founds a college, in which he becomes associated with his colleague at Coimbra, Manoel Pereira da Cunha, and in 1827, on the 27th December, he publishes the first number of the *Pharol Maranhense*, which was also the first organ of the liberal party which Maranhão had.

In that time of apprenticeship of the constitutional government in Brazil the periodical press of the liberal party, as also those of the government, made much abuse of their

power, and for that same reason the doctrinary newspapers, moderate, serious, and polished, were real elements of civilization, teachers of tolerance and powerful instruments of order. Like the *Aurora Fluminense* of Evaristo, the *Pharol Maranhense* of José Candido carried out those conditions brilliantly, although the *Pharol* of the province was far, very far from equalling the influence of the *Aurora* of the capital of the Empire.

But in 1828 the government of the province did not tolerate the energetic but serious and decent opposition of the *Pharol*, and José Candido, accused more than once by the Public Prosecutor and always acquitted by the jury, was arrested, recruited, compelled to enlist in the artillery corps, and persecuted; until a few days afterwards he went to the hospital, where the surgeon-major, Dr. Soares de Souza (Viscount de Uruguay's father) generously protected him, and upon the President of the Province being changed, the victim finally got his discharge as a soldier of the army.

This act of justice and respect to the liberty of the press was one of the first with which the wise Araujo Vianna, afterwards Viscount and Marquis of Sapucahy, inaugurated his enlightened and beneficent Presidency.

The *Pharol* reappeared, and became *semi-official*; the government of Candido José de Araujo Vianna satisfied the liberal party. Not only through gratitude, but from conscientious motives and paying justice with justice, José Candido supported it in the press, and when the well-deserving President founded the Public Library in Maranhão, (three years before Costa Ferreira, Baron de Pindaré, had caused its creation to be voted by the council of the Province) he promoted a subscription which enriched it by the purchase of two thousand volumes.

The abdication of D. Pedro I on the 7th April, 1831, was followed in almost the whole of the Empire by agitated movements which disturbed public order. Unfortunately, the antagonism every-where between Brazilians and Portuguese, rekindled in the late years of the last reign, declared itself violently. The contagion reached Maranhão.

The moderate editor of the *Pharol* had suffered greatly in the persecutions, in prison, and in the artillery corps in which they had obliged him to enlist. He was a true patriot; but either resentment appeared to inspire his love of his country, or the electrical excitement of 1831 allucinated him to the degree of showing himself at the head of two lamentable insurrections or revolts.

The first, on the 12th September, ended by the President of the Province being obliged to give way to the reactionary demands against adopted Brazilians, monks, and others whose transportation was imposed. The President submitted; but temporized, because, abandoned by the public force, it only remained for him to restore order.

And José Candido, after his exigencies were complied with, was one of the first to proclaim order and to work in order to maintain it; he soon, however, felt deep annoyance at the coldness with which the illustrious Araujo Vianna now treated him, whose authority the revolt had injured.

The President of the Province did not carry out to the letter the conditions of his forced condescendance to the imposing revolt, and had been taking cautious measures against a fresh probable insurrection.

The exalted parties became exasperated, and again conspiring, accused José Candido of subserviance and treachery

in giving prudent and pacific counsels; he, jealous of his popularity and of his reputation as a patriot, allowed himself to be dragged into a second outbreak of revolt on the 19th November, which this time was smothered, but without bloodshed.

The heads of the projected revolt which did not exceed a mutiny were arrested, less two, one of whom was José Candido, who hid himself in the woods in the neighbourhood of Itapicuri.

Odorico Mendes in the meantime had arrived at Maranhão, and at his call, José Candido returned to the city of S. Luiz; he took refuge in that patriot's house, and afterwards in others, and in spite of that influential patronage, he underwent great anxiety, seeing himself sought after by the police to arrest him.

He then became seriously ill: surrounded by faithful friends and able Doctors, spared in his illness and respected in his agony by the authorities who were searching for him in the name of the law; he died on the 19th November 1832, one year reckoning day for day, after the second, the last and miscarried revolt, being only twenty six incompleting years of age.

José Candido de Moraes e Silva cannot be forgotten in the annals of the country: the exaltation of his national spirit in the last fourteen months of his life, his errors emanating from his patriotic ardor, his exaggerated pride of a zealous Brazilian, an enthusiast inflamed by the revolutionary contagion of 1831, do not wipe from the living and perpetual memory of gratitude of Brazil, the remembrance of the Editor of the *Pharol*, which was in purity, in polite form, in elevation of ideas and controversy,

grave, decent and tolerant, was, as the organ of the liberal party in Maranhão, what in the capital of the Empire showed itself with extraordinary and well deserving influence to be the *Aurora Fluminense* of Evaristo Ferreira da Veiga.



XXII OF SEPTEMBER

AMADOR BUENO DA RIBEIRA

The antagonism between the colonists and the jesuits in the question of the Indians, was great in Brazil: those Priests sent to Rome the jesuit Dias Tano, and to Madrid Montaya, of whom, one brought from the Pope Urban VIII a bull of excommunication, and the other from the King measures to be taken against those who enslaved the Indians; and, arrived at the city of Rio de Janeiro, the Priest Tano read the bull of excommunication in the Church of Jesuits.

It is necessary to be known that the city of Rio de Janeiro then offered a large number of Indians for sale, of whom the chief and terrible *hunters* were the men from the interior of S. Paulo, already traditional enemies of the Jesuits.

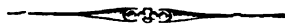
The people of the city tumultuously rose and surrounded the college of the Priests of the Company in a threatening manner; but the Governor Salvador Corrêa de Sá e Benevides, as well as the senate of the chamber coming to their aid, they managed to quiet the people's minds, the jesuits suspending the reading of the Bull while the people petitioned the revocation of it from the Pope. In S. Paulo there broke out a real revolt: the Jesuits were expelled from their colleges and from the Capitania: a government of forty-eight members was formed, who refused obedience to Salvador Corrêa, who had arrived at Santos, and the people, made a representation to the king explaining the cause of their demonstration and of their violent measures, and asking *that noblemen of disinterested christian blood should be sent to govern the capitania, and that there should be appointed as inspector of marine, Amador Bueno, a native of these parts, a rich and powerful man, well understanding and capable of fulfilling any trust.* The revolution that was to regenerate Portugal burst out, and D. João IV was acclaimed in all Brazil, less in the Capitania of S. Paulo which continued in revolt.

The opportunity was a lucky one, for the revolt to lay down its arms, and render obedience to D. João IV, who would pardon with a good grace the hostilities against the Spanish government; but with their habits of independence and sovereignty they deemed it much better to have their king in the Capitania, and in 1642 proclaimed as King Amador Bueno da Ribeira, who withdrawing from tumult and rebellion went and took shelter in the Monastery of the Benedictines, where he found himself in a short time besieged and urged, notwithstanding his resistance, with Paulistan energy. Disorder and shouting con-

tinued : some sensible and more delicate men began to give advice to the people concerning their duty, and for their good, until on the following day, when the proclaimers of the Paulistan sovereign were still insisting, but less excited, Amador Bueno rushed out, sword in hand, shouting among them : « Long live D. João IV our King!...

The senate of the Chamber immediately assembled, and named two commissioners to go to Lisbon to take the oaths of allegiance and homage in the name of the Paulistans to the new reigning house.

In a Royal letter of the 22nd September 1643, D. João thanked the Paulistans for their acclamation, and Amador Bueno da Ribeira for his fidelity.



XXIII OF SEPTEMBER

BENTO DO AMARAL



Bento do Amaral was the name of a hero, of whom one unfortunately only knows the verified circumstances of the two last years of his life.

He was a native of Rio de Janeiro where he was born in the seventeenth century.

He shows himself great, intrepid and resplendent with bravery in 1710, when fighting at the head of *his students* against the French commanded by Duclerc, who having landed at Guaratiba, came on by land to attack the city of Rio de Janeiro on the 19th September. Bento do Amaral, to whose name some people add the cognomen of *Grugel*, which otherwise was not officially used, for a he commanded *his students*, he was therefore a professor or master; but of what instruction or matter it

is not known: some wish to make out that it was perhaps of military instruction, or especially of artillery; others suppose him to have been a professor of latin, for then they used to say coarsely *music is learnt when dribbling* (com baba), and latin when *one has a beard* (barba) a false proverb, and a falsity shown by most most frequent experience in Brazil.

However it might be, Bento do Amaral, with his students and with the aid of civilians, electrified by his valor, was the hero of September 1710; for while the Governor Francisco de Castro de Moraes remained immovable at the head of numerous troops at the Camp of Rozario and allowed in a cowardly manner, Duclerc to invade the City, he, Bento do Amaral with his students and auxiliary civilians did battle with the enemy, at the corner of each street, stopped his passage and repelled him with musketry and cold steel from the house of the Governors, which was in the Rua Direita (now 1° de Março) then at the edge of the water, and where Duclerc wanted to fortify himself.

Duclerc was conquered, and made prisoner with all his men, and a few months after doing homage to the city he died mysteriously assassinated.

In 1771 Duguay Trouin, also in the month of September forced the bar of Rio de Janeiro with a squadron and a powerful force; not however sufficient to take the City if there had been a Governor worthy of the name.

The Governor was still the same Castro de Moraes, already famous for his cowardice.

From the 12th to the 22nd of September Duguay Trouin occupied a position which threatened the City, without its even being disputed.

The informants of the events of those ten days say

that Bento do Amaral made improfituous efforts, and wasted prodigious bravery in attacking and taking positions commanded by the French.

On the 21st September, at night, the wretched Governor evacuated the city; he retreated, flying with his troops, causing a sudden and disastrous retreat of all the inhabitants.

On the 22d Duguay Trouin entered the city, took, and sacked it without opposition. But Bento do Amaral had not learnt how to fly, nor did he retire as a prudent man would.

In patriotic despair he bethought him of strengthening the resistance which the fortress S. João was making. On the road he learnt that it had surrendered, and returning with his students, who did not exceed fifty in number, he was, on the 22d September, surrounded and attacked near the Outeiro da Gloria (Gloria Hill) by a French force, progressively augmented by reinforcements who joined it at the noise of the fight, and on the following day, the 23d, his body was found and recognized.

Numbers crushed with their weight this patriotic bravery. Bento do Amaral, fighting with indomitable and furious valor, saw the greater part of his young disciples die with unsurpassable heroism, and finally fell dead in the midst of the beloved dead bodies.

On the 22d September, 1711, Bento do Amaral saved the honor and glory of Rio de Janeiro, compromised by the cowardice of Castro de Menezes, causing himself to be killed heroically with his admirable students, there, in a place happily denominated, near or adjoining the hill called the *Gloria*.

His body being found and recognized on the 23d Sep-

tember, the French honored it, thus giving testimony to the bravery of the hero.

The King D. João V, in an official act, honored the memory of Bento do Amaral, praising his heroism, and sent to assure of his gratitude the relations of the renowned brave man.



XXIV OF SEPTEMBER

FRIAR ANTONIO DE SANTA MARIA

A native of Rio de Janeiro, where he was born in 1700, Antonio de Santa Maria devoted himself to a religious life and entered the Holy Order in which he distinguished himself much. He was a professor of theology and a famous preacher.

He composed a collection of sermons, which in his time and even afterwards merited praise from authorized judges.

He left so famous and respected a name as a theologian and sacred orator, that at the end of the same century, and even in the following one, S. Carlos and S. Paio, the great preachers, speaking of Friar Antonio do Santa Maria, used to say «he was the most brilliant star of the holy Brazilian orb.

Dates are completely wanting as to the time of his birth, of his death, and others of his life. His name is arbitrarily registered on the 24th September.



XXV OF SEPTEMBER

LUIZ DE VASCONCELLOS E SOUZA



A Portuguese nobleman, descended from the family of the counts of Castello Melhor, Luiz de Vasconcellos e Souza was appointed to succeed the marquis de Lavradio in the government of colonial Brazil, on the 25th September 1778 ; he arrived at Rio de Janeiro on the 23rd March of the following year, and on the 5th April he took possession of his high post with the commission of the 4th Viceroy.

To be the successor of the marquis de Lavradio, a most able administrator and Statesman, ought to be for him a most difficult task ; but it was a proof of his well known capacity which was not belied.

The government of Luiz de Vasconcellos commenced under ill auspices. An enormous weight of water, in conse-

quence of torrents of rain, destroyed a great part of the aqueducts of the Carioca. Immediately afterwards a tremendous epidemic, which was then called Zamperine, from the name of a dancer at that time, greatly in vogue in Lisbon, scourged the city of Rio de Janeiro.

Luiz de Vasconcellos caused the aqueducts to be promptly restored, and took a multitude of measures against the pestilence.

He renewed and augmented the size of the Custom house.

He improved the ancient *Praça do Carmo*, afterwards *Largo do Paço* (Palace Square) removed the fountain which was in its centre, and which for many years continued close to the sea to the great advantage of ships, which supplied themselves with water from thence, and had the whole square paved, dividing the paving in squares by lines of pavement-stones, and completed this work by constructing a beautiful quay.

At the spot then denominated *Campo da Lampadosa* (in the place where the Rua do Sacramento now is) he caused the *Casa dos Passaros* to be erected, destined for the preparation and keeping of the birds which used to be sent to the Cabinet of Natural history of Lisbon.

He had the *monte das mangueiras* razed, and by its means filled up the lake (*lagôa do Boqueirão*, upon which was founded the *Jardim ou Passeio Publico* (the public Garden or promenade) of Rio de Janeiro, with a magnificent terrace overlooking the sea. In the place of the razed mound, a street marks the place and preserves the name of *Mangueiras*. In front of the gate of the Public garden, the street was opened called the *Bellas noites*, and at its extremity he caused the graceful fountain of *Marrecas* to be constructed, containing interesting works of art.

By the king's orders, and to repress the excessive punishments inflicted on slaves, a public jail was created, an ugly and sinister innovation, but inspired by praiseworthy sentiments.

New corps of militia were created, he caused roads to be opened, developed the peopling and the culture of the lands of the present district of Canta-Gallo, dividing them among colonists, who came from the kingdom (of Portugal.)

The religious retreat of Our Lady *do Parto* having caught fire, and been completely reduced to ashes, he caused it to be rebuilt in a few months, and increased it's patrimony.

He encouraged Commerce and farming, and made great endeavours, but with small results, to cultivate flax, and the industry of Cochineal in Santa Catharina and in Rio Grande do Sul.

In his many constructions and works in Rio de Janeiro, Luiz de Vasconcellos had to help him *Master Valentim*, a celebrated artist, for whom he entertained a distinguished friendship even after he had retired to Portugal.

As Vice-roy Luiz de Vasconcellos had the defects of his time, and of his system of Government, showing himself very often arbitrary, and despotic ; always, however, impelled by good intentions and by the endeavour to do good.

He was easy of access, and agreeable.

The minas conspiracy of 1789, troubled the last year of his Vice-Royalty. Severe and terrible towards the prisoners and the unfortunate *traitors*, he caused them to be incarcerated in the dungeons of the Island *das Cobras* where he kept them incommunicable ; they were, however, guilty of lese-majeste, conspirators of independence and of a republic, and the Vice-roy ought to be judged according

to the epoch in which he governed, and the laws which he had to observe.

At all events Luiz de Vasconcellos e Souza was a powerful lever of progress, and the source of civilization of the capital of Brazil, besides being a most able general administrator of the colony.

His name, perpetuated in distichs on fountains, in the public Garden and in so many works of the greatest utility, belongs to the grateful memory of the Brazilian Nation.

On the 9th July 1820 Luiz de Vasconcellos e Souza delivered over the stick of Vice-regal office to his successor, the Count de Rezende, whose memory cannot be blessed.



XXVI OF SEPTEMBER

D. ANTONIO FELIPPE CAMARÃO

A son of the Brazilian woods, the Indian Poty (Camarão) has his birthplace disputed for by two Provinces of the Empire, that of Ceará, and that of Rio Grande do Norte ; it appears, however, that he belongs to the last, where he was born in some *wigwam* of the Potyguarés.

We are ignorant of the first feats of this Indian ; but in 1614 he was already chief of his people, and had come on foot from Rio Grande do Norte to accompany Jeronymo de Albuquerque to the conquest of Maranhão ; he had, however, arrived very lame at the place pointed out for embarkation, and could not go on the expedition.

Camarão had taken the name of *Antonio* on being baptized ; later on he had added to this the name of Felipe, in remembrance of the honors which he had

received from the King of Spain and Portugal, and to the two he added the primitive one which he would not abandon.

He married D. Clara, an Indian like himself, and a heroine besides.

In 1630, after the conquest of Olinda and of Recife by the Dutch, and when Matheus do Albuquerque fortified himself in the camp which he called the hamlet of Bom Jesus, Camarão presented himself there, heading his Indians, to serve against the foreign invader.

It is asseverated that Camarão had been carried there by the Jesuit Priest, Manoel de Moraes ; that is at least, likely, because the Indian Poty, catechised by the Jesuits, and having received from them some instruction, naturally obeyed their influence.

In the hamlet of *Bom Jesus*, Camarão was the most dexterous captain of ambuscades, and proved in a great number of fights his indomitable bravery. From 1630 to 1635 he fights continually, and the Dutch know him and distinguish him by the impetus with which he is accustomed to attack them when at the head of his Indians.

In 1636 the new general, D. Luiz de Rozas y Borja, successor of the brave Mathias de Albuquerque, imprudently takes the offensive, and near to Porto Calvo loses the battle of Mata Redondo, and dies therein ; and it is Camarão, with Captain Rebello, who saves the Pernambucan army from destruction.

In the same year General Ragnuolo, concentrated on the defensive with all the Pernambucan force in Porto Calvo, gave to Camarão the command of the most perilous expedition, sending him with three hundred Indians, two captains with thirty soldiers, and the intrepid Henrique Dias with some negroes, to go as far into the plain as they

possibly could to destroy the property of the enemy and to do them all the harm they could.

There were less than three hundred and sixty combatants whom Camarão took with him.

The daring Indian got into the woods and traversing them, went more than sixty leagues, and burst on the rich district of Guyanna. He took a redoubt there from the Dutch, killed not a few of them, laid waste estates, and seized a good quantity of merchandise and sugar. The political council of Recife, seized with alarm on the news reaching them of the daring feat of Camarão, immediately sent against him a strong column of troops commanded by Artichofski, their most notable general at that time. Harned of the peril, the indomitable Indian made light of it, and instead of retreating, went to meet the enemy, with whom they met on the morning of the 23d August. A fight commenced which lasted until night interrupted it and left it still undecided. Artichofski, furious, lamented that Camarão would be able to escape him, by availing himself of the night to fly, by getting himself into the woods; but at break of the following day, he was astonished at seeing him occupy the same positions as on the day before. The proud General ordered an immediate and energetic attack to be made; but at the end of four hours of the sharpest firing, it was he, who confounded and fearful of a complete disaster and defeat of his column, beat a retreat, leaving the field to the Indian chief.

The almost impossible combat of the 22d and 23d August, 1636, redounded to the greater glory of Camarão, who had thus overcome regular troops commanded by a general already famous and much superior in number to his Indians, devoid of military discipline.

In the meantime, the intelligent Indian saw that he could

not delay in the territory, under the dominion of the enemy who would certainly return and surround him with a quadruple force, and he then began his retreat through the midst of the forests, escorting and carrying with him about three thousand inhabitants of Guyanna, and of proximate districts, who preferred emigration to living under Dutch dominion.

On the 26th September, his fine and great day, Camarão entered Porto Calvo with his heroic expeditionary men, and with the patriotic and glorious suite of three thousand emigrant men and women: old men, youths, young maidens, children and infants, who were flying from a foreign yoke.

Camarão was received with acclamations.

Bagnuolo had not imagined the possibility of performing such stupendous feats.

On the 18th February, 1637, a horrible combat was fought, still in the neighborhood of Porto Calvo. The general, Prince Maurice of Nassau, commanded five thousand Dutchmen, and Bagnuolo sent to stop his passage about one thousand two hundred men, among whom was Camarão at the head of three hundred Indians. Notwithstanding the disproportion of the forces the combat was a long and desperate one; and Maurice of Nassau, becoming finally the master of the field, saw the Pernambucans, the Indians, and the negroes of Henrique Dias, all give way; but he did not succeed in putting them to the rout. Camarão fought like a furious lion, and the more so, that at his side, his wife D. Clara fought heroically.

In 1638, the Pernambucan army having retired upon Torre de Garcia d'Avela in Bahia, the brave Indian chief commands one of the celebrated guerrilla expeditions which did so much harm to the Dutch, and in the same

year he becomes still more celebrated by the glorious defence of the city of S. Salvador, besieged and attacked by Prince Maurice of Nassau. The king of Spain and Portugal did not forget him, for in rewarding the valiant defenders of the capital of Brazil, he was graced with the insignia of the Order of Christ, and he had, moreover, the privilege of being called Don.

Camarão did not rest : in command of his guerrilla-men he multiplied his audacious enterprises, until the revolution which restored Portugal was followed by an armistice, otherwise ill respected.

In 1645 he marched with his Indians to support the Pernambucan insurrection. He penetrated into Alagóas, and excited the demonstration, he afterwards made a junction with Vieira and Vidal de Negreiros, and until 1648 covered himself with laurels in sundry fights.

In this last year, on the 19th April, he commanded the right wing of the army of the Independents in the first and famous battle of the Guarapes, in which the Dutch, commanded by General Schkopps, were put to the rout.

A few months afterwards, and still in the same year, 1648, D. Antonio Felipe Camarão, captain-mór, and called the Governor of the Indians, died a victim to a violent fever, in the hamlet of Bom Jesus, in the chapel of which place his body was buried, carried to its last dwelling place by the glorious war companions of the brave Indian.





XXVII OF SEPTEMBER

DAMIÃO BARBOSA DE ARAUJO

This is the name of a poor artist most rich in talent, and who only wanted a severe school to render him a notability in the world. Damião Barbosa de Araujo, the legitimate son of a working shoemaker, Francisco Barbosa de Araujo, was born in the island of Itaparica on the 27th September, 1778.

The humble shoemaker was passionately fond of music ; he cultivated it as an amateur, but without having had a master ; and he destined to that fine art three sons whom he had. Two were taken from him prematurely by death, and there only remained to him Damião Barbosa, who consoled him, becoming in Bahia as famous a musician as it was possible to be, where there was no regular school.

He was second violinist in the orchestra of the little

theatre of Guadelupe, and scarcely having left the direction of his master he already composed smallairs, duets, and choruses for the Portuguese burlettas and operas which were represented.

From Bahia Damião Barbosa came to Rio de Janeiro in 1808, attached to the royal brigade for the purpose, together with other musicians, to render the voyage of the Prince Regent, D. João VI, pleasant.

In the new capital of the monarchy he did not find the conservatory of music, nor the careful cultivation of the art, which being then encouraged and afterwards decayed, only very much later commenced to make Rio de Janeiro famous. He, however, met with Marcos Portugal, a famous composer whom D. João had brought from Lisbon, and Father José Mauricio, the Brazilian musical genius, the great master, the severe and inspired composer, whom Hayden and Mozart would acknowledge as a profound and faithful interpreter of the classic school. Connected with those two eminent and advanced musicians, Damião Barbosa learnt much; but already when he had passed his youth, and somewhat late to raise himself to the high regions of art based on principles, and in the teaching of a learned and severe school.

Damião Barbosa was admitted to the Chapel Royal as a violinist, and in the brigade to which he had been attached, as chief of its band of music, and composer of music for the same.

Not limiting himself to the fulfilment of the duties of those two employments which gave him bread, he began to distinguish himself as a composer.

He made his débüt in a quartette which he dedicated to the minister Antonio de Araujo.

He composed two masses, and funeral matins with a dedication to the professor of music José Baptista Lisboa.

He wrote the music of the burletta *Intriga Amorosa*, with Italian words, which was not performed through Portuguese jealous rivalry.

He composed a grand mass, which he offered to D. Pedro I, already Emperor of Brazil.

And from 1822 forward, and until his death, the date of which is unknown, he wrote an abundance of musical compositions for masses, *Te-Deum*, matins, quartettes, airs, concerts, romances, etc.

The species of his predilection was religious music; but in profane music, such as in romances, *modinhas* and *lundús*, he showed all his pleasant Bahian character.

His compositions, principally the religious ones, are wanting in grand simplicity, and the solemn majesty of the catholic religion; which deep art alone is capable of comprehending and executing. A great artist of nature, Damias Barboza was weak in the purity of art.

He was not to blame.

A most precious brilliant; he wished for, but had no cutting. But he was a brilliant of great size notwithstanding its imperfect cutting.





XXVIII OF SEPTEMBER

ANTONIO PEREIRA



A celebrated and very illustrious Jesuit, Antonio Pereira was born in Maranhão in 1641 : entering very young into the Company of Jesus, he at once distinguished himself by his brilliant talents, and severe application, and at the end of a few years, he became a famous preacher, and renowned theologian.

The glories of the pulpit, and the veneration paid to his knowledge, could not withdraw him from the task and undertaking which most charmed him, the catechizing the miserable savages.

Father Antonio Pereira, was a devoted, enlightened, and admirable missionary, and unfortunately a martyr.

For that reason, he studied the language of the Indians, which he succeeded in speaking, if not with a perfect know-

ledge of its nature, as he himself supposed ; at least he spoke it better than all the missionaries ever spoke it up to then.

He wrote treatises or studies on the language of the savages, and a *Vocabulary of the Brazilian language* : those works, the produce of labor of patience, of combinations, and of surprising method, cannot now bear the profound, and still incomplete scientific excavations, and extraordinary studies, which come into the great system of giving a more rational logic, for the better knowledge and filiation of the tongues spoken by the Indians of Brazil ; but even now, the writings of Antonio Pereira are treasures of immense value, which are sought after, are explored and availed of.

That great missionary gained the crown of martyrdom : on the 28th September, 1702 : he died of an arrow wound shot from the bow of a savage, when on a mission in Pará, he was seeking like a saint, to catechize the indians.



XXIX OF SEPTEMBER

D. ANTONIO JOAQUIM DE MELLO



The legitimate son of Captain Theobaldo de Mello Cezar, and of D. Josepha Maria do Amaral, Antonio Joaquim de Mello was born in the present City of Itú, province of S. Paulo, on the 29th September 1791. He was connected both on the Father's as well as on the mother's side, with the most distinguished families of S. Paulo, and among his relations, he reckoned as his great friend, and, during some time the companion of his studies, his cousin, the most learned, and virtuous Brazilian Francisco de Paula Souza e Mello.

His parents were honorable, but poor, and had to remove to the capital of Minas Geraes, where awaited them the already experienced protection of D. Bernardo José de

Lorena, who had been removed from S. Paulo to Minas Geraes.

In the month of August 1799, the future bishop of S. Paulo, entered on a career absolutely opposed to that in which he was to serve God and his country so much. General D. Bernardo offered to Captain Theobaldo a cadetship for his son, he receiving the pay without rendering service.

The fond father accepted the favor offered, but under the condition of the post being that of a simple soldier, on account of his extreme poverty.

The boy was a soldier on the same day that he went to school; but that was not the militia in which toils and triumphs awaited him in the nineteenth century. Bishops of the middle ages wearing at the same time, or successively, on the head, the mitre and the helmet, on the breast, the cross and the cuirass, in the right hand, the crosier and the sword, would be an anachronism which would offend catholicity.

The rough and laborious life of the soldier, a life which Antonio Joaquim de Mello was shortly to experience in all its severe conditions, from the age of twelve years, habituated him, at least in his youth, to bear privations and vexations which later, and in his old age, he had again to overcome in the fulfilment of a nobler and grander mission.

In 1810 the youth Antonio Joaquim de Mello abandoned a career for which he had not been cut out, obtained his discharge, and returned to the land of his birth: he arrived in Itú on the 2d December of that same year, and meditating on his future life, thinking of the path which he had to follow, in a moment of happy and holy inspiration, he con-

ceived and adopted an idea, which men had to applaud on earth, and God, from the beginning, blessed in heaven.

The youthful Ituan had been present at Christmas mass in the church of the carmelites : the pomp of the solemnity, the mysterious hour of midnight when it took place, the sacred thoughts present to his mind, produced a deep impression thereon : the youth felt commoved and elevated : when the carmelites gave each other the kiss of peace and embraced each other, symbolizing catholic fraternity, his soul was suddenly touched by the grace of the Lord, the divine light of faith shone with the sublimest splendour in his eyes, and he left in the temple his vow of consecrating himself to the ecclesiastical state.

Four years afterwards, he took priest's orders in S. Paulo, and returning to Itù, he became connected with the virtuous priest Diogo Antonio Feijó, and other priests, and with them maintained a stubborn, and glorious struggle, against the principles of a philosophy, the exaggeration of which planted disbelief in mens minds, and which was embraced in Itù by some young students of ardent temperature, impetuous and precipitate, rushing into error, and thinking they rendered honor to truth.

To the revolution in Portugal in 1820, that of the independence of Brazil followed in 1822 ; to that, the zealous life that patriotic cooperation claimed from all good citizens. Paula e Souza and Feijó had both seats in the brazilian parliament ; the illustrious father Antonio Joaquim de Mello did not, however, accompany them ; he loved the country which gave birth to them, as they did ; but entirely consecrated to the altar, he served the country by praying for her at the feet of the Lord, and in teaching from the pulpit, and in the confessional, the truths of catholicism.

And he thus remained in his tranquil and pious retreat, always studying with ardor, and feeding his spirit by reading the holy fathers, until without his expecting it, the imperial decree of the 5th May, 1851, came to call him to the episcopal throne of S. Paulo. At the age of 60 years when bent with age, his body already required rest, the illustrious priest bent to the will of go^d, and on the 6th day of June, 1852, D. Antonio Joaquim de Mello received the sacred ring and the crosier from the hands of the learned and virtuous bishop of Rio de Janeiro, the Count de Irajá.

The episcopate of the venerable D. Antonio Joaquim de Mello was of short duration, but in those eight years, the triumphs of his apostleship were notable.

Zealous and indefatigable, the bishop of S. Paulo at once treated about regulating the initiation of the priesthood, and the revenues of the church; he reestablished the custom of explaining the doctrine, at the hour of mass in the Parish church on sundays and holydays, he vulgarized confirmation generally, and made his voice to be heard so full of unction and piety from the height of the sacred tribune.

These first duties being fulfilled the illustrious prelate laid the first stone of the seminary of the diocese of S. Paulo, and afterwards began his salutary visits, going over the greater part of the bishopric, *taking with him his love* to the last village of the diocese, administering confirmation, preaching on the commandments, and on the Gospel, and asking and collecting alms from the faithful for the two pious works, monuments of his apostleship, the diocesan seminary, which he had the satisfaction of inaugurating on the 9th November, 1856, and the seminary of the sisters of S. José, established in the city of Rio de

Janeiro in 1859, and destined for the education of the young of the female sex.

Four times did the indefatigable shepherd go forth to visit his numerous flock: neither did the inclemency of the weather, nor the fatigues of very long journies nor the infirmities of the body abate his courage; on the fourth occasion however, it was impossible for the venerable bishop to resist the disorder which was about to carry him to his grave. On the 24th December, 1859, he saw himself obliged to return to the interior, to Araraquara, and, barely succeeding in reaching the city of Itú, he there again gave an example of constancy, of patience, and of resignation, awaiting on a bed of pain, during 14 months, the hour of his being called to eternal rest.

D. Antonio Joaquim de Mello, a member of H. W.'s, the Emperor's council, diocesan bishop of S. Paulo, a Roman Count, domestic Prelate of His Holiness, and assistant to the Pontifical throne, gave up his soul to God on the 16th February, 1864, Divine Providence having wished him to have the consolation of closing his eyes for the last time where he had first opened them.

It behoaves us here to make a simple declaration, but a most just one, which is the duty of conscience, and at the same time, a sweet tribute from a friendly heart.

This article, as others likewise, especially those of the well deserving Martin Francisco Ribeiro de Andrada and Father Diogo Antonio Feijó, were in their greatest part due to the enlightened and investigated information which are to be met with in the historical and biographical studies of the most illustrious counselor, Dr. Francisco Ignacio Marcondes Homem de Mello, to whom the country already owes two most precious writings, and historical and geographial works of high value.

XXX OF SEPTEMBER

BERNARDO VIEIRA RAVASCO

On the 18th July, 1697, the city of S. Salvador da Bahia was shocked at the news of the death of the old, but great and famous Father Antonio Vieira, and two days after, on the 20th July, also died in the same city Bernardo Vieira Ravasco, the brother of that priest.

The legitimate son of Christovão Vieira Ravasco and of D. Maria de Azevedo, who had come from Lisbon to Bahia, bringing with them Antonio Vieira, seven years of age, Bernardo Vieira Ravasco, was born in the city of S. Salvador in the year 1617.

He studied with his brother in the Jesuits' school. He, however, followed another career. Having gone through a course of the humanities, he became learned by home study, and served Brazil, from whence he never absented

himself, in war, in administration, and in the cultivation of learning.

As a captain of infantry, he distinguished himself by his bravery and feats of arms in the defense of the city of Bahia, attacked by Prince Maurice of Nassau in 1638 and again in the island of Itaparica, against the forces of General Sigismund von Sckop, being wounded there, and afterwards retiring on half pay.

He obtained the honors of a commander of the Order of Christ, and the office of Alcaide of Cape Frio; he moreover exercised the employment of secretary of State for war in Brazil.

In 1682 the Governor-General, Antonio de Souza Menezes, resolved on suspending the regulation of the administration. Bernardo Vieira, who was on bad terms with him, and who had great confidence in the influence of his family, and in his own, in Brazil, would not, as secretary, obey the Governor. Learning, however, that the latter had ordered his arrest, he fled to the Reconcavo. Soon afterwards, the order for his arrest being recalled, he returned to his duty, where, on the 30th September, when he least expected it, the Governor himself arrested him, under the pretext that Ravasco, with his son and brother, intended to assassinate him.

The facts were investigated by order of the King, which otherwise limited itself to bringing to an end the term of Antonio de Souza Menezes' government, and to condemn Bernardo Vieira to imprisonment; but evidently to save the principle of authority in the Governor; because, on finishing his term of imprisonment, Ravasco returned to his post of secretary.


Beyond this cloudy and sad episode, the appreciation of which was left so obscure, the influence of Bernardo

Vieira Ravasco in the administration was beneficent and distinguished; and barely, in some cases, perhaps too much subject to the inspirations of his learned brother, the Jesuit, Father Antonio Vieira.

As a literary man, Bernardo Ravasco left published in four volumes numerous poetical compositions in Portuguese and Spanish, which were much applauded in their time, and even in the following century.

The abbot, Diogo Barbosa, in his *Bibliotheca Luzitana* says that he saw, and much exaggerates, another work, the chief one of this Brazilian, which was: « The topographical, ecclesiastical, civil, and natural state of Brazil, » in manuscript.

Bernardo Vieira Ravasco was buried in the Convent of the city of S. Salvador da Bahia.



I OF OCTOBER

FRIAR FABIANO DE CHRISTO

A simple monk, a lay brother of the Monastery of Santo Antonio of Rio de Janeiro, an ignorant man; but exemplary for his charity, Fabiano, afterwards called de Christo, was born in Portugal, in the archbishoprick of Braga. He came to Rio while still very young, and after a few years, on the 1st October, 1706, took shelter in that convent, where he took the habit of a Capucin friar, in which dress he lived piously for forty-one years, of which the last thirty-seven were employed as the sick nurse.

His habits were so pure, his virtues so singular, his charity and patience so evangelical, that all the monks and the principal authorities of the monastery venerated him.

The common people of the city held the humble Friar Fabiano as one blessed by God, and sometimes the sick went to ask of the poor laybrother orisons and prayers for their re-establishment to health.

As a sick nurse he was remarkable for his zeal, his kindly feeling, and patience.

Among many facts registered, there is one that suffices for his complete eulogy.

One night, and at a very late hour, an old and irascible monk, who was ill, asked Friar Fabiano for some broth; the latter, who had answered the bell, not wishing to disturb the sleeping cooks, went to the kitchen and prepared and brought the broth; the monk, however, not finding it to his taste, threw the cup containing it into the face of the poor laybrother, who, with a wounded and scalded face, said humbly: »

— « Pardon me father! I will go and prepare you another cup of broth. »

The monk got precipitately out of bed and, on his knees, exclaimed :

— « For the love of God !... pardon me the injury that you have received at my hands. »

Friar Fabiano died on the 17th October, 1847, in the convent of Santo Antonio.

The whole city was commoved ; the people invaded the chapel of the Chapter where the body of the lay brother had been deposited, and whose habit was cut in pieces by both men and women who, held Friar Fabiano as a saint, and wished to possess *reliques* of him.

Extraordinary things were said about him, and what is more, the bishop, Friar D. Antonio do Desterro, and provincial superior, ordered a judiciary inquest to be opened, respecting *the numerous miracles which the Lord had*

performed in testimony of the sanctity of his servant, and twenty-nine persons deposed what is entered in the register-book of the Province at pages eighty-four to one hundred.

The bishop, Friar D. Antonio do Desterro, and the Governor, Gomes Freire de Andrade, drew up and signed attestations in the same extraordinary sense.

On the tomb of Friar Fabiano the following inscription is to be read :

Ut quondam ægris quærebas, Fabiane, salutem.
Nunc etiam votis auxiliare tuis.



II OF OCTOBER

ANTONIO MANOEL DE MELLO



The life of this brave man, so deserving of merit, is summed up in a few short words: work and honor; respect for duty and virtues; wisdom and modesty.

Antonio Manoel de Mello, the legitimate son of Field Marshal Antonio Manoel de Mello Castro Mendonça and D. Gertrudes Maria do Carmo, was born in the Province of S. Paulo on the 2d October, 1802.

When eleven years of age, he enlisted as Ensign by decree of 2d April, 1813, and joined the 3d Regiment of Cavalry of the 1st line, and commenced counting service from the 8th December, 1802.

When almost in active service he showed a type of discipline, admirable for its circumspection and exemplary from its indifference to amusements and diversions, and

for his love of study his in hours of spontaneous retirement.

In 1823 he obtained leave to study in the military school, in which he carried off prizes in the first two years ; but war stepped in to interrupt his conquest of scientific laurels ; he marched to the south of the Empire, made the Cisplatin campaigns, and returned a Captain, and « yogal » of the permanent council of war.

In that campaign, on the occasion of his commanding a piquet of cavalry in the van of the army, he saw, through the mist of daybreak, three of the enemies' squadrons, which were advancing to attack him :

« Guard ! in line, make ready carbines, » shouted he, and in lieu of falling back, he awaited the charge, and commenced an unequal combat ; but so fortunate was he that the army came up in the heat of the struggle, to applaud and cheer him, on seeing the enemy so superior in numbers routed and flying.

Antonio Manoel de Mello distinguished himself further in that war, by taking part in charges of cavalry which were deservedly renowned.

On the modest but brave man, who was afterward to be a most modest learned man, returning to the Academy, he carried off the first prizes of the third, fourth, and fifth years of the course of study therein.

From 1831 forwards he rendered signal services to public order ; he helped to create a municipal corps of permanent soldiers of the capital, of which he was major ; in 1834 he joined the corps of engineers, and was appointed vice-director of the Ipanema Iron Foundry. In 1837, after giving brilliant academical proofs of advancement, he was appointed sub-professor of a course of « Ponts e chaussées, »

and two years afterwards, professor of the school of architecture of the province of Rio de Janeiro.

In 1840 he received the insignia of the Order of Aviz, and the appointment of director of the Iron Foundry of Ipanema.

In 1844 after other promotions he obtained that of lieutenant-colonel; in the following year, he was nominated professor of descriptive geometry in the military academy, and in December, 1846, he obtained his degree of doctor in mathematics and physical sciences.

On the 31st March, 1847, the Imperial Government nominated him director of the civil and military works of the marine; but immediately afterwards, the distinguished and learned Antonio Manoel de Mello, had to leave that commission for a seat at the council-board of the crown, accepting the post of minister of war, in which he gave proofs of high capacity, and of great knowledge of the affairs of that Department.

By decree of the 9th September, 1850, he was appointed director of the Astronomical observatory, and at the same time he got the chair of professor of the fourth year in the military academy, when he abandoned the professorship of descriptive Geometry.

To enumerate all the scientific and administrative commissions, that this illustrious man fulfilled with the greatest zeal, brilliancy and honor, would take too long a time.

The Emperor D. Pedro II who greatly appreciated the great gifts of the Consellor Antonio Manoel de Mello, wished to have him nearer his person, and on the 14th March, 1855, appointed him keeper of the wardrobe; and some years afterwards did him the distinguished honor to intrust to him, the direction of Her Imperial Highness' study of



III OF OCTOBER

JOSÉ DE ABREU

BARON OF SERRO LARGO

Descending from an Acorian family established in *Porto Novo*, a little village situated between Rio Grande and Pelotas, born in the last thirty years of the eighteenth century, José de Abreu, was destined to be one of the most illustrious of the warlike heroes of Rio Grande.

He was so void of patronage and in social positions so notable of his parents, that very little is known of his infancy. José de Abreu, on finishing his primary instruction, adopted the career of arms, and enlisted in the regiment of dragoons, in which, after making the cam-

paigns of 1801 and those of 1811 and 1812, he obtained the rank of Captain, for which he was indebted to his bravery, activity and good sense, which supplied the want of literary education, and academical studies of the military art.

In 1814 he was appointed commander of the squadrons of militia of *Entre Rios*, and had the rank of Lieutenant-Colonel, and the military command of the district of that name, comprising the frontier line of *Quaraim*, as far as *Sant'Anna do Livramento*.

In 1816 commences the *Epopée* of this Alcides.

The campaign of 1812, one of the most rapid and successful, left no results owing to an unfortunate armistice agreed on in Buenos Ayres, and the Banda Oriental in complete anarchy.

The celebrated partisan, José Artigas, an able, ambitious and daring man, jested with the Government of Buenos Ayres and of Montevideo, by extending his influence beyond Uruguay, to *Entre Rios*, *Santa Fé*, *Corrientes* and further still.

D. João VI, fearing that Artigas would dare to invade the province of Rio Grande do Sul, for he already threatened the frontiers, and more than all was ambitious of conquering the Banda Oriental, determined to effect the intervention of 1816 and occupy that country militarily.

The campaign of 1816 commenced.

Artigas had not lost heart, knowing the preparations for war were being made, but on the contrary, being full of vanity, he rejected the aid which the Director Puyrredon had offered him from Buenos Ayres; he had already more than once audaciously ordered the *Quaraim* to be passed over, and the territory of Rio Grande to be invaded by strong bodies of his men whom José de Abreu

had always put to the rout, chasing them to beyond the frontiers.

The history of that war would be very long, notwithstanding its being necessary for the complete exposition of the importance of the victories of José de Abreu. Artigas had planned ably; he, with three thousand men, took up a most excellent and well chosen position to invade Rio Grande, while his Lieutenants, commanding numerous columns, should threaten the Portuguese general, Lecor in the direction of Jaguarão, and Curado in the frontier of Quaraim, on the frontier of *Ibirapuitan-Chico*.

That plan was rendered for the greater part nugatory, owing to the bravery, skill, and rapidity of the marching of José de Abreu.

Charged with preventing the passage of Sotel in Uruguay, and his junction with André Artigas, who with one thousand five hundred men threatened S. Borja, he received barely six hundred and fifty men of the three arms, and two pieces of artillery, and with that force on the 21st of September beat Sotel at the pass of *Japejú*, routed him immediately afterwards at *Ibicuhy*, with difficulty crossed this river, greatly increased by the rains, marched with great rapidity to S. Borja, on the 27th of September, put to flight in *Ituparay*, two hundred men who were carrying off cattle for the expected column of Sotel, and on the 3rd of October arrived unexpectedly before S. Borja, and in a very hard fight crushed the force, notwithstanding its great superiority, of André Artigas.

In less than fifteen days, José de Abreu with six hundred and fifty men had beaten nearly three thousand of the enemy, routing Sotel in two combats, crossing the *Ibicuhy* at its greatest fulness, not possessing either canoes, or appropriate means for doing so, putting to the rout in

Ituparay, two hundred « gauchos » of whom thirty eight were killed, and without resting, marched quickly on to the aid of S. Borja, and there, conquering in a fight which deserves the name of a battle, more than double the number of the heroic and fatigued warriors whom he commanded.

The name of José de Abreu, became legendary, and a terror to the gauchos of Artigas, of whom in S. Borja alone he had killed four hundred.

Nearly one thousand, among killed and prisoners, baggage, artillery, the military correspondence of André Artigas, an abundance of arms, more than two thousand horses, very much more than that quantity of cattle, did José de Abreu deliver up to General Curado, as the fruits of his command of six hundred and fifty men, whom he had known how to inspire with bravery, and with insensibility to forced marches, to fatigues, and to privations experienced up to the moment of entering into combat.

The victories of José de Abreu facilitated two others gained by Portuguese Generals.

The campaign is about to reach a decisive day : La Torre the Lieutenant of Ortigas, advancing and counter-marching finds himself in the rear of the Portuguese army, while Artigas himself threatens it in front, encamping in *Arapehy*.

The immediate attack of *Arapehy* is resolved upon, and José de Abreu is charged with it : the legendary General advance on the night of the 2rd January 1817, and at 7 in the morning of the following day, attacks the positions and a defile that were considered impregnable : the rout of Artigas was both complete and horrible. On the night of the same day, the 3rd, José de Abreu, extenuated with fatigue

joined the army, victorious, but humanly speaking, broken down.

At day-break on the 4th January, La Torre with three thousand four hundred men attacked the Portuguese camp, a terrible, and during some hours, indecisive battle raged : the marquis of Alegrete, and General Curado, giving an example of unsurpassable valor, encouraged their troops ; they began, however, to fear for the result of the action ; when there appeared in the midst of the struggle that thunderbolt of war, José de Abreu, who heading impetuous charges of cavalry throws into disorder, and puts to the rout the enemies, hosts, and gains the victory.

At the end of that campaign José de Abreu was already a Brigadier.

During 1819 and 1820 he continues to render the greatest services in the war, and on the 20th of January of that last year he contributes greatly, under the command in chief of Count de Figueira, to the victory in the battle of *Taquarembó*, which put an end to the power. and influence of Artigas, who, flying to Paraguay was there sent to the interior by the Dictator Francia.

The Brigadier José de Abreu rose to the brevet rank of field marshal.

The Banda Oriental being pacified, he remained on the Frontier commanding the forces which were to guard it.

The independence of Brazil was proclaimed, and the Field marshal, José de Abreu, was appointed Governor of Arms of the Province of S. Pedro do Rio Grande do Sul, sent considerable reinforcements to Viscount de Laguna, who was besieging Montevideo (Capital of the Cisplatina, Province of Brazil since July 1821) and marched at the head of a strong column, when the Portuguese troops capitulated in that City.

Already Field marshal and always Governor of arms, José de Abreu at the commencement of the Cisplatine war in 1825, invaded this province with a division, and gained in that year fresh laurels in some partial combats; but a sad and covetous rivalry which arose among Brazilian chiefs, otherwise all brave men, cost immediately afterwards lamentable reverses, but not suffered by the invincible Abreu, who meanwhile, reduced to command a little more than three hundred men, on account of his having been deprived of a larger force detached to others command, evacuated the Cisplatina still unconquered; but already wounded by intrigues.

The title of Baron of Serro Largo then comes to console him, and finds him already busied in making ready for the defence of the frontiers; his name raised hundreds of brave men, he performed wonders in the way of activity and energy, and was preparing to enter in action; calumny, however, gained the day, and the bravest of the brave was dismissed from the command of arms of Rio Grande.

The cisplatine war continued unfavorable to Brazil. The Emperor D. Pedro I embarked for Rio Grande do Sul in November 1826, in order to see, personally, the state of the army, and take such measures as were most fitting in the difficult situation of affairs; he had scarcely, however, time to appoint the marquis de Barbacena General in chief, for the death of the Empress obliged him to return to the capital of the Empire in January 1827.

In the meantime the Baron de Serro Largo had offered the Emperor to raise a volunteer corps.

The marquis de Barbacena asked the Baron to accept the command of one of the divisions of the army; he however refused this; but insisted on commanding the

volunteer corps, and setting off for São Gabriel: at his cry of *to arms*, his already well known companions in combat ardently answered to the call, and many fresh warriors who exulted in the name of José de Abreu, ran to join him.

The Baron de Serro Largo joins the army with his body of volunteers at the pass of the *Enforcados*. A battle is imminent: the Marquis of Barbacena requires him to command the vanguard: having before him the imminence of the battle José de Abreu, the Baron de Serro Largo knows not how to refuse the command.

On the 20th of February...

That is the unfortunate date, but withall heroic, taken for the historical register of the name of José de Abreu, Baron of Serro Largo.

On the 20th February, 1827, the battle of *Passo do Rozario* or of *Ituzaingo* was fought.

The Brazilian army consisted of six thousand men of the three arms; the Argentine and Oriental amounted to eleven thousand. The former arrived tired by uninterrupted marches to their almost unknown field of battle; the latter had been already encamped two or three days in the place which they had chosen, and studied for the action.

Imprudently intrepid the Marquis of Barbacena, at day-break of the 20th February, hastened the march of the army, and ordered the same to give battle by attacking the enemy.

Commanding a small column of five hundred and sixty men, who were guarding the left flank of the army, the Baron of Serro Largo, found himself attacked by three thousand one hundred men commanded by General Lavalleja, and was about retiring in order to obtain support from the division commanded by General Callado when, besides this

attack in front he was set on by about seven hundred horsemen on the flank. They were almost four thousand against less than six hundred men. The hero could not contain his soldiers, the greater number of whom were *volunteer countrymen*, who fled, routed by the charges of the enemy, and they carried him away with them in their flight on to the division of Callado.

This general, not being able to distinguish his brother warriors in flight from their numerous enemies, charging them, and threatening the safety of his division already formed in a strong square, gave the order to fire; the artillery thundered, the musketry burst out in a rolling fire, and the Baron of Serro Largo, the Rio Grande Alcides, never conquered by his enemies, fell dead, shot through by balls fired by the army of his country?

From an humble and obscure cradle, and without the name of his parents being known for certain, a pure and legitimate plebeian without protectors and all alone given up to himself, from a simple soldier he had advanced to the rank of a marshal of the army, and had merited the ennobling title of Baron of Serro Largo.

In combats and fights he conquered dozens of times, and he was never once conquered.


He died in defense of his country, and was unfortunately killed by the arms of his country.

In his brilliant and glorious life there was no flaw.

His bravery was barely equalled by his modesty.

From 1816 to 1827 there was no warrior nor hero equal to the Baron of Serro Largo.

That baron, José de Abreu, is the most illustrious and legendary of the warlike heroes of the province of S. Pedro do Rio Grande do Sul.



IV OF OCTOBER

FRANCISCO GÉ AÇALABA DE MONTESUMA

VISCOUNT OF JEQUITINHONHA

The legitimate son of Manoel Gomes Brandão Montesuma and of D. Narciza Thereza de Jesus Barreto, Francisco Gomes Brandão was born on the 23d of March, 1794, in the city of Bahia.

His father destined him for a monk of the seraphic order of the Barefooted Franciscans, where he entered on the 4th of October, 1808; but at the end of seven months he left the convent against the paternal wish, and wished to enlist in the artillery regiment, which he did not carry out because his parents made a strong opposition to it.

In Bahia he went through the medico-chirurgical course of medicine, and at the end of three years, having passed his respective examinations, he changed the plan of his career, and in 1816 went to the University of Coimbra where he graduated in law, carrying off a prize in the third year.

From Coimbra he carried the germens of the political and secret society which, together with other academicians, he had founded under the name of *Keporatica* or of the *Gardeners*, (*Jardineiros*.)

In the city of S. Salvador, at which he had arrived in September, 1821, he established the society of the *Gardeners*, and took the editorship of the political part of the *Diario Constitucional* which was published there.

He was a zealous liberal and constituted himself the champion of the independence of Brazil, supporting the union of Bahia with Rio de Janeiro under the government of D. Pedro, still Prince Regent, and one year afterwards Emperor.

A member of the city chamber nominated by the letters patent from the Chief Judges' Tribunal as well as others, on the 18th February, 1822, contributed much towards refusing the installment in the post of General of Arms of Brigadier Madeira, chief of the Portuguese garrison troops of the city, and appointed to that post by the government of Lisbon.

The terrible conflicts of that same day, the 18th, and of the 19th and 20th of February, between the Luzitanian military corps and the Brazilians; the latter being beaten, retreated into the interior.

Montesuma remained in the city, always conspiring for the independence, and he labored hard for the patriotic reaction which broke forth on the 24th of June in Ca-

choeira and the town of S. Francisco, afterwards cities.

Flying across the bay to the interior, he arrived at the town of S. Francisco. He was very influential in the organization of the Provisional Government and was elected a member of it by the town of Cachoeira, and that Government was installed on the 6th of September, under the name of Counsel, *ad interim*. He was its secretary and soon afterwards member of the committee which, in the name of the council, was sent to Rio de Janeiro to felicitate the Prince Regent D. Pedro, and to explain to him the situation and the urgent wants of the Province and of the patriots in arms. He went by land as far as *Ilhéos*, and from thence by sea in a small launch, incurring the greatest dangers.

Arriving at the city of Rio de Janeiro on the 14th November he found the Independence of Brazil proclaimed, and the Prince D. Pedro acclaimed Constitutional Emperor of Brazil.

The Bahian Commission met with a suitable, solemn and ostentatious reception. Montesuma was greatly distinguished by the Emperor, and would have had the title of Baron of Cachoeira conferred on him on the day of the coronation of D. Pedro I, the 1st of December, if he had not shown the political inappropriateness of so high a favor which was capable of exciting displeasure in Bahia, still at war with the Luzitanian troops, that he did not pertain to a rich family or one of those which enjoyed « prestige » in the Province.

Not accepting the title of Baron, he received the insignia of a dignitary of the Order of the Cross, then established.

On the 7th of December he entered the *noble order of*

the *Knights of Santa Cruz*, a secret and masonic society, governed by a council that had the title of *Apostolado*, whose chief was the Emperor D. Pedro I bearing the symbolic name of *Romulo*.

On the 10th of December, Montesuma departed for Bahia, and arrived at Cachoeira, for which he had to overcome difficulties. He published the periodical *Independente Constitucional*, and taking possession of his post of Secretary of the Council *ad interim*, rendered important services.

It was then, with many others, in order by every means to excite the Brazilian patriotism, he took from his name the Portuguese surnames, and commenced singing himself Francisco Gé (the name of a tribe of Indians) *Acayaba* (the name of a fine tree in the interior of America) de Montesuma. Even before the Luzitanian troops were expelled from the city of S. Salvador, the election of deputies to the Brazilian House of Assembly were made in the Province, and Montesuma was one of those elected; but he had already set off again by land for Rio de Janeiro with documented despatches of the Council concerning the state of the army.

In that worst of journeys, made like the first at his own expense, he spent seventy-five days, in which he failed to travel in few, and in few travelled less than ten leagues per day.

On the 24th July, 1823, Montesuma took his seat in the Assembly, and distinguished himself as an orator and for his liberal idea. He opposed the minister of war, Costa Barros, with whom he was on the point of fighting a duel. He became odious to the reactionists, and on the 12th of November, on the dissolution of the Assembly, he was arrested together with the Andradas, Rocha, and

Father Belchior, at the door of the Chamber of Deputies, and together with them banished to Europe, and in France suffered much by his enjoyment of personal liberty being disputed.

In 1828 he passed over to England where, as in France, he lived studying. He, afterwards, returned again to this country, but visited Belgium and Holland and then embarked for Brazil on the 7th April, 1831, on the day on which D. Pedro I abdicated the throne of the Empire !

In his absence, and in banishment, he had had so many votes for deputy for Bahia, that he had remained in the place of the first substitute, and on the day following that on which he arrived at Rio de Janeiro, he was called to take his seat in the Chamber to fill a vacancy which had taken place.

The permanent Regency invited him to enter the first Ministry which it should organize. Montesuma excused himself, and immediately afterwards, in frank and energetic opposition attacked almost every measure and project consequent on the inexorable liberal reaction.

The glory was his of attacking the African slave traffic. He committed the error, or honored his convictions, in combating and voting against the constitutional reforms which saved Brazil.

He was not reelected. In the whole province of Bahia, he barely obtained thirty-six votes, the consequence of his having withdrawn from the liberals, taken the part of the *carumuris*, and written, in the capital, the periodical *Ypiranga*, contrary to the ideas and to the victory of the 7th April.

He followed it up by publishing a notable pamphlet

under the title—*the liberty of the republics* against the opinion of the federalists.

He lived nobly and splendidly through his advocacy, and in the tribunal of the jury he shone forth famously.

In 1837 he entered the ministry, the last, of the Regent Feijó's, whom he had ardently opposed in 1831 and 1832, the former being minister of justice, and in the legislative session of that year, he gallantly fought against a numerous conservative opposition directed by Vasconcellos, Honório, Calmon, Rodrigues Torres, Maciel Monteiro and other parliamentarians of the first order.

On the 18th September of the same year he ceased to be minister, Feijó having resigned the Regency. In 1838, being elected deputy, Montezuma, again bound to the liberals, was vehement and torturing in opposition : in 1840 he advocated the majority of D. Pedro II, and, in the same, year, he left for England as envoy extraordinary and minister plenipotentiary of Brazil, a post which he only filled during nine months.

On his return to Brazil, and the liberal party being out of power, he returned to advocacy, he cooperated in founding the institute of the advocates, and was president of the same from its installation on the 7th August, 1843, until the 14th of September 1850, when he was nominated a councillor of State, and considered, for that reason, that he ought to abstain from incurring any responsibility to which that presidency might render him liable. The Institute then conferred on him the honorary title of president.

In the meanwhile he had had a seat in the Provincial Assembly of Rio de Janeiro from 1847 to 1850, and used laughingly to say that he was there undergoing his parliamentary noviciate.

On the 1st of May, 1851 he was chosen by His Imperial

Majesty, senator in the triple list offered by the province of Bahia, and in 1854, on the 2d of December, he had conferred on him, the title of Viscount of Jequitinhonha.

In the Senate he held a first rank as an orator.

One of the well deserving of the Independence, his laurels of 1821, 1822 and 1823 cannot wither in history.

A deputy of the Assembly he showed himself worthy of his recent and glorious past life, and revealed the fact of his being a valiant champion in parliament.

From 1841 forwards, he showed himself either sceptical in politics, unbelieving in parties, or guided solely by his own inspirations or by a system of opportunities, of governmental principles; he now supported the liberal school, now the conservatives, and opposed or defended ministries of every political color; but at all events he was admirable as a speaker in parliament.

The annals of the legislative chambers of Brazil perpetuate his orations, some of which are really triumphant in learning and in hard logic: they cannot however carry down to posterity certain special gifts of a parliamentary tribune, which rendered Montesuma a pungent, satirical, and, so to say, caricaturing orator, and an adversary who drove one to despair, a tormenting executioner, which would require at every moment more than the short-hand writer, or the photographer.

Montesuma, Viscount de Jequitinhonha, in opposition, and to gain time by debating, was capable of speaking on the smallest question for a whole day.

And that was the least of it.

In order to vex, to stun, to infuriate and render desperate the minister, whom he opposed, an eloquent opponent, whom he thought it necessary to disarm, vex to the heart, cover with ridicule, Montesuma shot poisoned arrows

from his eyes, in his voice there was every conceivable tone, and in a certain way of laughing, diabolical sarcasm ; in moments of unexpected silence, or malignant reticence, provoking insinuations and mimicking him alone, and in sudden and evanescent expressions of his face, a horrible apparatus of torture to cut the adversary to pieces.

Montesuma was an orator whom it was necessary to *see* while he spoke in the tribune to thoroughly appreciate his power of aggression.

Viscount de Jequitinhonha died in Rio de Janeiro in the year 1870.



V OF OCTOBER

DIOGO ALVARES —THE CARAMURU'



In 1560, a Portuguese ship on her voyage to India, was wrecked on the shoals to the north of Bahia de todos os Santos, and Diogo Alvares managed, with eight more of his companions, to save themselves from the fury of the waves.

Except in the number of the shipwrecked whom it is said got to land, and which is, or is not exact, that information appears true.

Now begins the fabulous part, mixed up with the reality.

Chroniclers relate that the *tupinambás*, savages who were then the lords of that part of the territory of Bahia, made prisoners of the shipwrecked men, and went on devouring them in their horrible banquets, until finally,

there only remained Diogo Alvares, he, using a musket which he had brought with him from the ship, brought down a bird, and that at the report of the shot, the Indians shouted *Caramurú! Caramurú!*... and looking on him as a being of superior nature to the human race, respected him, and showed themselves daily more subject to his influence.

Rocha Pitta says that the *tupinambás* devoured the shipwrecked men, but that they were greatly pleased with Diogo Alvares, who had rendered them aid in collecting booty from the ship, and relates, as so many others do, the episode of the shot.

There is here no room for historical investigations.

The circumstance of the shot, and the effect of the report, on the savages who had no idea of fire arms, are merely likely.

What is an incontestable fact is, that Diogo Alvares had been wrecked and saved himself in 1510, that he knew how to make himself beloved by the savages, and that he received as his wife Paraguassú, daughter of the chief *morubixaba*.

Chroniclers further relate (and Rocha Pitta echoes it) that Diogo Alvares had taken, together with his wife *Paraguassu*, passage on board a French ship, and that in France the King Henri II, and the Queen Catharine de Medicis, had taken *Paraguassu* to the baptismal font, and that the royal godmother had given her her own name, and that afterwards both were witnesses to the marriage of the Portuguese with the *Tupinambá*.

All this is imaginary. Diogo Alvares and Paraguassu never went out of Brazil.

The *Carumurú* established himself with his consort in the spot where the donee Francisco Pereira Coutinho,

very much later, founded the hamlet called *Villa Velha*. For the services which, chiefly in wars with other tribes, that she rendered who had received it, and by the influence of Paraguassu over her brother savages came to acquire no small moral power, which he opportunely availed himself of to the benefit of colonization.

Diogo Alvares sanctified his union with the virtuous and devoted *Tupinambá*, his companion, by marrying her immediately after making her receive baptism ; but when?.. is a doubtful point.

In 1531 Martin Affonso de Souza arrived with his expedition at Bahia. He there met with Diogo Alvares who gave him information concerning his country and left him two Portuguese as companions, and seeds of useful plants.

In 1537 or 1538 the Donee of the Capitania of Bahia meets in Diogo Alvares the most precious auxiliary, who obtains for him the friendship and the services of the Indians ; but at the end of a few years disharmony is kindled, and a revolt bursts out, the causes of which are not verified. Either the assassination of the son of a chief of the Tupinambás which caused these to take up arms, or the want of discipline among the Portuguese colonists angry at the government of the Donee, or out of fear at the great influence of Diogo Alvares, the persecution and even the imprisonment of the latter, and the Indians rising at the voice of Paraguassú, however, all that was written, it is certain that Coutinho was beaten, expelled, and retired to the Capitania of Porto Seguro, where in an evil hour, at the end of more than a year, the Caramurú went to call him to return to Bahia ; for a violent storm caused the shipwreck of the unfortunate Donee on the shoal of the Island of Itaparica, who having escaped the sea,

was a victim of the hatred of the *Tupinambás* who killed him.

In 1549 Thomé de Souza, the first Governor-General of Brazil, arriving in Bahia where he was charged to found the city, the capital of the colony. Brazil had as a considerable and great lever for an easy conquest, and of respected power, Diogo Alvares, who ensured him the submission and co-operation in labor of the Indians, as the priest, Father Nobrega, in the same year, in a letter to the Kingdom (of Portugal) informed them, and all the chroniclers and historians confirm it.

Everything conduces to the belief that Diogo Alvares in 1549 was already married to Paraguassú, called by her Christian name, and his wife Catharina Alvares. Nobrega himself in the letter alluded to, wrote: «This man, with *one of his sons-in-law*, is what most confirms peace with this people, (the Indians) on account of their being his intimate friends. We also found a chief among them (the Indians) an already baptized Christian, etc».

From 1549 forwards the influence and importance of Diogo Alvares in Bahia, were naturally dimmed by the official and imposing power of the Governor-General, and by the regular organization of the Government of the great colony; he however, always continued, although already old and broken by age, to serve the cause of civilization, until on the 5th of October 1557 he rendered his spirit to God.

In an ancient registry of deaths in the cathedral of Bahia was to be read the following note, that Jaboatão copied in the second part of his chronicle.

« On the fifth day of October 1557, died Diogo Alvares Corrêa Caramurú, of the hamlet of Pereira; he was buried in the monastery of Jesus; leaving for his executor, João

de Figueiredo, his son in law: the Curate João Lourenço at p. 70. »

The hero of the fine poem of Santa Rita Durão, a legendary figure, and the most ancient of the romantic poetical and imaginary creations of the old chroniclers, Diogo Alvares stripped of all fictions, and of all the fantastic adornments, with which they made a fable of his memory, shows himself to be a real, positive and incontestable providencial element, that prepared the way and facilitated the conquest of the civilization of Bahia de Todos os Santos, the queen, the brilliant star of the colonization of Brazil.

And very deservedly did it fall to the lot of the shipwrecked man of 1510, the devoted aider the civilizing conquest of the land of Santa Cruz, Diogo Alvares, finally, to have the glory of being the primitive trunk of many ennobled Bahian families whose ancestor was Caramurú the legendary and well deserving, and of Paraguassú the savage daughter of a *morubixaba* (chief) and princess in her forests.


Diogo Alvares, and Catharina Alvares had by their union, perforce a natural one in the beginning, but afterwards sanctified, four daughters, all of whom married and of which the names of three are known ; viz.

Magdalena Alvares, the wife of Affonso Rodrigues, a native of Obidos :

Felippa Alvares, the wife of Paulo Dias Adorno.

Apollonia Alvares, the wife of João de Figueiredo Mascarenhas.

The memory of that trunk, called Diogo Alvares, the Caramurú, and of Catharina Alvares, the Paraguassú is zealously preserved by aristocratic Bahian families, as in the middle ages were preserved and perpetuated the princes and Barons in the glorious registers of their grand fathers and fathers in the wars of the crusades.





VI OF OCTOBER

PERO LOPES DE SOUZA

Pero Lopes de Souza a Portuguese Captain died disastrously and prematurely ; he was one of the first donees of the hereditary Capitancias of Brazil.

He was the brother of Martim Affonso de Souza, and younger than him, who was only thirty years of age, when in 1530 he came in command of a fleet which was to explore the River Plate, to fight and take French vessels, which showed an intention of forming establishments of that nation in Pernambuco and in Bahia, and founding regular colonies at certain places in Brazil.

Pero or Pedro Lopes made part of the expedition which was composed of two shippes, a gallion, and two caravels, and he had the command of the caravel *Rosa*, in which, off Cape Santo Agostinho he fought during the whole night of

the 1st of February, and made to surrender at seven in the following morning a french ship, to which was given the name of *Nossa Senhora da Candelaria* in commemoration of the day on which he had taken her, and the command of which was given to him by Martin Affonso.

After sundry events and labors, Martin Affonso took a course to enter the River Plate, when a violent tempest supervened, the admirals ship was cast ashore at the mouth of the arroyo (smale stream) Chuy, his brother Pero Lopes arriving fortunately to the aid of the Capitão-Mor.

It was about the end of October, 1531, that this disaster occurred.

It was resolved in council, which the guarda-Mor Martin Affonso convoked, and took the opinion of, to go and await at the small island of the Palmas, for Pero Lopes, who had been sent to sail up and explore the River Plate, and to put up posts.

Pero Lopes da Silva started on the 23d November to fulfil his task, he went up the Paraná far beyond its confluence with Uruguay, overcame great difficulties, proved his valor and firmness and on the 27th of December of the same year, 1531, he arrived at the Island of Palmas.

In May, 1532, Pero Lopes by order of his brother the Capitão-Mor, leaves S. Vicente, in command of the ships which were to return to Portugal: in August he came within sight of Pernambuco, and took two French Ships, and imprisoned the garrison which was in a fort constructed on the island of Itamaracá, and three months afterwards sailed for Lisbon.

In a letter dated the 28th September, 1532, D. João III made known to Martin Affonso, among other things that he endowed him with one hundred leagues of coast in the

best situation in Brazil, and his brother Pero Lopes de Souza with fifty.

On the 6th October, 1534, the registry conforming this gift too Pero Lopes was passed, not of fifty, but of eighty leagues of his Capitania which was called Santo Amaro, and which comprised forty leagues in the south, between the land of Sant'Anna, and the island of Cananêa, ten between the River Curupacé and the River of S. Vicente, and in the north thirty leagues from the river Iguarussú to Traição bay.

Pero Lopes de Souza did not again return to Brazil: Gonçalo Affonso was his *locum tenens* in this lands in the south, and João Gonçalves in those of the north, the fortune of the colonias of the former lands being under the judiciary and protecting guardian ship of the superior authorities of the Capitania of S. Vicente, which was that of Martin Affonso de Souza.

Pero Lopes de Souza died from being shipwrecked on the East coast of Africa, or near the island of Madagascar in 1539.

His name recommends itself to Brazil, not only for the services which are mentioned, but for his enlightened and important *Diary* of the expedition of 1530 to 1532, which speaks greatly in favor of his intelligence, and which is the enlightening light of the history of the important voyage and commission of Martin Affonso, and of some points of the history of Brazil previous to those year.

Besides much more, Pero Lopes de Souza was the first Portuguese captain who entered the estuary of the Plate' and who ascended and explored a good part of the lower Paraná.

VII OF OCTOBER

ALEXANDRE MARIA DE MARIZ SARMENTO



Alexandre Maria de Mariz Sarmento the legitimate son of Dr. Francisco Luiz de Mariz Sarmento and of D. Maria Amelia de Figueiredo, was born in Portugal, in the city of Oporto, on the 9th of November, 1791. He came with his parents to Brazil in 1799.

In 1803, through the favor of D. João, the Prince Regent, he obtained the place of a junior clerk of the pay department of the Junta of the Treasury of the Capitania of Ceará Grande, and three years afterwards Mariz Sarmento passed from thence to be Scrivener of receipts and expenditure of the Military Hospital; in 1807 he got to be second clerk of the Junta of the Treasury; and afterwards was promoted to first clerk.

On the 1st of April 1811 he removed to Rio de Janeiro

which he never afterwards left ; he was employed in the Royal Treasury, and in 1812 was charged with registering the entries and deliveries of diamonds of the lapidary's department.

By good fortune, favor hit upon merit ; Mariz Sarmento united to intelligence, much zeal and unsurpassed probity. In the administration of Finance department he gradually advanced in his office, and complied strictly with his duties. He was a model of a public employé for activity and devotion.

A Brazilian since his eighth year, and more so through education and habits, he adopted heartily in 1822, the independence of Brazil.

In 1828 he was decorated with the insignia of the Order of Christ. During the Government of the Regency, he rose to be clerk of the revision of the Tribunal of the Treasury. On the 10th of September, 1840 he was appointed chief clerk of the accountant general's office ; on the 17th of that month he received letters patent of a councillor, and on the 2nd of December following the commendam of the Order of Christ.

In 1842 the province of Ceará elected him as deputy to the general legislative assembly : Councillor Mariz Sarmento was not a politician ; but in the Chamber he rendered valuable services in finance committees.

In 1844 he was accountant General of the Treasury ; in 1850, Director general of the expenditure, in which post he was superannuated on the 29th January, 1859.

He was then sixty-eight years of age, and at seventy one, acceding to the urgent request of the government, he accepted the nomination of member of the inspecting council of the savings Bank and « Mont de Secours », of Rio de Janeiro, in 1862, and on the 4th of June of that year,

the post of President of that council. In 1866 being weak and ill, he asked for and obtained leave to resign.

The noble and virtuous old man, had worn out his sight by summing up lines: of figures and numbers for more than sixty years: he became blind, and blind and in a sad retreat he awaited death during one more lustre.

Besides his administrative employment, he was an honorary associate of the society Auxiliadora da Industria Nacional, and the founding effective, and useful member of the Brazilian, Historical and Geographical Institute.

The Emperor had raised him to be a dignitary of the order of the Roze.

The councillor Alexandre Maria de Mariz Sarmento died in Rio de Janeiro on the 7th October 1870.

Most pure in his habits, modest in his life, and both economical and methodical in his living, otherwise always in a worthy manner, he left a fortune of more than four hundred contos of reis, and left in his will to pious and useful establishments two hundred and forty five contos of réis, of which, one hundred to the Misericordia hospital of Rio de Janeiro. The Society Auxiliadora was also justly portioned in his generous and patriotic legacies.

A laborious and honorable man, an intelligent, most able and strict-public servant, so active, that it was said *he had neither-time nor right to be ill.*

Mariz Sarmento, a brilliant without a flaw, left a much more precious thin than the fortune which he philanthropically, and patriotically divided, to wit; the example of rare devotion to the public service.

He died blind: because during more than half a century he had wished and known how to see much in the fiscalization of the monies and the expences of the State.



VIII OF OCTOBER

PAULINO JOSÉ SOARES DE SOUZA

VISCOUNT DE URUGUAY

Paulino José Soares de Souza, the legitimate son of Dr. Antonio Soares de Souza and of D. Antonio Magdalena Soares de Souza was born in Paris in the year 1807, and who carried by his parents, when still in his infancy to the Province of Maranhão, he there made his first studies, and some of those of the humanities, and went fifteen years of age to Portugal where he matriculated in Coimbra, and was in his fourth year of civil and canon law when the absolutist reaction of D. Miguel de Bragança obliged him to stop his academical course from the fact of the closing of the University.

Returning to Brazil he went to S. Paulo to solicit from the recently founded Academy of law what he had not been able to obtain in Coimbra, viz his bachelor's degree which he took in 1831, with the reputation of being a very notable student, .

Embracing the career of the magistracy, Paulino José Soares de Souza, was shortly afterwards appointed as magistrate of S. Paulo, passing on to the end of eight months to be criminal Judge of the district of S. José, to which was also annexed the exercise of the Intendency of Police in the Capital of the Empire.

When the criminal code of process was put in execution, he left that criminal judgship, and was nominated civil judge of the second instance in the same city.

On the additional act being promulgated, Paulino de Souza was elected a member of the provincial assembly of Rio de Janeiro immediately in the first legislature, and he was already in such good reputation that the said assembly included him in the list of vice-presidents of the province. The government of the Regent Feijó nominated him shortly afterwards president of the province of Rio de Janeiro, and the province in 1836 elected him deputy to the general assembly, being always afterwards re-elected, except in the legislature which commenced in 1845, in which he served however, taking his seat in the chamber as a substitute.

He rendered important services as president of the province of Rio de Janeiro, and gave proofs of being an enlightened and able administrator.

In the chamber he was bound to the conservative party, to which he firmly adhered to the day of his death.

He began to be distinguished as an orator with the strongest powers of logic and one who had studied greatly,

and he was the chief defender of the project for the interpretation of the additional act, a project which he presented as reporter of the respective special commission.

On the 23d May, 1840, he entered the ministry of justice, leaving the government at the end of two months with all his colleagues in consequence of the acclamation of the majority of the Emperor D. Pedro II, to which the ministry and the conservative party had opposed themselves.

In 1841 at the end of eight months of government, the liberal cabinet of the minority, in its turn had fallen, and Paulino returned to his post of minister of justice in the ministry of the 23d of March. The reforms of the Code of process immediately afterwards, (Saw of 3d Dec.) were then maintained in both the chambers, and the project of the creation of the new council of State, which adopted in resolution by the legislative body, and having obtained the Imperial sanction, were the motives which lead to the liberal revolts of S. Paulo and Minas Geraes in 1842.

In the endeavor to put down and to crush those revolts, the offspring of an extensive and threatening conspiracy, the minister of justice carried his energy to take such measures, some of which did not escape being too rigorous and violent. The circumstances, however, were extraordinary, and an enormous responsibility weighed on the government before the nation.

In 1843 the Ministry of the 23rd of March was dissolved ; to which succeeded that of the 20th January of that year ; Paulino de Souza continued in this to hold the same post of minister of justice, passing on the 8th of June to that of Foreign Affairs ; Honório Hermeto, afterwards Viscount and Marquis of Paraná taking the former post.

This Cabinet resigning power and organising that of the 2nd of February 1844, of a character favorable to the

liberal party, Paulino de Souza went to the Chamber and declared him self in opposition.

The Chamber being dissolved in that same year, Paulino was defeated in the next election ; in 1845, however, he took his seat in Parliament, as a deputy-substitute : in 1848 he gained in the opposition a brilliant electoral victory, always for the Province of Rio de Janeiro, and on the 29th of September he hailed the return of his party to the government.

On the 21st of March 1849, he was chosen Senator in the triple list offered to the crown, still by the Province of Rio de Janeiro, which had already given him an equal honor and reward, as well as Maranhão, who claimed him, as having adopted him as a son in his fair and auspicious infancy.

On the 8th of October 1849, he substituted the Marquis de Olinda in the post of minister of Foreign Affairs, in the cabinet of 29th of September 1848.

The substitution could not be more honorable, and flattering to his pride ; for at that time were flaming diplomatic complications, and threatenings of war with the dictator of the Argentine Confederation, D. João Manoel Rosas who had at heart the annexing of the Oriental State of Uruguay, whose independence, the government of Brazil was bound to defend, and had a political interest in doing so.

Paulino de Souza saw that war break out during his ministry, and had the glory of applauding its quick termination, with bright honor to Brazil, who was the regenerator of the liberty of the Argentine Confederation, and the generous maintainer of the independence of the Oriental State of Uruguay.

Treaties were concluded with that republic, and with

that of Perú, of commerce, boundaries and fluvial navigation, and in 1850 he had already defended with patriotic eloquence, the rights and the honor of the Empire against the violence arising from the prepotency of England in that most grave question, the African slave trade; and followed it up by cooperating with his influence for the noblest of causes, by aiding the minister Euzebio de Queiroz in the most glorious work of extinguishing that accursed traffic, which was otherwise the declared idea and the aspiration of the liberal party, attacked on this ground by stratagem and political explorations of the conservative opposition.

At all events, the extinction of the barbarous traffic of enslaved Africans is a title of Glory that honors the memory of the cabinet of the 29th of September.

On the 6th of September, 1853, that ministry went out of power, and Paulino de Souza brought to an end, on that day, his active political life in the struggles of constitutional and legitimate parties of his country, although he always continued under his ancient banner of the conservative party.

On the 8th September, 1853, he was nominated councillor of state; on the 2d December, 1854, he received by Imperial favor, the title of Viscount of Uruguay, with the honors of grandeeship.

In 1855 he went as Envoy Extraordinary, and Minister Plenipotentiary, charged with a special mission relative to the boundary of the Empire, with French Guiana, near the court of Louis Napoleon, Emperor of the French. The justice of the cause of Brazil, and the ambitious obstinacy of the government of France, induced the latter to have recourse to putting off negotiations, and of refusing to give a friendly final solution of the questions: but the Vis-

count of Uruguay did his duty to the letter, and that of an able Brazilian diplomat.

Returned to his country Viscount of Uruguay kept as much as he possibly could from parliamentary combats, and from the ambitious field of political parties: a senator and a councillor of state, he still found time and to spare, to prove himself a deep and learned prose writer, to put in order works, to complete important works already long planned.

He wrote and published:

In 1862—*Essays on administrative law*—2 vols in 4to.

In 1865—*Practical studies on the administration of the provinces of Brazil*—2 vols in 4to.

He survived this last work but a short time; for he died in the city of Rio de Janeiro on the 15th of July, 1866, poor, and leaving only to his children the riches of his fine name, his great services, and the memory of his probity without a spot.

Viscount of Uruguay was a member of the Brazilian Historical and Geographical Institute, and of many societies both scientific and literary.

IX OF OCTOBER

DON AGOSTINHO BEZERRA

A great preacher, and Bishop, Agostinho Bezerra was born in Bahia in 1610, and devoting himself to the priesthood, he showed himself worthy of it by his learning and his virtues.

His name was held in general veneration. He passed for being a profound theologian and consummate philosopher: he held a first place for eloquence in the pulpit.

Don Agostinho Bezerra was Bishop of Ceuta, and afterwards of Angra.

His name, in the complete absence of dates relating to his life, services, and death, is from patriotic duty remembered: let the 9th of October be devoted to his memory.

X OF OCTOBER

PERO DE CAMPOS TOURINHO

A Portuguese of a noble lineage, an experienced navigator, expert and already notable for good services which he had rendered, Pero de Campos Tourinho received from D. João III on the 27th of May, 1534, letters patent of gift of the capitania of *Porto Seguro*, with fifty leagues, which commenced in the south at the bar of the river Mucury.

He came from Portugal, bringing what he most loved, his wife Ignez Fernandes Pinto, his son Fernão de Campos, sundry relations, some good friends, and colonists whom he had engaged.

He landed at the same place where Pedro Alvares Cabral had been in 1500, and where Christovão Jacques

had founded, hard by, in 1503, the factory of *Santa Cruz*.

Tourinho there met with some Portuguese, left in the Factory by Christovão Jacques, and who presented themselves to the donee in company with some Indians with whom they had united, and bringing with them the children arising from their union. This was of good augury to him, in which he was not mistaken.

Fortifying himself in Porto Seguro, but with all his hearts ties around him, and his interest in Brazil, Pero de Campos Tourinho, able and prudent as he was, saw in the Indians rather auxiliaries to be explored than enemies to be destroyed: obliged in the beginning to chase them away when attacked by them, he gained dominion over them by benevolence, by friendly treatment, and by frequent little gifts, and presents of insignificant value, but held in great estimation by the wretched savages.

In a short time perfect and fruitful peace reigned. The indians loved the donee, and were useful to the colony, which became developed with encouraging prosperity.

The traffick in Brasil-wood, the growing of sugar cane, and the manufacture of sugar and rum, the culture of grain, and the most abundant produce of the fishery, employed the colonists, repaid most exuberantly their labour, and gave to the Capitania of Porto Seguro the prospect of a most flattering future.

But on the 10th of October, 1553, the intelligent, most able, and devoted donee Pero de Campos Tourinho, died.

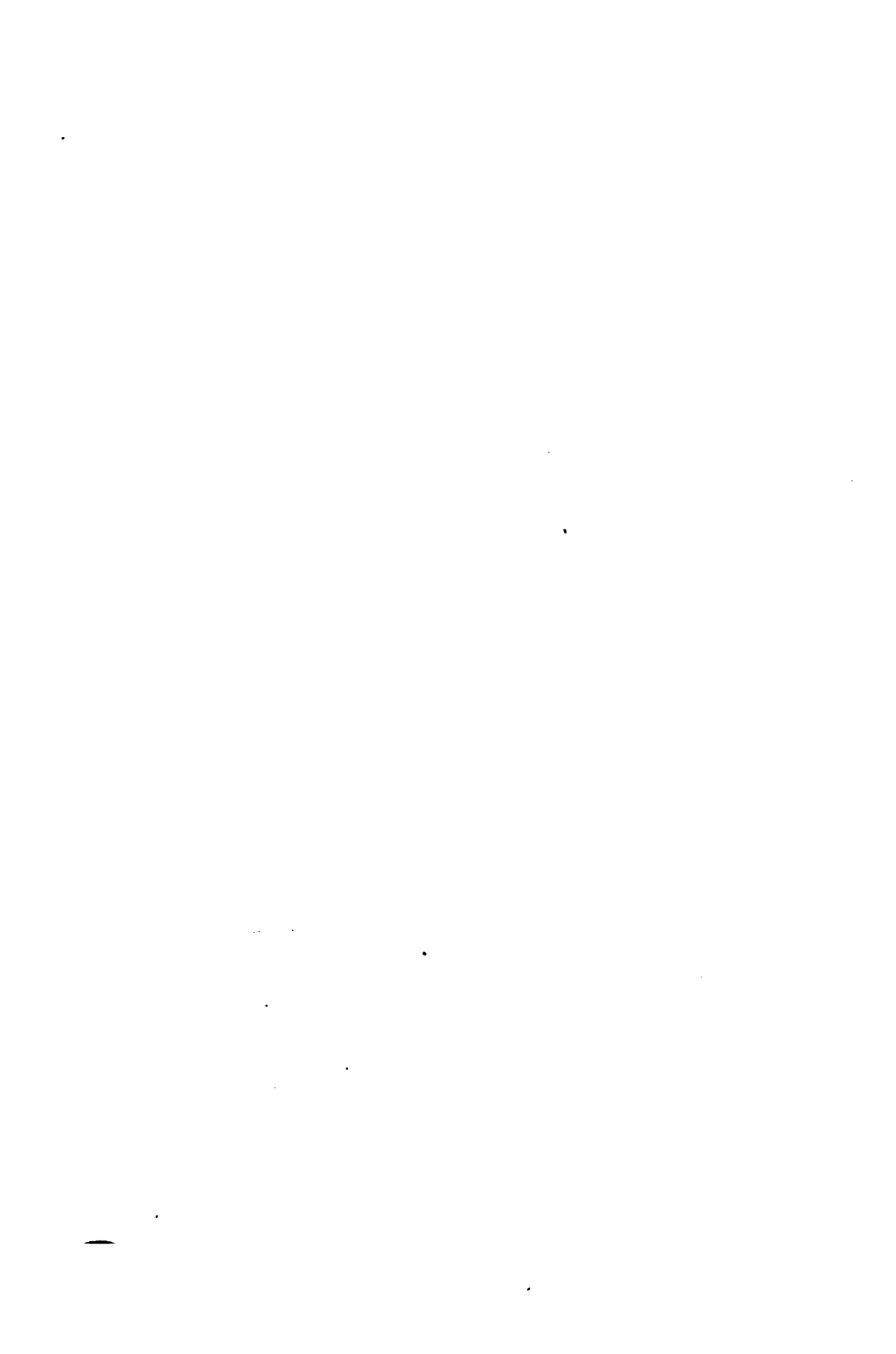
A coloniser without being an oppressor of the Indians, a donee identified with his Capitania, entirely taken up with it, in Brazil Pero de Campos Tourinho was a real element of civilization; but could not, he had not time to

bequeath, the work of his consummate ability so firmly settled, as not to leave it compromised in consequence of his death.

On Pero Campos dying the Capitania of Porto Seguro lost the soul that vivified it, the wise direction that made it prosperous.

Fernão de Campos was his son; but on inheriting the Capitania he had not inherited, the enlightened spirit and the practical skill of his father. The Capitania became weakened under his dominion.

His sister D. Leonor de Campos who afterwards inherited it, sold it to the Duke de Aveiro, who neither knew what he had bought nor could he from so far off understand what he lost, by allowing to fall into decay, owing to carelessness, the Capitania which had once flourished so easily. Pero de Campos Tourinho had no heirs worthy of his name in Brazil; but his memory has a right to shine in the history of this Country.



XI OF OCTOBER

URBANO SABINO PESSOA DE MELLO



Urbano Sabino Pessoa de Mello the legitimate son of Brigadeiro José Camello Pessoa de Mello was born in Pernambuco in the year 1811.

After having completed with distinction his studies of the humanities, he matriculated in the academy of social and juridical sciences in Olinda, and there took a Bachelor's degree in 1834.

He was a magistrate, and a politician; but politics snatched him from the magistracy to give him complete independency of the Government at his advocate's desk.

As a magistrate, having been the municipal Judge of Goyana in 1836, he became chief district Judge, and abandoned that career in 1849, leaving a well merited reputa-

tion behind him of a Judge of the highest integrity and of superior intelligence.

In 1836, in the first legislature of the Provincial Assembly of Pernambuco, he exhibited from the commencement notable merit as an orator.

His province elected him as Deputy to the General Assembly in the legislature of 1838 to 1841, and in the following one of 1843 to 1844, brought to an end by dissolution. In that last year he bound himself decidedly to the liberal party, and in Pernambuco was one of its principal chiefs, the party taking there the denomination of *Praieiro*.

He returned re-elected deputy in 1845, and even in 1848 when the conservative party rose to power on the 29th of September, a few days after which the sittings of the legislative chamber were put off owing to there being a great majority of the opposition in the chamber of deputies.

The two political, liberal and conservative, parties were in a most ardently hostile attitude, and in the province of Pernambuco passions became so inflamed, that there were well-founded fears of the breaking out of a revolt.

The business of the chambers, being put off, the liberal senators and deputies, assembled in party council, resolved that they should all join in the endeavor to maintain order in their respective provinces, by dissuading the men of their party from any illegal manifestation.

Urbano was considered the chief of the Pernambuco deputation; but in Pernambuco the most popular man among the *Praieiros* was the deputy, Dr. Joaquim Nunes Machado, who, as if he foresaw a sinister and proximate future, refused to return with his colleagues to the province, repeating insistingly, that—if he went to Pernambuco he would have to be a victim.

But Nunes Machado was reputed of so much influence as to be indispensable in restraining the threatened revolt. Urbano, the intimate and favorite friend of that exalted patriot, and enthusiastic tribune, was the one who, with the most generous and purest intentions, overcame his resistance in a partial meeting of the deputies of Pernambuco and some others on the night of the 11th of October.

Nunes Machado set off; his presentiment was realized; for the intrigues of the adversaries, and the injurious suspicions of their fellow politicians drew the deputies on to put themselves at the head of the revolt which, in spite of them, had broken out, and the generous and zealous tribune struck by a ball, fell dead on the 2d of February, 1849, when he was leading to the combat a column of the revolted men.

Urbano who had to remain in Rio de Janeiro wept for his friend, bewailed his having impelled him to go to Pernambuco. But not only since December, 1848, but also after the 2d of February, 1849, he showed himself to be a faithful and most devoted ally: he assiduously and energetically defended in the press of the capital, by his writings in the *Correio Mercantil*, the cause of the revolted party, and even with greater vigor after the victory of the Law in the horrible struggle of that day: and in the same year, 1849, he published *Praeira Revolt*, in one volume 16°, a history of that armed demonstration, full of the most interesting notices and explanations; but, without doubt, having the defect of undue partiality, and very often passionately so.

It was under such circumstances that Dr. Urbano Sabino Pessoa de Mello left the career of magistracy, and commenced in Rio de Janeiro to practice advocacy, gaining there by credit and a name which justly placed him among

the foremost of the advocates of the capital of the Empire.

The conservative party going out of power in 1863, Urbano again, in the following year returned to Parliament elected by one of the districts of his province, and with the *historical liberals* made vigorous opposition to the ministries then called *progressistas* from 1865 to 1866, when his parliamentary and political life came to an end.

As a speaker in the chamber of deputies he was always a much esteemed orator, on account of his remarkable gifts. He had an agreeable and insinuating voice, easy and prompt of speech, great powers of argument, and energy in attacking; he seemed always to endeavor to show himself more logical than oratorical.

Urbano Sabino Pessoa de Mello died in the city of Rio de Janeiro on the 7th of December, 1870.

He was the father of an exemplary family, a man of sound habits and of great probity.



XII OF OCTOBER

D. PEDRO DE ALCANTARA BOURBON

FIRST EMPEROR OF BRAZIL

Second male child of the Prince D. João, heir presumptive of the crown of Portugal, and of his wife the Spanish Princess D. Carlota Joaquina, daughter of the King Carlos IV, D. Pedro was born in Lisbon on the 12th of October, 1798.

He was rocked in the cradle and the years of his infancy ran on to the clamor of arms and the terrific voice of the European war.

He was hardly nine years of age, when the Portuguese Government, foreseeing imminent peril threatening the

Royal Family and the independence of the Kingdom, resolved to send him to Brazil with the title of Constable, having as his secretary and adviser Friar Antonio de Arribida, afterwards Bishop of Anemuria.

With the date of 2d October, 1807, a proclamation was made, in which the Portuguese Government announced to the Brazilians its transcendent forethought. Evidently the constable would be followed by the Royal Family in case of the invasion of Portugal which was feared.

The treaty signed by France and Spain in Fontainebleau on 27th October, and the immediate march of the French army, commanded by Junot, upon Portugal, precipitated events.

On the 29th November the Portuguese Royal Family emigrated to Brazil, and with them D. Pedro, who, for this reason, did not come in the character of Constable.

In March, 1808, the city of Rio de Janeiro became the capital of the Portuguese Monarchy, and in its bosom flourished D. Pedro, from that date to April 1831.

The Queen, D. Maria I, in consequence of the alteration of her mental faculties, had of majesty only the title and condign treatment, and her son D. João, Prince Regent, could already consider himself King, with D. Pedro heir-presumptive of the crown; as his brother, the first born, had been dead some time.

However not even this last consideration was attended to so that the Prince D. Pedro should receive a careful education, and be skilfully prepared in relation to the destiny which naturally awaited him.

From 1808 to 1820, that is from ten to twenty years of age D. Pedro manifested great abilities, which for want of careful direction were developed with their corresponding defects. He was gifted with notable talent, a lively

imagination and a warm temperament; he only received very limited and superficial instruction, and had no adviser who would shew him the real and practical side of life, and who would counsel him to restrain the impetuosity of spirit. He was frank and generous, energetic and courageous, loyal and dedicated to those who were, or said they were, his friends; but the years of his youth were running on poisoned by the education and the unworthy and debased obedience of ignorant servants, and of flatterers who pretended to admire him in the very heat of his passions, and who ministered to his whims with the eagerness which was only due to wisdom. Finally he had as a companion his brother the Prince D. Miguel, who was very far from being his equal in intelligence and goodness of heart, and who greatly exceeded him in grave defects of character.

To this abandonment during his boyhood and juvenility are due, in a great measure, the errors which compromised him as Constitutional Emperor.

At eighteen years of age, by the elevation of his father to the throne in 1816, D. Pedro found himself effectively heir presumptive to the crown; but being entirely removed from public affairs, he had no political education whatever.

His parents, and the carelessness, of the Ministers, left the Prince D. Pedro blindly confided to his own natural instincts, and he himself, for taste and amusement, lightly looked after the modest literary instruction which he possessed, and also cultivated music. Beyond this, with a natural inclination for weapons, he loved the Army, displaying from an early period a wonderful military appearance, was skilful in the equestrian art, a most dexterous horseman, and able to drive a carriage drawn by four or six

animals, with the strength and bravery of those laurel-crowned heroes in the ancient Olympic games.

In 1818 D. Pedro married the Archduchess of Austria D. Maria Leopoldina, afterwards first Empress of Brazil, and the august mother of D. Pedro II, the present Emperor; she was a lady of noble virtues and much beloved by the Brazilians.

In 1820 the Constitutional revolution Victorious in the Kingdom, ancient metropolis, came to afflict the King D. João VI, on one side injured by the fall of his power as absolute King, and on the other immensely worried by the necessity for the return of the Portuguese Court to Lisbon.

In almost all the Brazilian Provinces, the Portuguese garrison troops and the people adhered to the resolution of Portugal: the King endeavoured to temporise, and strongly pledged not to leave the capital of Rio de Janeiro, published the Decree of 18th February, 1821, by which he would send the Prince D. Pedro to Lisbon, where the Parliament would elaborate the Constitution of the Kingdom; at the same time he would convoke for Rio de Janeiro lawyers elected by the Chambers of the cities and towns of Brazil, and of such of the Atlantic Isles as had learned judges, with the object of consulting together as to what part of the articles of the future Portuguese Constitution might be adopted in the Kingdom of Brazil, and to propose the necessary reforms.

These historical reminiscences are indispensable in this place, as it is in the heat of these events that the Prince D. Pedro enters on the political scene.

The Decree of the 18th February was, although dissemblingly, counter-revolutionary: on the 25th of the same month the Luzitanian garrison declared itself in sedition in the Largo do Rocio (afterwards Constitution square) in

favor of the revolution of Portugal, and of obedience to the constituent Parliament. The Royal Prince, D. Pedro, hastened to know what the troops required, and on being informed went to tell all to the King at S. Christovão, whence he returned with the Decree dated the 24th, by which was approved the constitution that was going to be made in Lisbon, and adopted in the kingdom of Brazil. Immediately the Prince Royal and his brother D. Miguel in the name of the king and in their own names made oath to abide by the said Decree.

D. Pedro began to boast in the vehemency of the revolutionary ideas; but up to the 25th February he gave no token whatever of authority, nor up to the end of 1821 did he manifest himself as constitutional or favorable to the independence of Brazil. On the 25th February his action was passive, and in that all the weakness falls upon the king.

On the 7th March a new Decree announced the departure of the king and the Royal family for Lisbon; the Prince Royal, D. Pedro, remaining in Brazil as Regent. D. João shed tears after signing this Decree.

He would return forced by indeclinable duty and great political interest; but against the liberal element of the Parliament he would leave in Brazil the royal and monarchical element, represented by the heir presumptive to the crown.

D. Pedro, dazzled by the brilliancy of the Regency, appears not to have been able to restrain the desire that this should hasten the departure of his father, who, according to some opinions, complained of such a sentiment.

The first grave error of D. Pedro in politics is confessed in the imprudent ostentation which he made, alluding to

the lamentable and violent act, in one of the letters which he wrote to the King his father in 1821.

The electoral Assembly of Rio de Janeiro, formed in the Praça do Commercio, for the election of Deputies to the Portuguese Parliament became, from the first hour of its labors, on the 20th April, inefficient and anarchical; amongst other resolutions which it took, it obtained from the king, by a deputation which they sent to him, a Decree adopting the Spanish constitution, and besides this, *opposing itself to the departure of the said king for Portugal, it gave orders to the forts not to allow the squadron, which was to convey the Royal family, to leave the port.*

All this was more than revolutionary and anarchical, it was absurd; it was a nousy deliberation of electors backed by an excited populace, but completely disarmed and incapable of resistance at the first intimation of an armed force.

And at 3 o'clock in the morning of the 21th of April, a strong detachment of the portuguese division, without previously intimating the just dissolution of the electoral assembly, after a terrible discharge of musquetry on the Praça do Commercio (Exchange) invaded the rooms with bayonets charyged, and brutally expelled the electors and the people, killing some and wounding others.

From this perverse and barbarous fact, there resulted an exhuberant antagonism and hatred between the Brazilians and Portuguese, and a cold indifference of the former on seeing the departure of D. João VI who so greatly loved Brazil and was no party to the attack of the morning of the 21th of April.

At a later date, when the letters of D. Pedro to his father were printed, the author of the condemnable act denounced himself in one of them, saying, in allusion to

the conspirators of the independance of Brazil, that he had already given the revolutionists a sample in the Praça do Commercio.

But D. John VI, some days before his departure for Portugal, had, in the palace of S. Christovão, and at a confidential interview with his son, the Prince Royal, awakened a flame in his mind of dazzling and glorious ambition ; the king, seeing the independance of Brazil near and certain, said to his son : *Pedro, if that should occur, put the crown own thine own head, before some adventurer lays hold of it.*

In one of his letters in the published collection, D. Pedro writting to his father in 1822, and explaining his adhesion to the independance of Brazil, of which revolution he had made himself the chief, appeals to his memory, reminding him of the advice and even of the place and room where he received it.

During the whole of 1821, from the departure of D. João VI on the 26th of April, D. Pedro, Prince Regent of Brazil and Lieutenant of the king, was loyal to him, and acted like a Prince, heir presumptive to the crown, agreeing with his father in looking more carefully after the sovereign power, than of the liberal conquests of the revolution represented by the Portuguese constituent parliament, and as the future heir to the throne very much more ambitious of the sovereignty of the kingdoms and all the conquests and possessions of Portugal, than as a chief, king or Emperor af independent Brazil.

In the exercise of the Regency D. Pedro wrestled with the most serious embarassments ; he found the Treasury exhausted, and the Bank of Brazil in such a situation that it took the extreme measure of suspending its payments ; the expenses and onus, created by the system of patronage,

reached an enormous and ruinous amount. Against this evil he developed the resources of the most strict economy, beginning by his monthly allowance which he reduced to one thousand six hundred milreis, besides giving up the Royal palace in the city for offices for the ministers and various public departments which were at the time located in hired houses: he abated four hundred thousand milreis in the expenses of the household, and with other similar measures he improved as much as he could the state of Finances.

In relation to politics he behaved himself with ability and moderation, in the pledge of maintaining Brazil united to Portugal: he endeavoured, although vainly, to destroy the rivalry which already separated the Brazilians and Portuguese, and always, when he spoke to the people in proclamations and public documents, and particularly to those who surrounded him, he expressed himself with energy and firmness against the ideas of independence.

In proceeding thus D. Pedro could not deserve censure; he was son and loyal Regent to father and King; he was a Portuguese and looked after the interests of the mother country; he was in short heir presumptive to the throne, and naturally was desirous of reigning over all the Kingdoms and possessions of the monarchy.

But the force of circumstances, and the Prince's, own character, crushed all those feelings which bound the Regent of Brazil to the monarchical interests of Portugal.

Shortly after the departure of D. João VI and the Royal family, the bases of the Constitution arrived from Lisbon in order to be sworn allegiance to in Brazil; D. Pedro, however, waiting to hear of the effect of the arrival of the King in that capital, delayed to take the oath.

The Luzitanian troops of the so-called *auxiliary division*

of the garrison in Rio de Janeiro, at a new armed and seditious rising on the 5th June 1821, obliged D. Pedro to swear to, and cause allegiance to be sworn to the bases of the Constitution, to change the ministry, and going beyond that, they created a provisional Assembly of nine members, and a commission of military command, which if they had not dissolved soon afterwards, would have reduced the Regency of the Prince Royal to a complete nullity.

This military sedition left a lively resentment in the mind of D. Pedro, who from that day forward held it in great distrust and with a repugnance scarcely dissimulated.

The 5th June was a day of weakness in the political life of D. Pedro; he however could not oppose any force whatever to the Portuguese military sedition; neither did it meet the approval of the Brazilians, who considered it contrary to the liberal principles of the revolution of 1820, represented by the Parliament formed in Lisbon, and also opposed to the aspirations of independence; on the other hand the Prince was Regent, the regency commission transcendent and delicate, which the King his father had confided to him, and to renounce it in order not to yield to the demands of the military sedition, would have been to sacrifice to the most complete abandonment the policy, good or bad, which, by agreement with D. John VI, and morally responsible to him, he was obliged to maintain in Brazil.

The Portuguese Parliament unfortunately took upon itself to throw the Prince Royal, D. Pedro, into the arms of the Brazilians, and in the front of the revolution of independence.

D. Pedro had not, up to that time, any one to back him in

a decided manner in Brazil, except the absolutist party, weak in number, and composed nearly altogether of old Portuguese and some courtiers.

The Brazilians were divided; the democrats were opposed to D. Pedro, and wished to delay all ideas of independence, highly approving of the Portuguese Parliament by a love of free institutions; the liberal and moderate monarchists wanted the independence of Brazil, with D. Pedro as constitutional monarch; but as yet they held back discouraged, because this Prince was the supporter of the union of Brazil with Portugal.

D. Pedro was, as Regent, the representative in Brazil of two very unpopular principles—the royal element against the constituent democracy, and the political Portuguese interest against the independence of the American Kingdom.

If the Portuguese Parliament had limited itself to attacking and revoking the Regency of D. Pedro in Brazil, so that in this kingdom its democratic policy might retaliate victoriously and without opposition even of slowness, the Prince Regent of Brazil would not have found any support nor means of resisting.

But the Portuguese Parliament proceeded with the most happy and blessed for Brazil inconsiderateness in successive decrees; at the same time that it lowered itself and aimed at reducing the Regency of D. Pedro to a simple governorship, centralising in Lisbon all the political and administrative action of the Brazilian provinces, it blasted the kingdom of Brazil with the extinction of tribunals she already possessed, and degraded her in depriving her of indispensable institutions, which had been enjoyed for years, and in hot debates allowed the Brazilian deputies to be offended

and also Brazil, by reproaches and imprudent insinuations which could only provoke a reaction.

Proceeding in this manner, the Portuguese parliament caused a fraternisation in resistance by the two offended parties, the two victims, and to identify themselves in one sole and glorious cause, Brazil and D. Pedro her Prince Regent.

On the 10th December 1821 there arrived in Rio de Janeiro the Decrees Ns. 124 and 125, which the constituent Parliament cast so impolitically, over the Kingdom of Brazil; one abolished the most important Tribunals which had been created in it, the other ordered the withdrawal of of the Prince Regent, D. Pedro, who was to leave for Europe and there *complete his education*; travelling by way of England, France and Spain; and ordaining that Rio de Janeiro should be governed by a « Junta » to be elected within two months.

When these two Decrees became known, and a notice that the Prince was preparing to leave, it alarmed the patriots of Rio de Janeiro, where they already conspired in secret societies, and had in the periodical *Reverbero* (reflector) a prudent and cautious organ.

The ebullition was great; distinct patriots immediately left for Minas Geraes and S. Paulo, in order to promote representations to the Prince, begging him to remain in Brazil.

In December the party of independence, represented by some of its members, was listened to by the Prince D. Pedro, who knew of the political travels of the commissioned patriots, and did not offer any opposition, although he was very reserved, which agreed with his character and official position.

A tradition of that time manifests that D. Pedro was

perfectly informed of the pledge and of the labors of the patriots, and, without as yet conspring with them, he looked favorably upon the conspiracy.

The commissioner sent to the province of S. Paulo was Pedro Dias Paes Leme (afterwards Marquis of Quixeramobim) of a noble and wealthy family, with a rural disposition, but loyal, frank, ardent and magnanimous. Pedro Dias mounted his horse and set out; passing, however, by S. Christovão, left the road, dismounted at the Palace of Boa Vista, and being at once received by D. Pedro, who esteemed him, informed him where he was going and the business he went about.

The Prince, instead of replying to the confidence, spoke about hunting to one whom he knew to be a passionate hunter, spoke to him of other matters, and seeing that Paes Leme, with an able ignorance, delayed his visit to hear him, and only replied to him as an act of courtesy, he took him to a window in the Palace and fixed his eyes on the horizon, continuing to gaze at it as if reflecting.

The December sun was burning fiercely; Paes Leme waited with a dogged silence.

Suddenly D. Pedro exclaimed: — What a beautiful day for traveling !...

This was the answer.

Paes Leme kissed the hand of the Prince, and went out, hastening his departure for S. Paulo.

The result of those commissions and of the endeavors of the patriots of Rio de Janeiro, was the arrival of representations from S. Paulo, and a representative from the Rio people, which, on being taken to the Prince by the members of the respective chambers on the 9th of January, 1822, obtained from him in reply the solemn declaration, disobedient to the supreme government of Portugal, in fact revo-

lutionary, which history perpetuates in the following words; « As it is for the good of all and the general felicity of the nation, tell the people that — *I will remain*, »

That 9th of January, the « *I will remain* » of Brazil, was the breaking out of the revolution of independence, its chief being the Prince D. Pedro.

Impelled as much by his character as his nature he carried enthusiasm into the cause which he had just embraced.

Accustomed to be obeyed even in his caprices, strong, commanding and vehement, he showed a wonderful patience, stifling all the volcanic transports of his temper, humbling himself in loyalty to his father, and with the hopes of a reaction amongst the old monarchists in favor of all the decrees and the dominating power of the Portuguese parliament; but on the 9th of January the suffocated volcano burst out, and in D. Pedro there shone the glorious ambition of being the hero of the independence of a Nation and the founder of a new Empire.

Thrown in the front of the Brazilian revolution D. Pedro began by revolutionizing his own ideas.

He had been in Brazil in 1821 the representative of the royal or monarchical element against the democratic element of the Portuguese Parliament, and the strong guarantee of the union of Brazil with Portugal. In 1822 D. Pedro was the proclaimer, the enthusiastic official preacher and exalted champion of the constitutional liberty, and the most ardent and ostentatious defender and active chief of the revolutionary movement of independence.

The 9th of January events provoked on the 11th of the same month a third military sedition of the Portuguese troops in Rio de Janeiro; but already the Prince Regent

counted upon the warmest concurrence of the Brazilians and upon some of the regular force of the country, and the Luzitanian division, although well disciplined and valiant, did not dare to fight, but submitted itself and was ordered to retire to Praia Grande, being obliged to leave for Portugal on the 15th of February.

One month before, D. Pedro had nominated the illustrious and learned José Bonifacio de Andrada e Silva minister of the Kingdom and of Foreign Affairs.

José Bonifacio was the principal minister of the Independence and the director of events.

The young D. Pedro, Prince Regent of Brazil, in spite of the Parliament and the Government of Portugal, gave to the revolution of the Independence all the energy and impetuosity of his character.

On the 16th of February he promulgated the Decree, calling upon the chief legislators of the Provinces of Brazil to assemble in Rio de Janeiro.

On the 25th of the same month, he ordered by another Decree that no law whatsoever, promulgated by the Parliament of Lisbon, should be obeyed in Brazil without his — *Fulfil it*.

On the 5th of March there appeared off the bar of Rio de Janeiro and remained there a Portuguese squadron, and it was only five days afterwards that D. Pedro permitted it to enter the port, on the intimation that none were to disembark except those of the crews who desired to pass into the service of Brazil; and on the 23d of the same month the squadron sailed, leaving behind the frigate *Real Carolina*, whose crew embraced the cause of the Prince.

It was announced that disorders were imminent in Minas Geraes, whose provisional government, suspecting anti-liberal intentions in the Portuguese *Prince Royal*, denied

obedience to him. On the 25th of March, D. Pedro went to that province, and his presence excited unexcelled popular enthusiasm ; in the villages and towns which he traversed even on the high roads, his rapid journeys was always triumphal. Arrived at Villa Rica, the capital of the province, the people received him with ardor, and the provisional government applauded him : the concord was general, and he returned followed by acclamations, and covered with flowers and blessings. On the 15th of April he was received with explosions of patriotic rejoicings in the city of Rio de Janeiro.

Almost immediately there were published notices of hostile measures taken by the government of Portugal against Brazil. The reply was prompt : D. Pedro accepted the title of *Perpetual Emperor of Brazil*, which in the name of the people, the senate of the municipal chamber went to offer him on the 13th of May.

By a most energetic and transcendent act and decree of the 3d of June, D. Pedro convoked a constituent and legislative assembly.

In July he modified the ministry in a sense more decidedly pronounced by the revolution of the Independence.

On the 1st of August the Prince published the decree which declared as enemies, and as such they should be treated, all the troops which might be sent to Brazil, whether *from Portugal* or from any other nation, without his previous knowledge ; on the same day he directed a zealous proclamation to the Brazilians recommending union and courage in the name of and for the honor of their country.

On the 6th of August he spoke to the world in an eloquent manifest directed to governments and friendly nations, setting forth the march of events and the situation

in which Brazil found herself, declaring that the ports would continue open to the commerce of all nations, and offering to establish and cultivate diplomatic relations.

Immediately afterwards he began war in the name of Brazil, causing an expedition under the command of General Pedro Labatut to go to the aid of the patriots in Bahia against the Luzitanian troops of General Madeira.

Disharmony spread itself in S. Paulo : D. Pedro did not delay ; he went to that Province, leaving Rio de Janeiro on the 14th of August. Just as five months before in Minas Geraes, he took with him a sort of magic to S. Paulo, and there encountered nothing but enthusiasm and patriotism : intrigues were confounded, and the reconciliation was general. From the city of S. Paulo he went to Santos, followed by a rejoicing cortége, on the 7th of September when he was obliged to stop on the banks of the stream *Ypiranga* to read despatches arrived from Lisbon and official documents from his ministers in Rio de Janeiro : the face of the Prince became radiant, his eyes flashed, and suddenly taking off his hat and raising his arm, he shouted :

Independence or Death !...

It could be understood ; but no words could sufficiently express the commotion, the ardor and clamorous joy which were produced by that *shout from the Ypiranga*.

D. Pedro returned to S. Paulo and immediately left for Rio de Janeiro, and with such celerity that he left on the road the persons who formed his retinue, extennated by fatigue and with their horses completely done up.

Accomplishing the most rapid journey which had until then ever been made from S. Paulo to Rio de Janeiro, he arrived almost alone at that city, and on the night of the 15th of September, without allowing himself any rest, he appeared at S. John's theatre (afterwards called S. Pedro)

having on his left arm the distinctive in letters of gold :
Independence or Death !

It is not to be described, and can hardly be imagined, the triumph, and the joyful and holy patriotic delirium of that memorable night, on which the Prince received more than explosions of love, almost the idolatrous worship of the people.

On the 12th of October of the said year, 1822, D. Pedro was solemnly proclaimed in Rio de Janeiro *Constitutional Emperor and Perpetual Defender of Brazil*; and on the 1st of the following December the ceremony of his coronation was effected. On those two fortunate days, and on all those on which the Emperor showed himself, even if only for a moment, the popular enthusiasm in applauding him knew no bounds.

The whole of the year 1822 was one of most brilliant glory for D. Pedro; one does not contemplate without just admiration, a Prince, heir presumptive to the throne of vast dominions, and nursed in the bosom of absolute power, placing himself at the head of a nation, carrying it to the conquest of its political regeneration, founding an Empire, and Endowing it with a representative system and liberal institutions.

But the period of this triumphal glory unhappily lasted only a short time. The constituent Brazilian Assembly was installed on the 3rd of May 1823; the ministry of the Independence, or of the Andradas, was dismissed on the 17th of July, either by the intrigues of the old courtiers, Portuguese by birth, as some say, or possibly in accordance with a vote of that Assembly in exaggeration of the ante-Luzitanian policy; and, what was worse, by one of his first acts the new minister of War offended

the national susceptibility, by favoring the Portuguese element in the army.

Voices of opposition, or rather censorial speeches were heard in the Parliament; the complaint of a Brazilian, who had been thrashed by Portuguese officers, excited therein some very warm discussions, minds were irritated; and three days afterwards, on the 11th of November, the Emperor nominated a new ministry, and on the following day the Brazilian Parliament was dissolved, its palace being surrounded by a numerous military force; six Deputies were made prisoners and banished to Europe, all of them more or less friends of the Independence, and amongst them the three brothers Andrada.

Almost all the liberals of Brazil withdrew themselves from the Emperor D. Pedro I from the 12th November, 1823, and the Prince, proclaimer of the independence at the Ypiranga and founder of the Empire, lost on that day all his immense popularity.

D. Pedro I hastened to demonstrate that by dissolving the parliament he did not entertain the idea of governing with absolute power.

By a decree of the 13th of November he nominated the Council of State, to which he confided the task of organizing and correcting the project of the Constitution, which should be afterwards offered to the observations of the Municipal Chambers of the Empire.

The Council of State worked with ardor and wisdom; the project of the constitution, completed by the end of December, was remitted in January, 1824, to the Municipal Chambers, and at the request of several of them the oath of allegiance to the said Constitution was effected on the 25th of March following.

Although granted by the Emperor, the Constitution appeased the lively senses of the liberals of the southern provinces, and in the capital, D. Pedro I received the spontaneous acclamations of the people on the 25th of March; in some provinces of the North, however, the irritation was deeper, and there broke out in Pernambuco the revolt which was called the *Federation of the Equator*, and which was shortly and easily put down by the Imperial arms.

After the recent shake of the dissolution of the parliament, there was a fine opportunity for the magnificent manifestation of the Imperial graciousness by means of an amnesty; and it would have been of such considerable political effect, by the Emperor using that blessed prerogative obtained by the Constitution of the 25th of March, sworn allegiance to in that same year; the crown, however, was deficient in wise or loyal ministers. The rebels already conquered and made prisoners were judged by military commissions, and not a few of them died on the scaffold or were shot.

The liberals all over the Empire, sorrowful and suspicious, held themselves aloof, and thenceforward went on exaggerating antagonism which resulted in the dissolution of the parliament.

From 1825 to 1831 the reign of D. Pedro I was a constant struggle made harsher by the liberal spirit of the majority of the nation. In short from one part or another there began to be pronounced that worst of all political councils—Intransigency.

Besides all this, great and lamentable contrarieties were accumulated to compromise the Emperor D. Pedro I.

The first was the revolt of the Banda Oriental, followed

almost immediately by the war of Cisplatina, from 1825 to 1828.

The war was worse than unfortunate, being from the beginning very unpopular in Brazil; the liberal party made use of it as much as possible against D. Pedro I; but the Emperor, making war in the name of Brazil, was using his right and doing his duty; because the Banda Oriental was the Cisplatine Province of Brazil since 1821, and in fighting against the revolt which had there raised its head, the Emperor was only defending the integrity of the Empire, just at he was afterwards obliged to make war on the Argentine Confederation, who freely protected the rebellion and ostentatiously declared the Banda Oriental to be a Province belonging to it.

On the 27th of August, 1828, peace was signed, the Banda Oriental became independent, and this solution, which was by far the best, and also the most agreeable to the neighbouring Republic, still incurred grave but unjust censure.

In 1825 D. João VI, King of Portugal, recognised the Independence of Brazil, yielding to the influence of England; but the treaty and convention, which confirmed diplomatically the recognition of the Independence, was offensive to the Brazilians in some of its stipulations, which they considered unworthy of the Empire, attributing them to the filial condescension of D. Pedro I.

In May 1826 really began the constitutional representative system of Brazil, by the installation of the legislature of the legislative General Assembly; but still however in this important event the Emperor was accused of some illegalities in the choice of senators, in order to give a seat in the permanent Chamber to his most intimate friends. This Chamber in reality was almost wholly composed of

Ministers, councillors and high Dignataries of the Empire, and although highly capable and illustrious men, they fell under the suspicion of the liberals.

In compensation, the temporary Chamber counted amongst its members a numerous liberal phalanx, but hesitating, as if doubtful of its power, and fearing to cause its influence to be felt, in the first year it showed itself indifferent; but in the second year and thenceforward was energetic and warm in opposition; and in 1828 the first legislature came to an end announcing the most exalted political antagonism.

The political press of the period already in notable development, and the greater part of it conducted very roughly, approved of, and exaggerated the censures of the parliamentary opposition.

In a short time the liberal majority of the temporary Chamber and the Emperor had arrived at the extremity of regarding each other with hostile cautiousness; the liberals went so far as to consider those deputies of their number who accepted ministerial portfolios, as aliens to their party: the Emperor organised and modified his Ministries within the circle of his councillors; titled men, already condemned by the opposition; and only exceptionally made choice of some of the more moderate liberals, or of those not so strongly attached to any party.

The result of this was, that the liberals considered any Minister or friend of the Emperor as an absolutist, and D. Pedro looked upon the liberals as republicans.

The circumstances of the State were not favorable; the Finances were in a painful situation; the Treaty of 1825 with Portugal burdened the Empire with a debt of two millions of pounds sterling, the war in Cisplatina imposed great sacrifices, and the Ministers of the Exchequer,

nominated by the Emperor, did not prove themselves to be able financiers, neither did their colleagues distinguish themselves by a zealous economy ; the opposition exposed this great evil in Parliament, and outside it all the blame was thrown on the Emperor, otherwise irresponsible in face of the constitution.

In 1826 the death of D. João VI opened a new source of compromises, for D. Pedro I of Brazil, who as heir to the throne was acknowledged and proclaimed King of Portugal by the Regency.

It remained at that time a secret ; but it is a fact that D. Pedro did not at once repel the idea of uniting the two crowns on his own head ; as he listened to the opinions of his councillors of State as to the right and convenience or inconvenience of doing so.

The consultation resulted in his abdication of the crown of Portugal in favor of his daughter D. Maria da Gloria, a Brazilian Princess but born during the time in which Brazil was a Kingdom of the Portuguese Monarchy. In any case it is evident that D. Pedro accepted the crown of Portugal ; because he could not have abdicated without having accepted it.

The liberal press of Brazil censured D. Pedro I for this fact, calling to mind and often repeating words which he had uttered during the patriotic excitement of 1822 « *from Portugal nothing, we want nothing.* »

It is evident that this ardent and electrifying declaration of the Brazilian revolution of 1826, only served as a pretext for opposition ; because D. Pedro, abdicating the throne of Portugal, did it at least ostensibly, and it should only be, and could only be pleasing to the Brazilians to see a Princess, their compatriot and who was not heiress

presumptive to the throne of the Empire, raised to be Queen of Portugal.

But the unfortunate consequence, or rather the fact of grave and compromising political consequences to D. Pedro I, was that he, Emperor of Brazil, abdicating the crown of Portugal in favor of his daughter the Princess D. Maria da Gloria, thenceforward called D. Maria II, thus created in Europe, in the small but glorious kingdom of the Iberic peninsula, a dynastic interest, a pledge of political ambition and of fatherly love, which absorbed in too great a degree the cares of the Emperor of Brazil.

The dynastic question of the Portuguese Monarchy became complicated; the Prince D. Miguel caused himself to be proclaimed Absolute King of Portugal, and broke out into a furious anti-liberal reaction.

The Queen D. Maria II having been sent to Europe taking with her, as attendant and guardian, the Marquis of Barbacena, a senator of the Empire, had to return to Brazil, losing all hope of support from Austria and England. But there was a much more serious fact, the Portuguese liberals emigrating in considerable numbers, to escape torments and the gallows, conspired against D. Miguel in England, and the Brazilian Minister to the Court of London spent Brazilian money in protecting them, and was on the point of finding himself in diplomatic misunderstanding with the English Government.

And further, many Portuguese emigrants passed over to Rio de Janeiro; D. Pedro I had to listen to them, and shew himself grateful for their espousing his daughter's cause, and naturally to look favorably upon the Portuguese colony of the Capital of the Empire: as portuguese sympathies were necessary to him in favor of the Queen D. Maria II.

But the Independence of Brazil scarcely dated from 1822, international rivalries yet existed, D. Pedro I was a Portuguese by birth, and his enemies and friends alike laid hold of everything to fight against him; as there were already many, and principally the more advanced liberals who desired to dethrone him.

On the 16th of October, 1829, the Princess D. Amelia de Leuchtemberg arrived in Rio de Janeiro, the august bride of the Emperor, he having been a widower from the 11th of December, 1826. On the 17th of October the ceremonies of the nuptial blessing were celebrated, and the new Empress was the object of brilliant fêtes in the Capital of the Empire.

But the public rejoicings could not be everlasting, and the political situation of the Empire continued to be clouded more than ever.

The Emperor D. Pedro I opened in 1830 the first session of the second Legislature, and was forced to recognise that the liberal opposition of the temporary Chamber was more numerous and exalted than ever.

The accusation of two of his Ministers was proposed in the Chamber, and failed to be approved by a very few votes, thanks to some of the Deputies who were more moderate liberals; and even on this question D. Pedro allowed himself to be biased by his generous temper, taking to heart more ostensibly than was legal, the cause of his ministers.

The press had already denounced plans and attempts at proclamations of an absolute government, and the Chamber attacked them in ardent language.

In these attacks D. Pedro I, evidently under an illusion, was the victim of his worst friends. There was really at that time ministers more monarchical than the king,

pledged to realize such a compromising and innworthy idea ; D. Pedro I was, however, completely innocent of that criminal plot, and as soon as he knew of it, he destroyed it by condemning it ; although he had the weakness not to expel from his palace and his councils the false friends of the Throne.

The liberal party got up a strong agitation outside the Chamber, and in 1830 spread the idea in the public press of the *Federation of the Provinces*.

Federal societies became organized ; they preached the necessity of a reform of the constitution, and the news of the revolution which had knocked Charles X off the throne of France was rejoiced at as a happy event.

The dynastic question of Portugal, and the proceedings of the Brazilian Minister in London, gave rise to vehement censures in the press and in the Chambers.

A hidden conspiracy showed itself.

In this conjuncture the Minister, Marquis of Paranaguá (Francisco Villela Barbosa) proposed at a Ministerial Council, the dissolution of the Chamber, and was fully supported by his colleagues.

D. Pedro I, who heard in silence the proposition of one and the assent of the other ministers, at last exclaimed—
«And who will be answerable to me for the blood which will be shed ? I will not accept such a counsel ; I will not dissolve the chamber. «

In 1830 nobody knew of the minister's proposal nor of the Emperor's answer.

D. Pedro I, the constitutional irresponsible being, was responsible for all the blameable acts of his ministers.

During his reign from 1826 to 1831 his great and undeniable error was the reality of his personal government, owing principally to the anti-parliamentary organization

of the ministry ; but D. Pedro I understood literally the article in the Constitution which authorized him to nominate the ministers in a perfectly free manner.

He was not at that time the only one who misunderstood the essential precepts of the representative system as regarded the matter in this question.

It seemed to be imperfectly understood at that period what was really ministerial, that is, a uniform political thought amongst the members of the government. Noteworthy men of independent character, proud even and with liberal ideas, such as José Bernardino Baptista Pereira and Hollanda Cavalcanti, afterwards Viscount de Albuquerque, were, and remained in the ministry, finding themselves in complete opposition to the political ideas of the other ministers, their colleagues !....

But in 1830 the movement of the *federation of the provinces* and the popular excitement, produced a lively emotion in the spirit of D. Pedro I.

It appears that he then recognized, in spite of the constant assurances of his councillors that public opinion in Brazil had abandoned him, and judging that the people were deluded and drawn away by the intrigues of the liberals and by a revolutionary movement, he resolved to use all his lost popularity, and thus avoid an imminent political crisis, confiding in the influence of his presence, where the liberals counted upon greater support from the populace.

This purpose coincided with ideas and plans in contradiction to the Empire of which D. Pedro was the founder. The dynastic cause of the Queen D. Maria II, and, as thought by some persons, the dreams of an Iberic Empire which came to him from London, preoccupied the mind of the Emperor, who had already a male child and a Brazilian to whom he could leave the crown of Brazil.

Without the least doubt these ideas were agitating the mind of D. Pedro I when he determined to pay a visit to the province of Minas Geraes, well chosen by premeditated experience; because there existed in that province, more than in any other, sentiments of strong liberalism, and in 1822 ultra-liberal aspirations were agitated there; D. Pedro, then Prince Regent, found that the prestige of his presence was sufficient to light up the most lively enthusiasm amongst the inhabitants, and to do away with all opposition.

D. Pedro I left for the province of Minas Geraes in December, 1830, taking with him the recollection of his triumphs in 1822.

The journey only bitterly and sadly undeceived him. Except the official receptions and rejoicings he only encountered coldness in the cities and villages of that province, and simply curiosity without manifestations of love on the part of the people.

D. Pedro I did not know how to or could not stifle his resentment, and, entering into the city of Ouro Preto, he published the Proclamation of the 22d of February, 1831, which produced a disagreeable impression in the mind of the public, and still further when the opposition press of Minas and of Rio de Janeiro made the most vigorous commentaries upon it.

D. Pedro I returned from Minas Geraes profoundly disgusted.

On the road back to Rio de Janeiro, Manoel Antonio Galvão, who was going to take up the presidency of Minas Geraes, presented himself to kiss his hand.

D. Pedro I, who highly and justly esteemed that distinguished and honorable Brazilian, had a confidential conversation with him, and recommended him to exercise the greatest prudence in his presidential government of Minas,

secretly warning him that it was possible he might shortly have to abdicate the *Crown of the Empire*.

This fact, which is of transcendent importance in relating the history of the events of March and April, 1831, was years afterwards referred to, and confirmed by the councillor Manoel Antonio Galvão, a man of honour and of sound conscience, whose word was never doubted by anybody. The character of Galvão was of such high order that his testimony is sufficient to satisfy every scruple of the most cautious historian.

D. Pedro I arrived at the palace of S. Christovão on the 11th of March, and his solemn entry into the Capital of Rio de Janeiro was fixed for the 15th of the same month.

Excited by imprudent courtiers, many Portuguese immigrants, not a few adopted Brazilians, and with them a great number of Portuguese subjects employed in the commerce of Rio de Janeiro, prepared themselves to welcome the return of the Emperor to the capital, and consequently on the night of the 12th of March they began their manifestations of rejoicing with illuminations, fireworks and bonfires in the streets of Quitanda, Rosario and other commercial streets, almost entirely inhabited by Portuguese.

Groups of Brazilians showed themselves, looking on at these rejoicings; many unfortunate Portuguese ran up to them shouting «long live the Emperor!» and receiving in reply the shout of—«long live the Emperor whilst he remains constitutional!» they attacked the curious observers and put them to flight, throwing stones and bottles at them.

On the nights of the 13th and 14th the illuminations and bonfires were continued, and many grave conflicts

occurred between Brazilians and Portuguese, and on the night of the 14th the latter went to the scandalous and revolting extremity of parading the streets in numerous and armed groups, throwing stones at the houses of those Liberals who had not illuminated, and notably at that of the deputy Evaristo Ferreira da Veiga, editor of the periodical *Aurora Fluminense*.

Meanwhile the military only showed themselves on the last of these nights, when already the Portuguese rioting had offended the national pride in the highest degree, and caused the greatest possible harm to the Emperor, whom those foreigners applauded so loudly in the ardor of their frenzy.

D. Pedro I made his solemn entry into the capital on the 15th March, being enthusiastically received by the Portuguese, and received or looked upon by the Brazilians with coldness.

On the same day one senator and twenty-three liberal deputies, who were in Parliament, united and resolved to present to the Emperor a petition against the unpunished attempts of the Portuguese, and ask for the chastisement of the guilty insultors of the national pride on the nights of the 13th and 14th of March.

The petition was handed to the Prime Minister on the 17th of the same month.

The worst of all was that the opinion of the Brazilians was expressed more and more against the Emperor, they considering him the protector of the soaring Portuguese and unpunished criminals.

The situation was almost desperate. The revolting and mad intervention of the Portuguese in the political affairs of the country, and their brutal insults to the Brazilian nationality, gave extraordinary force to the Liberal opposi-

tion, with which every Brazilian sided, even those of them who were the most indifferent and Estranged from politics.

At last, on the 20th of March, D. Pedro I dismissed the Ministry, thus appeasing the most lively national resentment; but instead of calling to the government the most useful men of the Chamber, he named as Ministers, Liberals without influence, and some of whom were not even Deputies.

The new Ministry immediately took measures which decreased the audacity of the Portuguese; the moderate Liberals applauded it and counselled the people to be orderly and have confidence in the Government; exalted spirits however, who were already conspiring, continued to do so against the Emperor, thus exciting the revolution.

It is very true that on the following nights, many hundred of the populace, with recognised chiefs at their head, assembled in the Largo de Moura, and at other points in front of the barracks of the military, and that they conversed with the officers and soldiers, and there was neither police, nor any other government, measures, taken to dissolve such threatening assemblies!...

Who was to blame for such a negligence, which might resolve itself into treason?...

D. Pedro I knew all about it; how then could he tolerate these highly condemnable facts, and the revolution being got up in an ostentatious and free manner?.... Did he tolerate the action of the Ministry, desiring to abandon himself to the already precipitated march of events?...

On the 25th of March D. Pedro I presented himself in the church of S. Francisco de Paula to assist at the *Te-Deum* which the *Liberals* caused to be celebrated as a thanks-giv-

ing for the anniversary of the swearing to the Constitution.

His most intimate counsellors had tried to persuade him from this act, which they judged imprudent, fearing projects of assassination.

He despised their counsels and went; not one single voice saluted him on his arrival; at the end of the religious ceremony he went out between two close lives of the people; when he was about to mount his horse, an excited person shouted near him « long live the Emperor whilst he remains constitutional!.... » He replied quite calmly and without hesitation. « I was, I am, and always will be constitutional. »

He had already given the reins to his horse, when he heard another shout « long live D. Pedro II » he smiled, turned his head, and said in reply » he is to much of a child yet. »

Honoring the firmness and courage of the Emperor, many voices then applauded him.

The days dragged on laden with sinister apprehensions; events got worse; the government showed itself indifferent or fettered, and the attitude of the exalted liberals more threatening than ever.

On the afternoon or night of the 5th of April, D. Pedro I, forming the resolution that he ought to consider himself decided and energetic, changed the ministry, organising the new one with six titular senators, who had often before been ministers, but all most unpopular, and amongst them the Marquis of Paranaguá, who had figured so greatly in the dissolution of the parliament.

It was evidently a ministry of ante-liberal reaction, and purposely formed to crush, if it could, the revolution which was clearly ready to break out.

The news of the ministerial change, published on the

morning of the 6th of April, was like sounding an alarm; at noon there began to assemble in the Campo de Santa Anna (now Praça da Acclamação) groups of citizens who were excited by violent discourses of impassioned speakers; towards night the meeting was very numerous, and the people cried out with loud voices for the reinstallation of the ministry of the 20th of March, which had been dismissed.

And up to the evening of that day the new ministry had not taken any steps to prevent the revolution, which, in reality, was already being pronounced in the public square!...

In order that he might hear the demands of the people, the justices of peace, who had also met on the Campe of Santa Anna, set out for S. Christovão and presented themselves before the Emperor; who, after listening to them, replied by refusing to satisfy the popular exigency, and asserting that he was constitutional, that he went along with the constitution, and for this reason the free choice of ministers belonged to him.

In the meanwhile the popular masses went on growing larger and already conducted by some of the liberal deputies. At eight o'clock at night the commander-in-chief (Brigadier Francisco de Lima e Silva) left the barracks (in the said Praça da Acclamação) and went to give an account of the state of things to the Emperor, and of the rising of the people.

D. Pedro I did not tremble, but maintained a steady determination not to reinstate the ministry of the 20th of March.

All the ministers were in the palace of S. Christovão by the side of the Emperor, the situation could not be more delicate, still however the inaction was complete, and no

measures whatever were taken, which would indicate force and energy on the part of the government!.....

From ten o'clock at night onwards, the various military forces of the capital went marching on to the Campo and fraternising with the people, who by this time had more or less armed themselves.

In face of the intervention of the military element, the commander-in-chief despatched Major Miguel de Frias Vasconcellos to inform the Emperor of what was taking place, and to beg him to accede to the desires of the people.

Having received Major Frias, and hearing him to the end, the Emperor exclaimed, referring to the demand for the reinstalment of the Ministry of the 20th of March — « the same Ministry, not by any means!... that would be against my honor and contrary to the Constitution. I would sooner abdicate or die. »

It is said that, after reflecting awhile, he ordered Major Frias to wait, and set the intendant of Police, chief Judge Lopes Gama, to look for senator Vergueiro, and induce him to form a new Ministry, but that, unfortunately, that Liberal chief could not be found.

What is certain and positive is the fact that D. Pedro I, having absented himself for a few minutes, returned bringing in his hand an open sheet of paper, and gave it over to Major Frias, saying to him: — « here is my abdication. I hope they will be happy. I shall retire to Europe, and leave a country that I always loved and still love. »

At break of day D. Pedro I, ex-Emperor, with his august spouse, with the Queen D. Maria II, the Duke and Duchess of Loulé, and some servants, left the palaco of Boa Vista, and embarking in boats at the quay of S. Christovão withdrew himself on board of the English line-of-battle ship « *Warspite*. »

By a Decree dated the 6th of April D. Pedro named as guardian to his children who remained in Brazil the councillor José Bonifacio de Andrada e Silva, the venerable, wise and worthy Minister of the Independence.

From on board the *Warspite* he wrote letters taking leave of his friends ; and, being consoled by the knowledge that his august son D. Pedro II was received with the greatest enthusiasm by the people, and proclaimed Emperor of Brazil, he went with the Empress, at the end of three days, on board the English frigate *Volage* at the same time that the Queen D. Maria II and the Duke and Duchess of Loulé transferred themselves to the French frigate *Seine*.

On the 13th of April 1831 the two frigates sailed from the port of Rio de Janeiro, and D. Pedro left Brazil for ever.

The last phase of the reign of the Emperor D. Pedro I occupies in the History of Brazil the short period of four incomplete weeks, full however of grave events, of lamentable errors, and above all of the inaction and weakness without precedent on the part of the Government, which would have been excusable if it was possible to admit that the Emperor was ignorant of them, or had tolerated them through illusions of the irresistible strength of his power.

It is not easy to explain the vacillation and the political contradictions in the organization of the Ministries of the 20th of March and the 5th of April, and the surprising slowness of the latter in face of the revolution about to be proclaimed on the following day at the Campo de Santa Anna !...

D. Pedro I was deeply disgusted at the opposition he met with from the Liberal party of Brazil, and so much

the more as this party enjoyed the support of the majority of the Nation.

Preoccupation in the cause of his daughter, Queen D. Maria II, coincided with disgust, as well as the prospect of splendid glory of regeneration of the Portuguese Constitutional liberty.

There were not wanting incentives to call the Emperor of Brazil to Europe, as on the other hand he had a son, a Brazilian by birth, to leave on the Throne of the Empire.

The idea of abdicating the crown preoccupied D. Pedro I even before his arrival at the city of Rio de Janeiro, on the 11th of March, when he was returning from Minas Geraes.

From the 12th of March to the 6th of April, the hesitation of the Emperor may be comprehended by his struggling with two sentiments — love for his daughter and ambitions of glory in Europe—and his love for Brazil, whose independent Empire he had founded.

It was for this that on handing the document of abdication to Major Miguel de Frias, D. Pedro I melted into tears, owing to a generous commotion.

No one doubts that if the Emperor, on the 6th of April, had desired to resist the revolution, that he would have had on his side at least a part of the military ; and no one was found then or afterwards who could not testify to the courage and bravery of D. Pedro I. He, however, did not desire to appeal to the armed forces, nor would he consent that any appeal at all should be made to them, and his memory is not a little honored by having spared the blood which would have been shed in the capital of the Empire and the provinces.

The abdication of D. Pedro I on the 7th of April, 1831,

without being preceded by violent measures, and still less by the clash of arms and fighting, saved his dignity, and moreover saved the constitutional monarchy of the Empire.

There ends the life of D. Pedro I in Brazil. The history of Brazil is indebted to him for many brilliant pages registering heroic deeds and glorious service.

In front of an immortal cohort of brave men D. Pedro inscribed that Homeric episode of the disembarkation in the city of Oporto, of the wonderful defence of that place, and of the regeneration of Portugal, where he steadied the throne of his daughter, D. Maria II, by a monarchical-constitutional government, overcoming Herculean labors which exhausted his strength and carried him to the sepulchre when only thirty-six years of age.

D. Pedro I did not take any part in the affairs of Brazil from 1831 to 1834, when he died ; nor did he influence them, either directly or indirectly : when speaking of this country, he only made use of generous words, manifested sympathy, and prayed for its prosperity. The only thing which he did, relative to the Empire of Brazil, was the recognition, as Brazilian Princess, of his daughter born in Europe on the 1st of December 1831, and the fruit of his second marriage.

In Brazil, from 1832 to 1834, the name of D. Pedro I served as the banner hoisted by the party calling itself « Caramuru » or Restorer.

D. Pedro neither promoted nor gave any countenance to this party, who recalled him to Brazil, either as Emperor Restored or as Regent. The most that was said, with some appearance of truth, was that he replied to the proposals and urgings of the restoration Commissioners, in the following words :—« I will only return to Brazil

if a large majority of the Municipal Chambers of that Empire should ask me to do so by a Petition. »

D. Pedro I died in Lisbon on the 24th of September 1834; the city of Oporto, the scene of his greatest glory in Europe, holds his heart in its proud keeping, the most precious legacy of a hero. Two Nations, one an Empire and the other a Kingdom, keep his memory in the Pantheons of their National history.

There was raised in Brazil, in 1862, a majestic equestrian statue of D. Pedro I, in the « Praça da Constituição » in the Capital of the Empire; this monument owing its existence, not to the coffers of the public Treasury, but to the voluntary subscriptions of numerous citizens.

During his reign of nine years, incompletd, the first Emperor of Brazil was not fortunate; the dissolution of the Parliament in 1823, divorcing the Liberals from his cause, was an error with fatal consequences.

From the year 1824 and thereafter, D. Pedro I, who called himself constitutional, and boasted that he was so, did not always show that such was really the case: carried away, impelled by the consciousness of his good intentions, he often caused his individual power to be felt which flattering Ministers encouraged and did not know, how to dissimulate. The greatest misfortune of a reigning constitutional Prince, is in not having Ministers who know how to say—no—to him, when justice and right counsel such a proceeding. This infelicity persecuted the first Emperor of Brazil in a very marked manner.

Nearly half a century has passed since D. Pedro I disappeared from amongst men; and impartial history, which registers his errors, justly and rightly honoring his memory, present him to the eyes of posterity with such majestic splendor, as to call forth a strong admiration.

D. Pedro de Alcantara Bourbon was the chief of the revolution the proclaimer of the Independence and founder of the Empire of Brazil regenerator of the liberty of Portugal and of its Constitutional Monarchy he received on his august head two crowns, one as Emperor of Brazil the other as King of Portugal, and voluntarily abdicated both.

He flourished, predominating in influence, and commanded and reigned over two nations—Brazil and Portugal—and in both of them planted free institutions ; he was the architect of two political monuments, and a hero in two worlds.



XIII OF OCTOBER

JOÃO DE MELLO

João de Mello, a Jesuit, poet and a notably learned man, was born in Pernambuco in the year 1706.

The Jesuits recognizing his fine talent, drew the young man into the bosom of the company, and shortly had to thank themselves for so doing, seeing how all their hopes were realized.

Father João de Mello was an honor to the Company of Jesus through his vast knowledge, and by his services in preaching and in missions.

He wrote poetry in Portuguese and Latin, and his effusions were considered to be distinguished and of superior merit.

The Abbot Diogo Barboza, in his *Bibliotheca Lusitana*

and other criticisms, praises the poetry of Father João de Mello for its purity of language and fine taste.

Proper dates are wanting for the regular registration of his name, which is therefore inscribed under the date of the 13th of October.



XIV OF OCTOBER

JOAQUIM GOMES DE SOUZA

Joaquim Gomes de Souza, of an uncommon and admirable intelligence, which was extinguished at an early age, was the legitimate son of Major Ignacio José de Souza and D. Antonia de Brito Gomes de Souza, he was born on the 15th of February, 1829, in the Province of Maranhão, on the left bank of the winding river Itapicuru in the beautiful country residence belonging to his parents.

Very early, even in infancy, his forehead began to show the dawn of genius.

He was sent to Pernambuco in 1841, in company with his elder brother, who was there going through a law-course, but his brother dying, he suspended his studies and had to return to his parents.

He came to Rio de Janeiro in 1843, entered the 1st

battalion of Artillery as cadet, and matriculated in the Military Academy ; in the first year he passed a brilliant examination, and, in 1844, overcoming the paternal opposition, he matriculated himself in the School of Medicine, having in a short time studied all the necessary preparatories.

In 1847 he passed his examination of the third medical year, obtaining, as in the first two years, *optime cum laude* approval, and dared to request that he might be closely examined in every thing appertaining to the course of Engineering !....

The body of Professors of the military Academy, however, would not attend to the request of the *pretentious boy* ; but Gomes de Souza persisting, obtained as patrons, first the Senator Saturnino da Costa Pereira, afterwards the councillors and Senators, Candido Baptista and Bellegarde, three mathematicians of great worth, and who, after giving him a private interview, dismissed him with wonder at his talents.

Every obstacle was overcome, and after a lengthy examination one by one, of all the matter appertaining to the respective course, Gomes de Souza took the degree of Bachelor of arts, mathematics and physics, on the 10th of June 1848, that is, when he was only nineteen years of age ; and on the 14th of October expounded his Thesis, obtained the degree of Doctor, and shortly afterwards was the successful candidate for the post of Sub-Professor.

This prodigious intelligence monopolised everything !... mathematics, natural sciences, medicine, literature, poetry and the study of languages both living and dead.

Gomes de Souza published in 1847 in the *Guanabara* the fragments of a work on integral calculation which he was writing. A master came forward to battle with him,

Dr. Joaquim José de Oliveira, a Professor of the Academy, but in the contention the young man of twenty years gained the day.

In 1852 he was nominated a member of the directing committee for the construction and internal regimen of the House of Correction in the city of Rio de Janeiro, and rendered remarkable and appreciated services.

His weak constitution and excessive studies began to ruin his health.

In 1854 he departed for Europe, and there aided by or mistaken in the climate, he studied in France, England and Germany much harder if it were possible, than he had done in Rio de Janeiro.

He was in Germany when he found that he had been elected a Deputy of the General Assembly, to represent his Province, that of Maranhão.

From 1857 to 1860, Gomes de Souza, without ably distinguishing himself in politics, shone in the Parliamentary Tribune as a man of deep study and of superior intelligence.

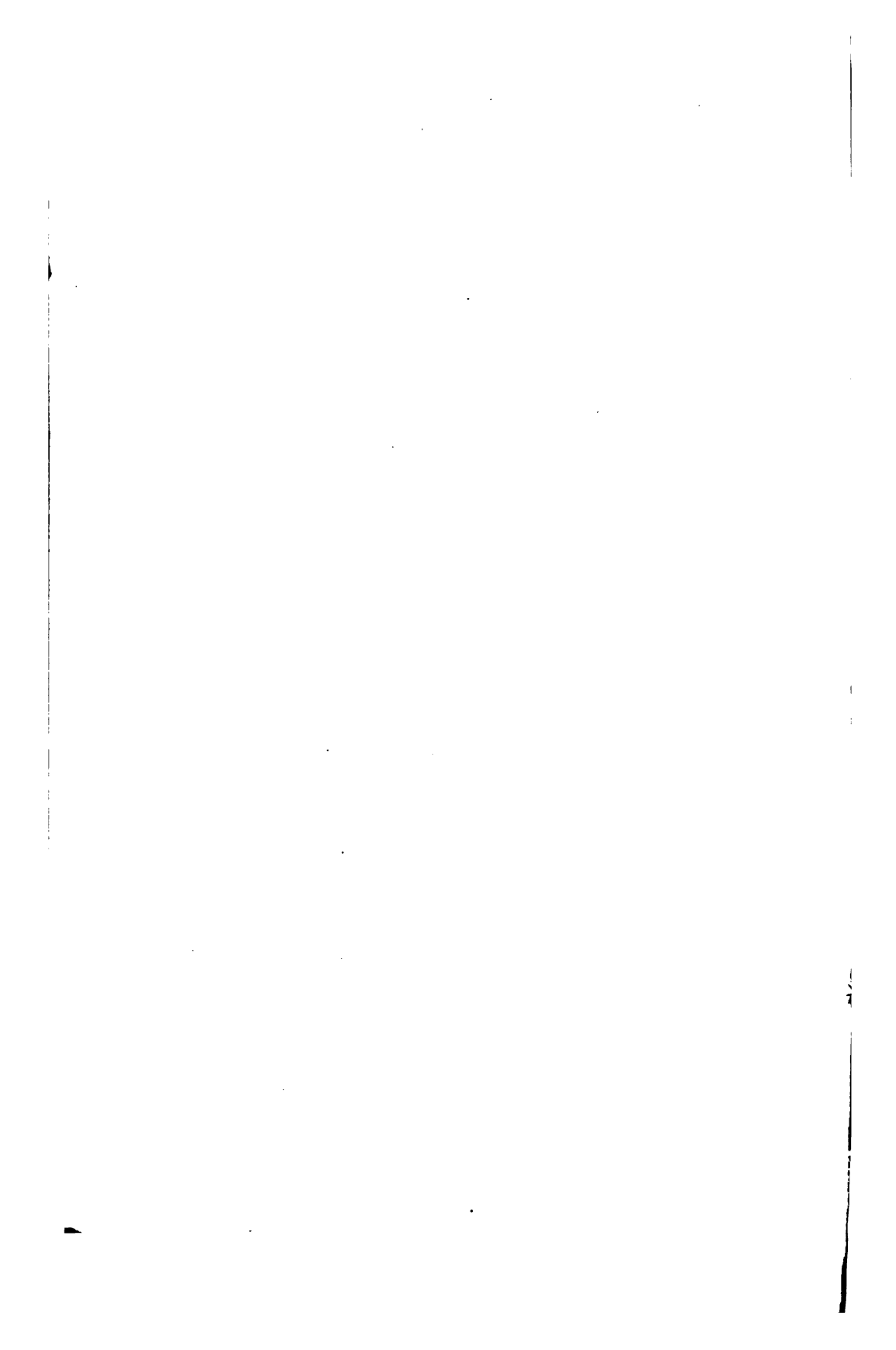
But his physical sufferings were getting worse. He returned to Europe, and came back from thence to foresee death approaching....

Having been re-elected Deputy in only two sessions of the new Legislature, he appeared in the Chamber, where he gave proofs of his wisdom in magisterial discourses.

In 1863 he again tried Europe for the benefit of his health, but his expectations were vain ones in that climate.

On the 1st of June 1863 he died at Southampton in England, in spite of all the care and endeavours of intimate friends and of the most illustrious doctors.

Dr. Joaquim Gomes de Souza was almost a suicide from his love and passion for science.



XV OF OCTOBER

MIGUEL DE FRIAS VASCONCELLOS

On the 15th of October, 1805, Miguel de Frias Vasconcellos was born in Rio de Janeiro; he followed a military career by the wish of his father, Lieutenant-colonel Joaquim de Frias e Vasconcellos.

At 5 years of age he entered the army, as a cadet in the 1st regiment of cavalry; years after, when he was an officer, he studied at the in the Military college, and there distinguished himself by his talents and application, obtaining after a few years the post of Professor and Examiner at the said Academy.

In 1828, by his incontestable merit, he had already obtained the rank of Brevet-major; and in 1831 was given the appointment of Quarter-master-General, when the criminal excesses of the month of March in that

year, and the popular excitement had caused the movements of the 6th of April to break out.

Major Frias was known to have a noble and fervent spirit of nationality, and also to be liberal in of his ideas: if the struggle had become a battle, there would have been no doubt which side he would have joined: D. Pedro I, however, showed himself to be great and generous in the hour of adversity; he did not wish Brazilian blood to be shed, and by abdicating saved Brazil and the Monarchy. The last words of the Emperor, who descended from a Throne, were received by Major Frias, to whom he said, on handing him the Decree of Abdication: «Here is my Abdication. I hope you will all be happy! I shall retire to Europe, and leave a country that I loved so much, and do still love. »

The first years of the monarchy of H. M. the Emperor D. Pedro II mark a sad epoch for Brazil; revolts succeeded one another, and the army being undisciplined became dangerous, and therefore was disbanded; the government struggled on without strength in the midst of factions, and only a miracle could have preserved the country which was gradually falling into anarchy.

It was in these troublous times that a grave error on the part of Miguel de Frias interrupted his splendid career, forced him into exile, thus becoming an alien, and his country losing his services. Having joined the party of opposition, which entitled itself exalted major Frias, who, with other officers, was a prisoner in one of the fortresses, took part in the plans for a revolution; but, being ignorant of the fact that it had collapsed, he revolted in the fortress, and, at the head of a few companions, disembarked in the city and marched to the Campo of Sant'Anna on the 3d of April, 1832. In vain, friends who met him warned

him that he would surely be a lost man, « It is too late, » he replied, « I have taken the first step. » The result of this struggle might have been foreseen. Legality easily triumphed, and major Frias had to emigrate.

Why should not history clear up a point generally unknown, and which so much redounded to the honor of him who practised it?....,

Major Luiz Alves de Lima (now Duke of Caxias) at the head of the body of permanent police (which consisted of scarcely two hundred rank and file) in a very few minutes put to flight the band of revolutionists of the 3d of April, who only fired one shot from a piece of artillery brought from the fortress.

Major Frias fled as fast as his horse could gallop, and the then major Luiz Alves de Lima followed him to do his duty by taking him prisoner; but in the race, making a movement with the reins, and bending forward to escape a pistol-shot which an ignorant and frantic partisan fired at him, his horse stumbled, and, thanks to this major Frias was enabled to distance him.

The then major, and now Duke of Caxias, going on again, heard the spontaneous information that the Chief of the revolt had sought refuge in a house in the street called « Sabão » situated in the « Cidade Nova, » or new part of the city, and immediately sought the house to use his right of search for the man who was legally pursued. The owner of the house, the respectable protector, at once gave entrance to the valiant major Luiz Alves de Lima, who advancing from the drawing-room along a corridor, saw a door locked but with the key in it; he turned the key, opened the door and looked in.....

Major Frias was standing up in the middle of the room which protected him...

Major Luiz Alves did not wish to see... generosity blinded him... he again shut the door and left the house.

Thus Major Miguel de Frias was enabled to escape being made a prisoner, and afterwards emigrated to the United States.

Who would not applaud the magnanimous action of one who risked so much by such a generous and sublime blindness immediately after the fight and easy victory?...

Brazil opened her arms and received therein Major Frias, who returned to his country after two years of exile; then there commenced, or shortly afterwards, a series of valuable services rendered by this distinguished Brazilian.

In 1842, the then Count and now Duke of Caxias, when he was about to leave for Rio Grande do Sul where the pacification of that important Province of the Empire awaited him, remembered his brother in arms. The distinguished General could not really forget the brave soldier who, in 1828, so boldly fought in the Capital against the revolted foreign troops.

Major Frias responded to the call of his country, and served with distinction in the battle-fields of the South until the year 1844; and when again the trumpets sounded, and Brazil had to revenge herself for the outrages and boldness of the Dictator of Buenos-Ayres, once more the brave Miguel de Frias hastened to join the National Standard, ready to give his life for the country of his birth.

Thus the brilliant military career of Miguel de Frias, which was interrupted in 1832, was again marked by valuable services rendered by him. His star, which at one time the tempest clouds had overshadowed, shone out again with renewed lustre in the Brazilian sky, and the brave

officer was duly rewarded by being promoted to the higher posts which were his by right.

But it was not only on the fields of honor and of battle that Miguel de Frias obtained well deserved praise; the Government of the State took constant advantage of his high intelligence and knowledge of engineering, as well as of his ability and active solicitude as administrator, confiding to him the important posts of Director of the Arsenal of War, also of Military Works, and Inspector-General of Public Works, whose functions he entered upon twice, and furthermore made him a member of the commission for the improvement of army materials, whose presidency he occupied when death cut the thread of his existence.

Miguel de Frias, besides his multifarious and thorny labors of administration, (which although unnoticed by the public are not therefore less interesting, and in many cases of high value), bequeathed, as an Engineer, to the capital of the Empire, works which recommended him to the consideration and the gratitude of the people; amongst them, one will speak for all, namely the conduit-works bringing the waters of Maracan into the city of Rio de Janeiro, thus specially saving the poor people from the calamity of thirst, with which they were afflicted in seasons of great dryness; and water thus being brought to everybody's door, made Rio de Janeiro one of the most remarkable cities of the world from this point of view.

The inhabitants could not close their eyes to such merit; the name of Miguel de Frias, which had once before been contemplated amongst the nine chosen from the people for the edility of the capital, was again pronounced on the eve of an election; and he, a constant and firm member of the Liberal party, found himself then, as well as his comrades, in the camp of the opposition; what did it mat-

ter! The electoral urns spoke, and by spontaneous and numerous votes this worthy Brazilian was elevated to the Presidency of the Chamber; it was thought that the electoral process had been vitiated, and the Government declared the election null and void but; again, what did it matter! The urns again spoke, and Miguel de Frias e Vasconcellos obtained even a greater number of votes than at first.

These victories cost him neither personal appeal, nor the laborious recommendation of friends; this candidature was the eloquent and decided manifestation of general sympathy; the people inscribed on their lists the name of Miguel de Frias by the impulse of their own hearts.

And even this was not enough; one does not only meet the name of Miguel de Frias e Vasconcellos in the camp as a soldier; but also in the Arsenal of War and in Public Works as an Administrator and Engineer; he had even time left to consecrate himself to the most philanthropic labors.

As a member and afterwards president of the Imperial Society of Lover of Instruction he dedicated himself to the care and assistance of orphan and unfortunate female children, contributing all in his power to facilitate their primary instruction and education, so that in due course these little innocents, marked by the stamp of misfortune, might become mothers of families who would be an honor to society.

Thanks partly to activity and the system of economy which he introduced, ably seconded by worthy comrades, the distinguished president of the Society Lover of Instruction so managed that this beautiful and noble institution accumulated a capital of 100:000\$, which gives ample security for the future of its schools, and at the head of the So-

ciety laid the foundation-stone on Neves' Hill, of a new establishment destined for the instruction and education of unfortunate orphans of both sexes ; and he would have done much more had he not arrived at the last hour of his life.

In the large heart of Brigadier Miguel de Frias e Vasconcellos abounded charity for his neighbours, as much much as was also notable his entire disinterestedness. One fact is sufficient to prove this: many capitalists and well-known citizens, desirous of making him a present as a recognition of the great work of canalizing the waters of Maracanã, opened, with this object, a subscription whose product summed up to seven thousand milreis. Miguel de Frias e Vasconcellos accepted the offer of the rich for the benefit of the poor, and that amount was carried to the coffers of the Society Lover of Instruction.

When he was already at the gates of the tomb, he invited with great persistence, a friend and relation of his, to obtain from a capitalist, in his name and for his account the sum of sixteen thousand milreis for the conclusion of the works of the aforesaid society, mortgaging, as guarantee, his personal property.

This great man, so well deserving of his country, died on the 25th of May, 1859.



XVI OF OCTOBER

FELISBERTO CALDEIRA BRANT PONTES

MARQUIS OF BARBACENA



On the 19th of September, 1772, was born in the village of S. Sebastião, near the city of Marianna, province of Minas Geraes, Felisberto Caldeira Brant, the legitimate son of Colonel Gregorio Caldeira Brant, and of D. Maria Francisca de Oliveira Horta ; on the mother's side he pertained to a distinguished and important Minas family, and on the father's to a family which originally came from Utrecht, in Holland, his great grand father, Ambrosio Caldeira Brant, having come to establish himself in Brazil in the year 1700.

He made his preparatory studies in Minas Geraes, and he came to Rio de Janeiro in 1786; and having with others of his colleagues to pass through a public examination in the presence of the Vice-roy, Luiz de Vasconcellos, he gave such proofs of his efficiency, that the Vice-roy had him invited to dine with him on that day as a mark of distinction. After enlisting as a cadet, he sailed for Lisbon in 1788, and under the and guidance and advice of his uncle Manoel José Pires da Silva Pontes, professor of the academy of Marine of that capital, and whose surname of *Pontes* he then took out of gratitude, he entered the college of the nobles, from which he joined the academy of Marine.

The minister Martinho de Mello, taking steps to reform the academy, ordered, as an incentive to the pupils, that the prize students should rise in rank, and the young Brazilian student Brant Pontes at the end of a five years course of study at the academy, and being nineteen years of age, had so often gained prizes that he was entitled to the rank of post captain; the government did not give it to him on account of their considering him too young, and at his request, they passed him over to the army, appointing him to the rank of Major of the staff, and Aide de Camp of D. Miguel de Mello, governor of Angola, where he was to serve for two years.

In Angola he at once distinguished himself, offering to go out, as he did go, with two vessels of war, which were there, to give chase to two French corsairs which threatened the neighbouring ports, and that of Benguela; the corsairs managed to escape, and did not again appear, and Brant Pontes the young officer who had sought and pursued them, had as a reward the insignia of the order of Christ given him.

The two years of residence having terminated, he left Angola, passed over to Bahia, where he stayed some months, and on his arrival at Lisbon, he obtained the appointment of Lientenant Colonel of the 1st regiment of the line in Bahia, and in that city married, on the 27th of June, 1801, D. Anna Constança Guilhermina de Castro Cardozo, the daughter of Antonio Cardozo dos Santos, one of the richest merchants of that City, and a very important proprietor in the Capitania. The considerable fortune of the father-in-law was at once placed at the disposal of the son in law.

Brant Pontes, learned and rich, without abandoning the military career, occupied himself with commerce and agriculture, he extended and raised the scale on which commercial affairs of his father-in-law were conducted, introduced agricultural improvements in the estates, sent for a steam engine to grind cane, which he put up in the Estate of his brother-in-law Colonel Antonio Cardozo, and at his own expense, opened forty-two leagues of road, from S. Jorge dos Ilhéos to the village of Conceição, employing on that work two hundred and forty slaves belonging to his Estates.

In 1805 the British squadron commanded by Admiral Popham arrived in Bahia, having Buenos Ayres for destination, and conveying ten thousand men onboard; the admiral required money for repairs and for supplies, and met with difficulties which Brant Pontes solved, by lending without interest, sixty six contos of réis in hard money, taking in payment Bills on the English Treasury, for which he received the thanks, and assurances of gratitude of the British Admiralty in the name of the government. In that same year, Prince Jeronymo Bonaparte had already touched at Bahia in a French squadron, and had been so

handsomely treated by Brant-Pontes, that among other gifts, he presented him with a sword.

The generosity and taste shown by him in receiving persons presented to him, and in his ways of living, so worthy of his fortune and social position, characterized Brant Pontes, and for which reason he died, far from that opulence which he might have left as an inheritance to his children.

But he did not attend exclusively to the interests of his house, and to the enjoyments and splendour of a rich man: he introduced into Brazil, at his own cost, *vaccination*, and caused to navigate along the *Reconovo* (circular bay) as far as the town, afterwards City of Cachoeira, on the 4th of October, 1819, the first vessel moved by steam which Bahia hailed, the expenses incurred by the navigation of the same being for account of Brant Pontes.

These services were antecedent to, and succeeded a voyage made with his family by the generous creditor of Popham, and splendid entertainer of Prince Jeronymo Bonaparte, who for those reasons had become an object of jealousy, and of ill natured observations of those who, in a higher official position in the Capitania, could not or ought not to do as much.

In 1807 Brant Pontes accompanied the Portuguese Royal family to Brazil; but he remained in Bahia where his property was situated.

In 1811 he was promoted the brevet rank of Brigadier, and Inspector General of the troops in Bahia: he disciplined the line and the militia corps, had military plans made of the Province, founded the «mont de Piété» for military officers, and contributed to the establishment of

the Discount Bank of Bahia, a Branch of the Bank of Brazil.

In 1817 it was chiefly Brant Pontes who, in time, succeeded in sparing Bahia the great trouble of the revolt which had broken out in Pernambuco, and which reckoned on the support of the Bahians.

The news of the Revolution in Portugal in 1820 had put Brazil into a state of exaltation, where the Lusitanian troops by an impulse of patriotism, and the Brazilians on account of their love of liberal ideas, adhered to that great movement. Pará declared herself in that sense on the 1st of January 1821. In Bahia, the declaration (*pronunciamento*) was made on the 10th of February.

Brant Pontes had refused to join the club which directed the revolution ; because every thing indicated that the revolution tended principally to restore to Lisbon, her ancient preponderance, to the abasement of Brazil.

On the 10th of February , a great concourse of people having assembled in the the palace square and at Fort S. Pedro, the quarters of the Artillery regiment, the Capitain General, Count de Palma, ordered Marshal Brant Pontes to go and examine the state of that regiment. The Marshal set off on horse back with two companies of infantry, and seeing already in the proximity to fort S. Pedro, a piece of artillery posted, and a detachment commanded by an officer, ordered his soldiers to halt, and he alone, merely followed by his groom, advanced immediately : however the officer gave the order to fire, and on the piece being discharged Brant Pontes received a bull in his sword, another went through his hat, his groom fell dead, and he escaped by being suddenly carried off by his horse which had been wounded and ran away with him.

The revolution met with no resistance : Count de Palma and the sundry chiefs, assembled in the house of the Chamber crowded with the mob : Marshal Brant Pontes showed himself there, and there he remained in spite of invectives and of voices which demanded his retirement.

The act of declaration (pronunciamento) was drawn up according to the instructions received from Lisbon, and commencing to be read, Brant Pontes, hearing that it ensured obedience to the constitution that the « cortes » in Lisbon should make, he asked leave to speak, and said, that since the yoke of absolutism was being broken, what suited Brazil more was to declare herself independent, and make her own Constitution.

This idea was reproved in the midst of fresh invectives and threats directed against the proposer.

The reading of the act continuing, and it being declared in the same that Brazil accepted her *subjection* to Portugal, Brant Pontes exclaimed—*subjection* ? at least substitute for that word—*adhesion* : say — give her *adhesion*.

The word was substituted:

These facts are more minutely remembered here, because on the 10th of February, 1821, Marshal Brant Pontes showed the haughtiest and most indomitable courage, and signalized his far-seeing patriotism, and, as it were, divination of the politics of the Portuguese Parliament in reference to Brazil.

Receiving notices and information that they intended to assassinate him, Brant Pontes came to Rio de Janeiro in an English Frigate, presented himself to them, and by their leave, went on to England, and there he remained residing in London.

In 1820 he greatly exulted on receiving the news of the event of the 9th of January, when the Prince Regent diso-

beying the Decrees of the Cortes, and of the King, declared that he would *remain in Brazil*, and of the following and successive acts, precursors of the proclamation of the independence. Brant Pontes at once commenced a correspondence with the minister José Bonifacio, offering his person and property for the service of the country. He engaged naval officers and seamen, whose passage to Brazil he paid out of his own purse, encouraged merchants to send out war-stores, which his country wanted, and even was received, although in his private character, by the Minister Canning, whom he tried to move to aid the Brazilian Government.

In 1823, elected deputy to the Brazilian Parliament, by his Province, he returned to his country, taking his seat on the 11th of October, in that assembly, which was dissolved one month afterwards.

The importance and reputation of Brant Pontes were already such, that when barely present four weeks in Parliament he was elected as one of the special committee to report on the subject, the discussion of which served as a motive for the sad ill advised dissolution.

Invited immediately after that fatal political occurrence to enter the ministry in charge of the war and marine departments, Brant Pontes prudently excused himself; in the following year, however, he left this for Bahia with the purpose of conciliating mens minds, which were full of resentment at the dissolution of the assembly and to make them accept the constitution offered by the Emperor.

In 1824. Brant Pontes, already graced with the title of Viscount of Barbacena, conferred on him by the Emperor, who two years afterwards raised him to the marquisate of that title, set out for London, intrusted with the negotiating a loan, and to treat of the definitive recognition

of the Independence of Brazil. He effected the loan on advantageous conditions for his Country; in his other endeavour, however, he and his Colleague Viscount do Itabayana, who were the Brazilian Plenipotenciaries, did not come to an agreement with the Portuguese Plenipotenciary, and the English Government, actuated by their interests dispatched Sir Charles Stuart to Lisbon, where that *diplomat*, after a conference with the government of D. João VI, went on to Rio de Janeiro, to obtain by his councils and British influence the treaty of the recognition of the independence, which treaty was so little agreeable to the brazilians.

The Marquis de Barbacena returned to the capital of the Empire, found his name shortly afterwards remembered in lists for senators offered by three Provinces, Bahia, Minas Geraes and Alagoas. The Emperor chose him for this last Province, on the 19th of April 1826, and he was therefore a member of the senate in the primitive organization of that chamber, for life.

The Cisplatine war was raging since 1825.

The Argentine Confederation frankly ambitious of annexing the Banda Oriental entered on a desperate struggle both on land and by sea, with Brazil. Errors, military intrigues, abuses and misfortunes rendered nugatory the bravery of the Brazilian troops, D. Pedro I went to Rio Grande do Sul; but almost immediately on his arrival there, he had to return on the mournful announcement of the death the Empress, leaving nominated as General in Chief, the Marquis de Barbacena, who accompanied him.

The state of the army was deplorable: the soldiers wanted every thing, and every thing was wanting for the development of a plan of the campaign.

The Marquis of Barbacena assumed the command in Chief

in January, 1827 : being both active and energetic he found resources ; he, he caused the respective left wing which was at 80 leagues distance from the centre, to make a junction with the army, he sought the enemy, and with anotherwise inferior force gave battle at Iturango on the 20th of February.

The study and criticising of that battle is out of place here; after eleven hours of firing, feeling the want of water, the soldiers tormented by the excessive heat, and smoke arising from the firing of the surrounding plains, to which the enemy had recourse, and, finally, doubtful of the result of the action, the Marquis de Barbacena ordered a retreat to Caciquay a strategic point, half a league distant.

The retreat was effected in regular order, at an ordinary pace and without the slightest disorder among the battalions ; the enemy did not even move to avail themselves of it as they would if they had been the conquerors, pursuing conquered men, and not a single occasion nor on any single day did they seek to trouble the Brazilian army and muchless meet it. And it is necessary not to forget, that the Marquis de Barbacena had given battle with *six thousand and six hundred men against Ten thousand one hundred and forty*.

This is the most famous victory of *Ituzaingo* the greatest martial glory about which the Argentines are so puffed up with pride.

The Marquis de Barbacena suffered grave censure for the order which he had given for the army to retreat, and it appears to be shown that, if the battle had lasted but a short time longer, the victory of the Brazilian arms would have been incontestible and decisive ; but there was no General, officer or soldier, who did not bear testimony

to the courage and serenity with which the Marquis had commanded and directed the action, always exposed to the fire of the enemy and showing himself imperturbable from beginning to end.

Dismissed from the command of the army, the Marquis de Barbacena did not withal lose the high confidence of D. Pedro I; for in the same year, 1827, he departed for Europe entrusted with two important commissions of a reserved character, having to seek in the principal courts of the old world a princess, as a consort for the Emperor and to examine the political affairs of Portugal, and the sentiments and dispositions of the cabinets of the great powers relative to those affairs.

The Marquis de Barbacena, on his return from Europe at the beginning of 1828, gave an account of his commission: if the fulfillment of the first fully satisfied D. Pedro I, the second increased his apprehensions; the cause of the queen, D. Maria II, for whom the Emperor his father had abdicated the crown of Portugal, was in danger; for the Prince D. Miguel, breaking the engagements which he had undertaken in Vienna, in Austria, was making himself strong with the absolute party, and evidently was about to hoist the banner of his own dynasty.

By the order of D. Pedro I the Marquis returned to Europe accompanying, as her guardian, the young Queen D. Maria II, who was to be confided to the care of her maternal grandfather, the Emperor of Austria, and he also received instructions and powers to celebrate the ceremony of betrothment with the Princess D. Amelia de Leuchtenberg, the future and second Empress of Brazil.

On the 5th of July, 1828, the queen D. Maria II, accompanied by the Marquis de Barbacena, left Rio de Janeiro.

Arriving at Gibraltar and communicating with the land,

the Marquis learnt that D. Miguel was already acclaimed in Portugal absolute King, and receiving confidential information from Viscount de Itabayana, the Brazilian minister in London, that the so-called *holy alliance* protected the consolidation of the absolute government of D. Miguel, he took upon himself the great responsibility of not going on to Vienna, of which the Court had rendered itself open to suspicion, and carried the Queen to London, informing D. Pedro I of his motives for so proceeding, and asking of him fresh orders.

The young Queen received from the English government a reception worthy of them, and sympathetic and generous demonstrations from the people: but in a short time the ministry of the Duke of Wellington and Lord Aberdeen desirous of being agreeable to the King of France, and to Prince Metternich, pressed the Marquis to convey to Vienna D. Maria II. Metternich in vain used all his efforts in that endeavour; Barbacena, however, resisted every attempt, and answered the cabinet of S. James that he would quit England, should he receive positive orders to do so. In so answering, he was sure that the English government would not dare to set at defiance the public opinion, pronounced against D. Miguel, and in favor of the Queen.

The orders of D. Pedro I finally arrived: he determined that his daughter, the Queen D. Maria II, should return to Rio de Janeiro in company with the second Empress of Brazil.

On the 16th of October 1829, the August Empress, and the Queen arrived at the court of the Empire, and with them the Marquis of Barbacena, who accompanied them.

Learned, and knowing thoroughly the parliamentary theories and practices of the English government, and apprehensive of the political errors and direction of the

government of Brazil, the Marquis de Barbacena, availing himself of the influence which his great recent services gave him with the Emperor, made observations, and gave advice which was attended to. In December 1829, he charged himself with organizing a ministry, and took in it the Finance department, and although he chose, or subjected himself to accept as colleagues some statesmen who were looked on with repugnance by the liberals, he acted so as to gain the support of moderate members of that party. He managed that D. Pedro I should agree to the departure for Europe of two of his servants and courtiers, suspected and accused of undue and powerful intervention in the political affairs of the state : he dismissed unpopular presidents of provinces, and functionaries ; he ordered the dissolution of the Society of *the columns of the throne* in Pernambuco, and its branches in Ceará, denounced by the press as *absolutist* conspirators, ordering their members to be prosecuted ; he reduced the land and sea forces in accordance with the decreed laws, and recommended justice, moderation and tolerance to all delegates of executive power.

He wished to govern *à l'anglaise* : to govern with the responsibility of his acts, and free from the personal power of the Emperor.

The new Chamber of the second legislature being opened, the Marquis of Barbacena was received with sympathy by the moderate liberals.

D. Pedro I did not know how to avail himself of the hopeful situation which was making its appearance on the political horizon of the Empire. Either owing to an inexplicable suspicion, or to Palace intrigues, or whatever else it might be, suddenly and unexpectedly, on the 5th of October, the *Gazeta Official* published the De-

cree which dismissed the Minister of Finance, the Marquis of Barbacena, and worse than that, contrary to the style at that time in use, the Decree aggravated the act of dismissal, giving to it a foundation which was not honorable to the Minister: that is, the necessity of liquidating the Portuguese debt contracted by the treaty of the 29th of August, 1825, it being necessary for that purpose, first, to examine the cash account in London, investigating the *great-expenditures* incurred by the Marquis of Barbacena both with Her Most Faithful Majesty, with the Portuguese emigrés in England, and especially with the marriage of the Emperor, which could not be legally verified while the Marquis exercised the functions of Minister of Finance.

The Marquis of Barbacena did not submit in silence; he addressed to the minister who countersigned the decree of his dismissal, a long official letter, which he immediately afterwards published in a pamphlet, in which he defended himself vigorously, combating the assertions contained in the decree. But he did not stop there; he scattered in his official document allusions to the personal government of the Emperor, which he had opposed, and to the influence of a secret clique.

That official document produced a deep impression on the public mind. It was hurtful to the Emperor, and in the session of 1830 the liberal opposition of the Chamber took it up as a theme for its aggressions on the new ministry.

The Marquis of Barbacena took no part in the events of March and April, 1831, which preceded the abdication; but the publication of that official letter certainly co-operated, indirectly, towards increasing the displeasure of the people and to excite the flame of the opposition.

From 1831 to 1835 he remained at his post in the senate, often speaking and always showing himself to be a constitutional monarchist, and remarkable for his knowledge of political economy, and of financial administration.

Having occasion to go to England in 1836, the Regent Feijó appointed him Minister Plenipotentiary, to treat of the interpretation of the Treaty of Commerce, which was then about to cease with Great Britain. He obtained nothing; because the English ministry only thought of negotiating a new treaty.

Nevertheless, he forwarded to the Government of the Regent, two important proposals, one from English Bankers to found a Bank in Brazil that would withdraw from circulation the Government paper money, and another from an English Company to construct a railroad from Rio de Janeiro to Minas Geraes.

From that same year, 1836, the health of the Marquis of Barbacena became altered. On his return to Rio de Janeiro, he continued, notwithstanding his ailments, to attend the Senate and to take part in the debates until his strength quite abandoned him.

He died on the 13th of June, 1841.

The Marquis of Barbacena was one of the most advanced in mind of his time, and as liberal as a whig Lord.

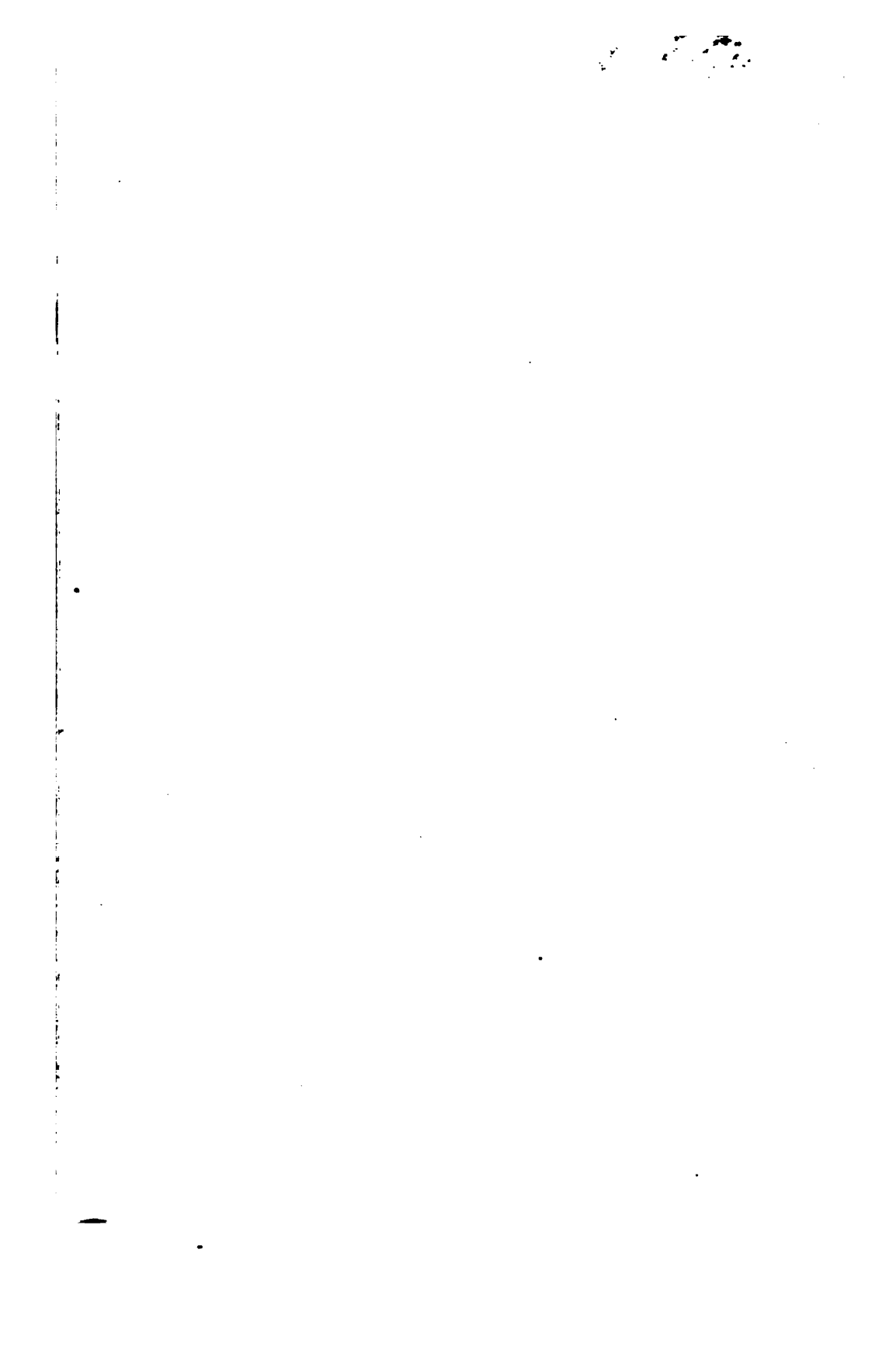
He was enthusiastically fond of the governmental practices and of the customs of the English.

In the Brazilian Senate he enjoyed the reputation of being an eloquent and substantial orator. He used, when he spoke, to begin in a minor key and monotonous tone; but little by little it became manly, grave, and imposing, and his words flowed with facility and precision from his lips. Having a large fortune at his command, he was even in his time the man who lived with the greatest pomp; he adorned

his social position and his high diplomatic commissions by the most sumptuous and resplendant way of living. He had both the gift and the taste for personal show on a grand scale.

It was said that whenever the Marquis of Barbacena entered the Senate, he attracted all eyes and produced an impression.





XVII OF OCTOBER

THEOPHILO BENEDICTO OTTONI

In the city of Serro, then town of Principe, province of Minas Geraes, Theophilo Benedicto Ottoni, the legitimate son of Jorge Benedicto Ottoni, and of D. Rosalia Benedicta Ottoni was born on the 27th of November, 1807.

In his native town he studied Latin and some other preparatories which were there taught; showing great taste for learning and notable intelligence. At 15 years of age, inspired by liberal ideas, and by the cause of the Independence of Brazil, he composed sundry patriotic pieces of poetry, which revealed a poetic talent, which other wise, he did not afterwards cultivate although it might have been so fertile and precious.

In 1826, Theophilo Ottoni came to the capital of the

Empire, matriculated in the Academy of Marine, and such was the result of his first examination that the Chief of a Squadron, José de Souza Corrêa, who presided at the act, said aloud at the end of the proof: « Students like this one do honor to the professors and to the academy itself. »

Continuing his academic course, Theophilo Ottoni was always a distinguished student; at the same time he explained the mathematics in his humble home, obtaining from that labor some pecuniary resources.

But the young student had entered at once on militant politics with all the ardor of his character, which was as exalted as it was generous. He frequented assiduously the *conversações* of Evaristo Ferreira da Veiga, to whom he for some time gave lessons in geometry. He wrote in the *Astréa* under the «nom de plume» of «o joven pernambucano,» and was the correspondent for the *Astro de Minas* of S. João d'El-Rei, and for the *Echo do Serro*, in violent opposition to the government and maintaining very extreme liberal ideas.

His writings were already then appreciated, although his course of the humanities was still incomplete. Theophilo Ottoni studied hard, and besides being a notable Latin scholar, his deep knowledge of the Latin language availed him greatly in the management of the Portuguese.

The student did not conceal either his political opinions or his joint editorship in the liberal press; people were only ignorant of his being a conspirator, and the ardent youth was one already, being member and secretary of the secret *Club dos Amigos Unidos*, who labored in the sense of the revolution of 1831 which was cut short by the abdication of D. Pedro I.

In 1831, however, Theophilo Ottoni was no longer in Rio de Janeiro.

In the general election of 1828 the people by acclamation made him examiner of the electoral board of his parish, and had carried him in triumph to the chair. The « pronunciamento » of the midshipman became public.

In 1829, the Marquis de Paranaguá, the Minister of Marine, ordered him to embark for the Alta Amazonas and for Africa, and Theophilo Ottoni, in order to escape from it, having in vain petitioned to keep his post and continue to study in the Military Academy, preferred receiving his discharge as a midshipman, being under the supposition that embarkation was a disguised punishment for his intervention in politics in a manner so opposed to the government.

Theophilo Ottoni retired from the capital, carrying with him a small printing apparatus, and having arrived at Villa do Pincipe, established a commercial house and published the periodical *Sentinella do Serro*, which he carried on for some years.

In the *Sentinella do Serro* he manifested republican aspirations, and opposed the government *a l'outrance*, till the abdication of D. Pedro I.

The news of the tumults which took place in Rio de Janeiro, in March 1831, having arrived at the Serro,—tumults already known in history by the name of *garrafadas de Março* (bottle throwing of March) Theophilo Ottoni was one of the first to provoke a « pronunciamento » in a liberal sense, which might have been the commencement of revolutionary resistance in the province of Minas, if the abdication had not changed the aspect of the political situation.

After the 7th of April, the *Sentinella do Serro* slightly modified its programme : Theophilo Ottoni intimately allied with Evaristo, and other chiefs of the moderate liberal

party, and deploring the anarchical excesses of the exalted parties in the Capital and provinces, gave his support to the Chiefs and opposed the latter party, but always kept to himself his advanced democratic ideas.

In 1832, apprehensive of the opposition of the senate to the reforms of the Constitution, he founded a political society, excited his associates' minds to undertake those reforms, and, from a distance, co-operated not a little towards the *coup d'état* of the 30th July, which fortunately did not succeed.

In 1834 the additional act to the constitution of the Empire, without satisfying fully, contented the democrat of the *Sentinella do Serro*.

In 1835 the Province of Minas-Geraes elected Theophilo Ottoni a member of its Provincial Assembly, and applauded him on seeing him, side by side with the great statesman Bernardo Pereira de Vasconcellos, rendering important services to administrative system, to civilization, and to material progress.

In the fourth legislature he was elected deputy to the General Assembly : but at that time the close union of the liberals of the moderate party was already broken, and Bernardo de Vasconcellos was already minister, and chief of the conservative party which he had raised up and magisterially disciplined in opposition to the government of the Regent Feijó,

Theophilo Ottoni took in the chamber, from the first day, his post of liberal democrat, and assiduously spoke, as a decided and vehement oppositionist.

He fought untiringly, boldly, severely, intractably, against the conservative situation, from 1838 till 1840, when he saw it fall crushed by the triumph of the majority of the Emperor.

In this battling constantly for three years of legislative sessions, Theophilo Ottoni sowed the seed in the capital of the Empire of the reputation and the confidence, which later on rendered him the most influential, and the greatest exciter of enthusiasm, of all popular tribunes, and liberal chiefs.

In 1841 he ardently opposed the reform of the code of criminal process, and the creation of the new council of state which was promulgated in that same year, and in 1842, the chamber which was about to be installed was dissolved, the liberal party in S. Paulo and Minas Geraes rising up in arms against those laws. Theophilo Ottoni who was then in the capital, left his wife, the sweets of his domestic life, and hastily set off for Minas Geraes, where he placed himself at the head of the revolted party, sharing in all their dangers : learning, however, that the revolt of S. Paulo had been smothered, he proposed the disbanding of the revolutionary forces of Minas, and that the principal chiefs should go and present themselves to the authorities ; this patriotic advice not having been at once adopted, the combat of Santa Luzia, and the rout and retreat of those forces shortly afterwards followed, Theophilo Ottoni and other chiefs of note remained in the hamlet for the purpose of delivering themselves up to General, Baron, now Duke, of Caxias.

A prisoner, and taken to Ouro Preto, Theophilo Ottoni (as likewise his companions in misfortune) saw his life more than once threatened by murderous wretches, who fortunately could not effect their brutal vengeance.

The Jury of Ouro Preto acquitted Theophilo Ottoni, and some of the revolted chiefs who were prisoners, and the amnesty granted by the Emperor in 1844 threw the veil of

oblivion over the revolt of 1842 in benefit of all the others who were compromised, and in that of the State.

The Chamber being dissolved in 1844, and the politics of the Government being changed, Theophilo Ottoni was elected Deputy for Minas Geraes in the legislatures of 1845 and 1848, and kept silent until his party went out of power on the 29th of September of that last year; and then it was he who first ascended the rostrum to deliver an energetic opposition speech.

In 1850 he would not take a seat as deputy substitute for Minas Geraes, ignoring the liberty of the vote of his Province in the elections of 1849.

From that time he was for ten years withdrawn from political strife, and directed the concerns of an important commercial house which he had established, after 1845, in Rio de Janeiro, among the commercial classes of which city he enjoyed merited and great credit.

Realizing an old and much thought of undertaking he founded the *Mucury* Company, which offered so great a future benefit to the north of Minas, and in that unfortunate undertaking, he lost all his fortune, sacrificed his house of business, ruined his health and contracted the disease which carried him to the grave.

And even in *Mucury*, it was patriotism that inspired and impelled the illustrious son of Minas.

In 1859 the Province of Minas Geraes included his name in a triple list for a senator, and in two others in 1860 and 1861, always placing his name at the head: in 1862 the Province of Matto Grosso also presented his name in a triple list.

Theophilo Ottoni had returned to the arena of politics with his wonted ardor: in 1861 he was the leader of the liberal party, of the district of the capital, in the elections

for electors, which was vigorously disputed; in all the town parishes he was the acclaimed chief, the causer of enthusiasm in the people, and at the same time he was a powerful element of order.

In spite of official influence the conservative party was routed in all those parishes.

The influential tribune and liberal chief was elected deputy, in that year, by the district of the capital, and for one of the districts of Minas, and took, in the chamber, his distinguished place among the opposition.

In 1862 he rendered a notable service on the occasion of the insults, called *reprisals*, that the importunate and frenetic Mr. Christie, minister of England in Rio de Janeiro had ordered, causing a threatening demonstration to be made by the justly irritated people: availing himself of his popularity Theophilo Ottoni prevented all imprudent acts, hindered violence and excesses, and greatly co-operated in strengthening the government, by this energetic and patriotic, but at the same time generous, dignified, and magnanimous attitude of the people of the capital.

In 1863 the chamber was dissolved; the internal policy had entered on new phases: the alliance of an enlightened phalanx of the old conservative party, with the liberals, forming the union and the situation called progressionist. Theophilo Ottoni was one of the members of the direction of that union, and in that same year it triumphed, almost unanimously, in the electoral struggle, and he being elected deputy, was entered also in the triple list for senator for the Province of Minas Geraes, and in January 1864, chosen by the Emperor, he took his seat in the senate.

In 1865 the progressionist union was much weakened by the parliamentary defeat of the Furtado cabinet. In the following year it became entirely broken, and Theo-

philo Ottoni with Souza Franco and other notable chiefs, headed the historical liberal opposition until the 16th July, 1868, when the Government, passing into the hands of the conservatives, the progressionists and historicals in opposition forgot their distinguishing denominations (but which were used from mere caprice) and joined together under the grand banner of the liberal party.

Already suffering severely from heart disease, which he for some years past in vain endeavored to ignore, Theophilo Ottoni, even in 1869 despite the advice of the faculty and that of his friends, mounted, more than once, the rostrum and with that boldness natural to him attacked in opposition, the cabinet of the 16th July. Almost at the end of the session, he made his last speech, a long, deeply meditated, and if not his most brilliant and his best, at least one of the best and fullest of matter, as it was the most logical and luminous of his speeches.

It was the last. The legislative chambers being closed, the firm and immovable democrat fell prostrate on his bed, and on the 17th October died in the city of Rio de Janeiro.

Theophilo Ottoni never appeared or showed himself in the government. He certainly aspired to it nobly and patriotically when the Paraguayan war broke out: that ambition under such circumstances honored him the more.

His influence, his prestige, and his greatness derived their strength from the press and from parliament.

In the press it has already been told how he declared himself, became great and influential. In parliament, in the chamber of deputies and in the senate he was powerful as a speaker. As an orator some gifts were wanting to him: he could not equal in depth of knowledge Paula e Souza, Vasconcellos, Alves Branco, Souza Franco and

others ; his gestures, and certain movements of the body rendered him ungraceful ; but in compensation he was impetuous, inspired, radiantly talented, courageous, incapable of giving ground, proud to the highest degree, haughtily dominating the most violent parliamentary storms ; a volcano casting sarcasms on burning lava, he was as the genius of the storm who knew how to unloose, and how to restrain it by the strength of his will and the power of his popularity.

He could not, nor ever could he be Cicero ; but he was Gracchus from the influence he exercised over the people. Up to the last day of his most laborious, shining, and honored life, Theophilo Ottoni was always an intrepid champion of liberal ideas ; he nourished republican aspirations, but he knew how to keep them in subjection to the programme of the liberal party to which he belonged, and of which he was one of the chiefs who enjoyed the greatest prestige without ever vacillating in his loyalty and his constancy.

Ardent and strong in political debate, at times an exalted tribune, honest and virtuous to the extent of disarming calumny itself, he was, principally in the last ten years of his life, the most popular man in Brazil.

Rich in good qualities, with a candid mind and excellent heart, he was esteemed by all, and among his very political adversaries he left numerous and intimate friends.

The death of Theophilo Ottoni was mourned throughout the whole of Brazil, and his funeral was spontaneously attended by some thousands of citizens.

XVIII OF OCTOBER

JOÃO ALVARES CARNEIRO



This name pertains to a sacerdote of medicine.

The legitimate son of André Carneiro and of D. Anna Lyonisia de Santa Roza, João Alvares Carneiro was born on the 18th of October, 1776, in the city of Rio de Janeiro.

He lost his parents when still in his first infancy; but a good and compassionate lady, Anna Thomazia de Jesus, took the little orphan in, brought him up and had him educated.

João Alvares Carneiro was therefore a *child* brought up on *charity*, and throughout his whole life showed himself most notably worthy of that *mother* which Jesus Christ sanctified.

Alvares Carneiro studied in the city of his birth, besides

his first letters, and some, very few subjects of secondary instruction, and immediately afterwards in the Santa Casa Hospital, where the study of medicine was at that time very rudely and incompletely taught : that is, general anatomy, pathology, and therapeutics, without any scientific basis, and little more if more and that badly, the rudiments were taught in Rio de Janeiro in the last century. Having obtained his diploma of surgeon of *proto medicato* with praise from, and the esteem of his masters for his intelligence and application, the youthful Alvares Carneiro remained in the service of the Hospital as *House surgeon*, and commenced removing from his eyes the bandage which hid science from his view.

The man of medicine revealed himself.

Being intelligent, and both reading and comprehending with admirable intuition, and a reflective mind as many medical works as could be found at that time in Rio de Janeiro; a fine and persistent observer, gifted with a piercing sight of untiring attention, and with so much judgment, that it might be called *medical instinct*, João Alvares Carneiro studied much more in that immense book called *hospital*, and in a few years became the most able practitioner of the city.

It was said that he *saw with his fingers*.

That he *divined*.

And to complete all João Alvares Carneiro exercised the sacerdotal functions conjoinedly with his art, for he was on earth, the representative of the angel of charity. In his practice he received from the rich what they chose to give him, and divided with the poor sick people a great part of his gains. There were times in the beginning of his practice, when he asked for his monthly honorarium to be paid him in advance, as house surgeon

of the Misericordia Hospital, to be able to employ the whole of it in succouring a family that was in misery.

After some years, being desirous of going to Portugal in order to obtain in the focus of scientific light a deeper knowledge of medicine; he embarked in an evil hour, inasmuch as when the vessel in which he went was near Portugal, she was taken prisoner as an enemy's ship by a French brig of war; but two days afterwards an Algerine corsair got possession of the French brig, and João Alvares Carneiro, underwent the sad reverses of being a prisoner of the French, and of suffering the terrible apprehensions of becoming a slave of the barbarous infidels of Algiers.

The Algerine chief was generous and permitted himself to be moved by the tears of the Portuguese, he at length ceded to their importunity, and put them on shore at Mattozinhos, whence Alvares Carneiro easily passed on to Oporto.

Having arrived there Alvares Carneiro experienced great difficulty in living as an almost foreigner, when the Surgeon Caetano da Fonseca, a native of Rio de Janeiro like himself, the friend of his infancy, who was at that time established in Oporto, met him, and opened to him his arms, his heart, and his purse. Thanks to his friend, Alvares Carneiro, after a stay of three months in Oporto, went on to Lisbon, where he remained more than a year, studying with ardor until the 7th of December, 1796, he took out his diploma of surgeon, and obtained the most honorable notes in his examination, and finally embarked as surgeon on board a merchant vessel which was bound for Asia, touching at Rio de Janeiro. He arrived at this city on the 12th of June, 1797; he continued his voyage shortly afterwards, and during almost a year, he visited

many ports and cities of Asia always observant, and studying, he afterwards returned to Lisbon and finally left that capital and returned to the city in which he was born.

In the city of Rio de Janeiro, he immediately returned to his post in the hospital of the Santa Casa da Misericórdia, and recommenced his famous and blessed practice.

The whole life of Alvares Carneiro went on evenly, was splendid and as it were evangelical, even as it showed itself to be in its commencement.

A most able medical man, almost inspired, above all he seemed to be infallible in his dyagnostics and prognostics of diseases which were said to be chirurgical, and the people even imagined that there was divination in the opinions of their dear João Alvares.

In the execution of the sacerdotal office to which charity raised him in his most extensive practice among the poor, the illustrious Doctor's heart expanded in the highest degree and led him to make the most generous sacrifices.

They called him the father of the poor.

And the modesty, the saintly evangelical dissimulation, the sublime ignorance of the left hand as to the alms that the right hand scattered profusely, heightened the merit and the virtues of that man so justly glorified.

The fame of his unlimited, exemplary, and ever exhaustless charity, burst forth from a thousand roofs that sheltered the families of the poor.

His friends often praised him for so blessed a virtue, and he used to smile, and cast a doubt upon that which every one knew to be a fact, and always answered them by repeating an old proverb.

—«São mais vozes do que nozes» (There is more talk, than there are nuts). And he so often repeated this, that both

rich and poor, hearing speak of his daily, or almost daily alms remarked:

— « They are João Alvares'nuts? »

Besides the houses of the poor, gratuitously attended by him, and to which he was a contributor for the expenses of the treatment of their sick inmates, and for succour to their families, he had a very numerous clientele among the wealthy houses, and João Alvares Carneiro, who might have accumulated a very large fortune, left, at his death, a barely moderate amount.

But he, the medical man who had earned so much gold from the rich, that they would give him, had adopted and educated orphan girls, and had portioned them on their marriage, had lived the life of holy beneficence: what fortune then could he leave?

He left a name sanctified by the people.

João Alvares Carneiro died on the 18th of November, 1857.

The announcement of his death affected the whole city of Rio de Janeiro, as a public and general calamity.

On the following day, the body of the illustrious deceased was conveyed from his house, on the Gambôa beach, to the church of S. Bento which was hung with crape.

More than two hundred carriages represented the *rich* cortege, and a numerous concourse of the people on foot, following the hearse, formed the attendance of the poor.

On the coffin being lowered into the grave eloquent orations were delivered by Drs. De Simoni, (secretary of the Imperial academy of medicine), Jobin, subsequently senator of the Empire, Felix Martins Pereira da Silva, Octaviano Roza (father of Councillor and Senator Octaviano) and Paula Menezes.

And more eloquent still were the tears shed round the

grave; where weeping like children for the death of a father, were rich and powerful men, poor workmen, and a great number of unfortunate people who had just lost their protector and defender.

The bones of João Alvares Carneiro are deposited in a marble sepulchre ordered by his widow to be prepared in the cloister of S. Bento, and the Imperial Academy of Medicine placed, and still preserve, in their sessions hall, the bust of that man who had such a right to be called illustrious.



XIX OF OCTOBER

LOURENÇO DA SILVA ARAUJO E AMAZONAS



A native of the province of Bahia, where he was born on the 9th of August 1803, Lourenço da Silva Araujo e Amazonas, after having completed his primary studies, and those of the humanities in that province, came to Rio de Janeiro, in which city he arrived on the 10th of October 1815, and went through, with distinction, the course of study followed in the Academy of Marine.

An intelligent and brave Officer of the national navy, he served in the River Plate war, and in his naval career reached the grade of Post-Captain, and was considered worthy of being decorated with the insignias of the orders of S. Bento de Aviz, and the Rose.

He was also a commander of the order of Christ of Portugal.

Besides his good professional services, he rendered others not less important.


In the execution of commissions in the Province of Pará, the Post Captain Lourenço da Silva remained for a long time in the Amazonas, and made very interesting studies on that majestic river, and on its principal tributaries, the deeming the district of Rio Negro, now the Province of Amazonas, worthy of his special interest.

Literature the and history of his country gained as the fruit of his works and his toil, his examinations and his lucubrations, *Limá*, and historical romance of Alto Amazonas, in which is principally to be appreciated some information on the customs of that region and the *Diccionario topographico, historico, e descriptivo da Comarca do Alto Amazonas*, a work in one volume 16mo. but most rich, precious, and indispensable, as a book to be consulted by whomsoever may wish to study the history and the chorography of the Province of Amazonas.

This book rendered Lourenço da Silva still more known and appreciated than before and the Brazilian Historical and Geographical Institute reckoned the illustrious citizen among its corresponding members.

Lourenço da Silva further published in sundry numbers of the *Jornal do Commercio* in the year 1854 his *Memoria sobre uma marinhagem de guerra para guarnição da armada imperial*; but no edition seems to have been printed as a book.

Ten years afterwards, in 1864, the Post Captain Lourenço da Silva Araujo e Amazonas died at the age of sixty-one years.



XX OF OCTOBER

JOSÉ DE SOUZA AZEVEDO PIZARRO E ARAUJO

José de Souza Azevedo Pizarro e Araujo was born in Rio de Janeiro on the 12th of October, 1753 ; he was the legitimate son of Colonel Luiz Manoel de Azevedo Carneiro da Cunha and D. Maria Josepha Pizarro e Araujo.

Showing from his earliest years a remarkable talent, after his first studies, followed by the study of humanities, he was sent to Coimbra in 1769. In the University he took the degree of Bachelor of Divinity in 1776, and when he was preparing to return to his country he received the news of the death of his parents ; wounded in spirit by such a cruel stroke, and disgusted with the world, he abandoned all ideas of civil life and dedicating himself to the altar and the service of God, he took sacred orders and returned to Brazil in 1781 to occupy the position of Canon in the Ca-

thedral of Rio de Janeiro, to which he was appointed by Royal Letter of 20th October, 1780.

Arrived in his native city, Canon Pizarro occupied himself solely with his religious duties, working in the « Arcadia » or Scientific Academy of Rio de Janeiro, of which he became a member. But to the able Viceroy Luiz de Vasconcellos, there succeeded the shadowy visionary and oppressor, Count Regende, who broke up the Academy and caused its members to be prosecuted, some of whom were imprisoned and others subjected to petty persecutions, most indecorous. Pizarro was amongst the latter, and being authorized by the Bishop to visit the parishes and churches of the Diocese, he fled from the senseless oppressions of the Count Regende, and employed several years in traveling in the interior, visiting the bishopric and collecting curious documents, information, and a rich store of facts for history.

In 1821 he returned to Portugal, and obtained, in Lisbon, from the Prince Regent the appointment of Canon to the Patriarchal Church.

In 1807 he accompanied the Royal Family and the Portuguese Court in their emigration to Brazil ; and in the following year, when there was created in Rio de Janeiro by Royal letters patent, on the 22d of April, the Superior Tribunal of Royal Justice and Board of Conscience and Orders, he was nominated Attorney-General of the three Military Orders, an appointment which he threw up soon afterwards, on receiving that of Chief Treasurer and Arch Priest of the Royal Chapel ; and afterwards obtained the title of Counsellor and his seat as deputy in the Board of Conscience and Orders.

In 1820 he began to show the fruits of his long visit to the bishopric, of his subsequent researches, and persever-

ing studies, by publishing the « *Historical Memoirs of the Captainship of Rio de Janeiro, and of the other Captainships of Brazil,* » in nine volumes, the printing of which terminated in 1822.

Although he wished to remain entirely ignorant of the political events which agitated Brazil from the year 1821, Monsenhor Pizarro could not remain indifferent to the cause of the Independence of his country, therefore he applauded it; in 1823 he was elected deputy for Rio de Janeiro in the Brazilian Parliament, and for some time he presided in that Assembly. In the first Legislature of 1826 to 1829, being deputy for the same province, he still occupied the Presidency of that Chamber.

In 1828 he obtained the sinecure rank of councillor of the Supreme Tribunal of Justice and was dispensed from service in the Royal Chapel.

He was weary, old and ill, desiring repose; and on the 14th of May, 1830, whilst walking in Botanical Garden of Rio de Janeiro, he fell down in a fit of apoplexy and then found his eternal rest.

Monsenhor Pizarro, a man full of wisdom and virtue, left a name venerated by his contemporaries; but speaks to posterity by the valuable work which cost him the labor of more than twenty years.

The *Historical Memoirs* of Monsenhor Pizarro, in nine octave volumes, not entirely exempt from errors, flattering in the appreciation of high functionaries by exaggerated indulgence, not sparing praises, of even Count Rezende, not using a happy method of explaining matters, and still less attractive in style, enclose in their pages, with all these defects, immense treasures, an incalculable capital of information and documents, and extraordinary wealth of truthful accounts of places in cities and parishes, and of

chapels, many of which do not now exist. Of political and natural events, customs of the people and vulgar prejudices ; and of the moral and material progress of at least a part of Brazil.

These *Memoirs* present a heap of precious things, although badly put together ; they are the richest archives of the history of the country ; an extraordinary and admirable monument, very insignificant in the face of the laws of architecture, but very majestic in its proportions and for the treasures of which it is the guardian.



XXI OF OCTOBER

JOSÉ JOAQUIM DE ANDRADE NEVES

BARON OF TRIUMPHO

In the town, afterwards city of Rio Pardo, province of S. Pedro do Rio Grande do Sul, was born on the 22d of January, 1807, José Joaquim de Andrade Neves.

His father, Major José Joaquim de Figueiredo Neves, presented him as a volunteer to serve in the army, making him enlist as 1st cadet in the 5th regiment of cavalry of the line on the 22d of November, 1826; but on the 10th of December of the following year, he gave a substitute for his son, and freed him from military service, on account of wanting his assistance to enable him to maintain his family, whose fortune was very small.

In 1835 on the revolution of the 20th September breaking out, the young man, Andrade Neves, took up arms on the side of legality, and from 1836 to 1844 he always fought, and from that first year stamped his reputation for bravery and military capacity.

Up to 1840 not less than fourteen more notable combats, and among them those of the island of *Fanfa* and of *Rio Pardo*, raised the fame of the indomitable valor of Andrade Neves.

The Decree of the 25th of January, 1840, conferred on him the post of honorary Major of the Army.

In the sanguinary engagement of Taquary he received two serious bullet wounds.

General Manoel Jorge in his official report to the minister of war, wrote: « Lieutenant-Colonel José Joaquim de Andrade Neves, commander of the light squadron of National Guards, is worthy of praise, and of such reward as the Government of H. M. the Emperor may think just, for after he could no longer manœuvre his corps, he joined the light infantry, when he received two wounds, and moreover would not retire until the combat was ended. »

By Decree of the 7th of September, 1841, he was appointed honorary Lieutenant-Colonel of the army.

In 1844, he further signalized himself in the combats of *Passo do Rozario*, of *Ponche Verde*, and of *D. Marcos*.

In 1845 the pacification of the Province, and the balsam of amnesty, cured the wounds of nine years of fratricidal war.

All the Rio Grande subjects embraced each other under the shadow of the constitutional throne of D. Pedro II.

In 1851 Andrade Neves served in the campaign against the Dictator D. João Manoel Rosas.

In 1857 he rendered important services, by organizing together with the national guards under his command, a brigade for the army, which in Rio Grande do Sul was potsed at Ibicuhy in observation on suspicion of eventual hostilities on the part of Paraguay.

In 1864, by order of the President of the Province, he formed, with the national guards under his superior command, a Brigade composed of the provisional 5th and 6th corps, of four hundred and three men each, he enlisted among them his two sons, joined the Brazilian army in which he became incorporated, and which was to enter the Oriental State, and there he did not distinguish himself, because the cavalry took, no part in the attack on Paysandú, the only warlike event which occurred.

Then the colossal war of Paraguay broke out.

The very learned Councillor, Francisc Ignacio Marcondes Homem de Mello, writing the eloquent and complete biography of the Brazilian hero Andrade Neves, says, justly and luminously appreciating him, what follows:

« In the development of the military campaign of Paraguay, three distinct periods stand out.

« The commencement of the struggle characterizes itself by the impetuous and audacious aggression of the enemy:

« On the part of the Brazilians the resolute and persevering organization of the military element, and of the force of resistance to oppose to the Paraguayan armies, is in operation.

« That period is represented by the Command of General Osorio, and terminates on the 24 th of May.

« The infantry arm predominates therein; and our superiority in it, notwithstanding the indomitable bravery of Lopess soldiers, is beyond question.

« The enemy, beaten, is reduced to the defensive, concentrating his force within fortified lines.

« The second period begins, in which the artillery arm predominate's. In it the reverse of Curupaity took place, after which the Brazilian elements reunited themselves

and were considerably augmented, in order to undertake afresh, active operations in the invaded territory.

« So commences the third period in July, 1867, in which the movement of the allied forces on the enemy's left flank was realized.

« The Cavalry's turn comes.

« This phase of the war is brilliantly represented by the feats of arms of the Baron of Triunpho. »

And so indeed it was.

From June, 1867, till nearly the end of December, 1869, the Rio Grande cavalry, which the famous partisan, Garibaldi, who had the opportunity of closely appreciating it, declared to be the best in the world, and the daring and irresistible Andrade Neves, one of its principal chiefs and of all of them the most indomitable, flaming and glorious, gaining victory after victory, they annihilated one of the great elements of power of the Dictator Lopes, and reduced him by closely encircling him to the sole recourse of entrenching himself; the terrible Rio Grande cavalier daring to carry his lance up to the gate of Humaitá.

The history of the feats of Andrade Neves from June, 1867, is the epopee of a hero. It is absolutely necessary to epitomize it here; but the epitome makes it paltry and obscure.

On the 16th of July, 1867, in the battle of *Tuiucué*, the divisions of José Luiz Menna Barreto and of Andrade Neves took the intrenchment of *Punta Carapé* and pursued the routed Paraguayans as far as Humaitá.

On the 13th of August Andrade Neves, at the head of the Brazilian cavalry, completely routed seven hundred Paraguayan horsemen at *Arroyo Hondo*.

On the 19th and the 20th of September he made the reconnoissance of *Potrello Obella* and of *Tayi*, and took

the town of Pilar, having for that purpose swam across the small river Nembucú.

The General in Chief, the present Duke of Caxias, wrote in reference to this feat of arms:

« In the attack on the town of Pilar, Andrade Neves showed that he also could behave as a general, for he succeeded in taking the enemy's artillery, and making prisoners of almost the whole garrison of the town with little loss on our side, in defiance of a superior force to that which he took with him, and rendering nugatory the reinforcements that were promptly sent by Lopes from Humaitá. »

On the 3d of October, six regiments of Paraguayan cavalry attacked the position of S. Solano, when a Brazilian division, commanded by Colonel Fernandez Lima was retiring from thence. Andrade Neves flew to their aid; he immediately got to command the road which leads from Humaitá to S. Solano, and put the Paraguayan forces to the rout who were going towards that post.

The Brigadier José Luiz Menna Barreto, likewise took part in the action, and the enemy, totally routed, left five hundred dead on the field, and two hundred prisoners.

On the 21st of the same month Andrade Neves and the Brigadier Victorino attacked four regiments of Paraguayan cavalry, and crushed them, making them lose eight hundred men. Andrade Neves, with his division of one thousand seven hundred men, pursued the fugitive remainder of the enemy up to the gates of Humaitá.

From that day forwards, no sign of the enemy's cavalry was seen again in the field.

Andrade Neves' name caused terror among the Paraguayans, who called the division under his command, *caballeria loca de cuenta* (raving-mad cavalry).

It was because the illustrious Rio Grande Chief, at the head of his daring Rio Grande horsemen, used to dash forward, lance in hand, across swampy ground, and overcoming extraordinary obstacles presented by the nature of ground, upon the enemy's hosts, who never could withstand his charges.

The annihilation of the Paraguayan cavalry was chiefly owing to Andrade Neves.

And very opportunely did there arrive, a short time afterwards, in the Brazilian camp, the Decree of the 19th of October, 1867, which conferred on him the Title of the Baron of *Triumpho*, to which was subsequently added the honors of grandeeship.

It having been resolved, at the beginning of February 1868, that the squadron should force the passage of Humaitá, the Baron of Triumpho had orders to reconnoitre the positions of the enemy on the right flank of that fortress, and verified the existence of the redoubt called the *Estabelecimento*, between Humaitá and Laureles, and being judged of importance the general in chief ordered that it should be taken by assault, simultaneously with the forcing of the passage of Humaitá by the Squadron.

The Baron of Triumpho, in command of the column of the vanguard, had the honor to direct the attack and assault of the redoubt, defended by fifteen guns, two steamers with heavy artillery, which came from Humaitá, two lines of trenches and *chevaux de frise*, and one *abatis*.

The squadron forced the pass of Humaitá.

The Baron of Triumpho took the *Estabelecimento* after suffering great losses and terrible opposition. That valiant man received a contusion in the hip from the tompon of a gun, and his horse was killed by three grape shots in his chest. The brave man of sixty-two ordered his cavalry

to dismount, and at the head of his Rio Grande men and of his column, made an assault on the entrenchments, and got into the enclosure of the redoubt.

On the termination of the horrible fight, he sent word to the general in chief of the result of the action and, contused, exhausted, and ill able to stand, he asked and obtained leave to go to his quarters at S. Solano to put himself under treatment.

At the end of 1868 the Dictator Lopes perfectly defended by the lines of *Pykiciri* was fortified in *Villeta*.

The problem of *Humaitá* was renewed.

The health of the Baron of Triumpho was much affected, but he, nevertheless, maintained his post.

The road by which the flank movement was made on the enemy in order to take him in the rear was opened in the Chaco.

The horrible battle of *Itororó* was fought on the 6th of December, and after it the cavalry of both the Baron of Triumpho and of João Manoel Menna Barreto disembarked in *Ipane*.

On the 11th of December the battle of *Avahi* was fought, and in which the Baron of Triumpho with his division flanked the enemy on the left, while the Brigadier João Manoel executed a like manœuvre on the right; after four hours fighting the enemy retired from the field; but then the terrible charges of cavalry turned the retreat into a rout; the enemy lost three thousand men killed, eight hundred prisoners, and six hundred wounded, and abandoning *Villeta*, they took shelter in the fortified camp of *Lomas Valentinas*.

The battle of *Avahi* cost the conquerors enormous sacrifices, and the legendary Ozorio, then Viscount and

afterwards Marquis of Herval, severely wounded in the face by a ball, had to retire from the action.

On the 21st of December the entrenchments of *Lomas Valentinas* were attacked.

The Baron of Triumpho, with his division belonged to the left column which took the first trench ; but having penetrated with the division under his command within one of the lines of the entrenchment, he was wounded by a ball which broke the forepart of one of his feet.

The attack of the 21st December, so unlucky to the Brazilian arms, was closely followed by the victory of the 27th of the same month, in which the position of *Lomas Valentinas* fell into their power, when the Dictator Lopes took flight into the interior of Paraguay.

But the *bravest of the brave*, as he was officially called, the Baron of Triumpho conveyed to the city of Asuncion, suffering from a burning fever and in his delirium, hearing the roar of battle, and struggling with his sons and with his friends in order to raise himself up from his bed to join the fight, died on the 6th of January, 1870.

On the near approach of his death struggle, and still being able to speak, his last words were « comrades.... one charge more ! »

And then died fancying in his delirium that he was making yet another charge of cavalry on the hosts of the enemies of his country.

XXII OF OCTOBER

JOSÉ MARTINIANO D'ALENCAR



A native of the town, afterwards city of Crato, province of Ceará, José Martiniano de Alencar, being destined to the Priesthood, went, when very young, to Pernambuco, and had already taken deacons orders and was completing his studies in the Seminary of Olinda when the republican revolution of 1817 broke out in that Capitania. Alencar adhered with enthusiasm to the revolutionary movement, to the plans of which he was no stranger, notwithstanding his youthfulness, and so great was his zeal and his talent, already cultivated, that the government and council organized in Olinda, chose him to go and proclaim the republic in Ceará. He was exalted by the delicacy and the danger itself of the commission, and made a rapid journey through the interior, to his Province; he arrived at Crato, and by the power of persuasion succeeded in effecting the « pronunciamiento » for the republican cause of Pernambuco. Almost immediately, however, the news of the counter-revolution in Rio Grande do Norte and in Parahyba, and

the firmness of the legal authority in the capital and in the whole of the Province of Ceará, annulled the revolt of Crato, the chief persons involved, among whom was Alencar were arrested.

After being taken to the capital of the Province, Alencar was sent from thence to Pernambuco, from whence the authorities sent him to Bahia, and in the city of S. Salvador he remained in prison for nearly four years, having for his companions in captivity Antonio Carlos de Andrada Machado, and Father Muniz Tavares, and so many more.

In 1821 a constitutional revolution brought about in Portugal, received the adhesion of Bahia in the month of February, and the political prisoners of 1817 were restored to liberty.

The priest, Alencar, arrived in Ceará, and was shortly afterwards elected deputy substitute to the Portuguese assembly, and sailed for Lisbon in 1822, in the place of the proprietor, José Ignacio Parente.

In that Assembly he made one among the number of the Brazilian deputies who were the most zealous in the defense of the cause of their country. From the 10th of May, 1822, when he took his seat, until October, when he left Lisbon with Antonio Carlos, Muniz Tavares, Barata and Lino Coutinho, to go to Falmouth and sign the manifest of the 22d of *that month*, Alencar, still a youth and without practice in Parliament, fought bravely in the rostrum as one of the Champions of Brazil.

On his return to his country, Ceará elected him in 1823 deputy to the Brazilian Assembly. Alencar always maintained in it liberal principles, and in honor there of more than once opposed the Andrada ministry.

The Assembly being dissolved, Alencar went to his province to undergo fresh adversity, by compromising himself

in order not to abandon his relations and friends in the revolution of 1824, which was called the Confederation of the Equador.

Arrested and conveyed through Minas Geraes to Rio de Janeiro, he went on from that capital to be tried in Ceará by the military commission, which acquitted him.

He had no seat in the first legislature of the Empire, because he had not yet been acquitted when the elections for deputies were going forward.

In the second legislature he was elected by two provinces, viz: by Minas Geraes and by Ceará, and chose the latter, the illustrious and well deserving patriot, Evaristo Ferreira da Veiga, taking the representation of Minas in his place.

In the chamber, he did not fear risking his popularity by maintaining, as a member of the commission of powers, the right which José Clemente Pereira, Salvador José Maciel and Joaquim de Oliveira Alvares had, to be recognized as deputies; a right which the exalted liberals disputed.

On the 2d May, 1832, Father Alencar took his seat in the Senate, he being the first Senator chosen by the Regency.

From 1834 to 1836 he was President of Ceará; introduced colonists into the province when colonization was not yet even treated of; caused to be seized a cargo of African slaves just smuggled on shore; created a small bank; paid attention to the construction of public works, and raised the revenue and the credit of the province.

In 1839 he took in the senate his post of oppositionist to the conservative politics, and attacked vigorously the project of interpretation of the additional act.

In 1840 he was one of the chief upholders of the decreeing of the majority of the Emperor.

Being again President of Ceará, he administered it but a few months, because the ministry of the majority, of whom he was the delegate, resigned in March, 1841, the conservative party again coming into power.

In consequence of the liberal revolts of S. Paulo and of Minas-Geraes, he was accused of having been their promoter in a secret club which conspired in the capital of the Empire, and underwent, together with Vergueiro, Feijó and the Priest José Bento (all senators), a prosecution, which had no consequences in the Senate. History may accept as well founded the accusation of Alencar as one of the conspirators of those revolts, towards which almost all the liberal chiefs and sub-chiefs co-operated; but the illustrious Senator for Ceará was also pointed out in the Chamber of Deputies in 1850, as one of the inspirers of the Praieira liberal revolt in Pernambuco in 1848, and that did not go beyond an unjust suspicion, because that disastrous movement was made despite the counsels of the chiefs of the party, who in the capital of the Empire came to an understanding and of one accord sent instructions, and with them the Deputies of Pernambuco, and especially Nunes Machado, to quiet those peoples' minds and prevent the armed pronunciamiento already imminent.

In 1844 to 1848 Senator Alencar was one of the principal directors of the liberal majority of Parliament, and afterwards till 1853 he kept in the foremost line of the opposition.

The cabinet of Paraná then came in with its politics of so-called conciliation and electoral reform, which had the support of the liberals.

Alencar then cooled down in his parliamentary contests, as did also the other liberal chiefs.

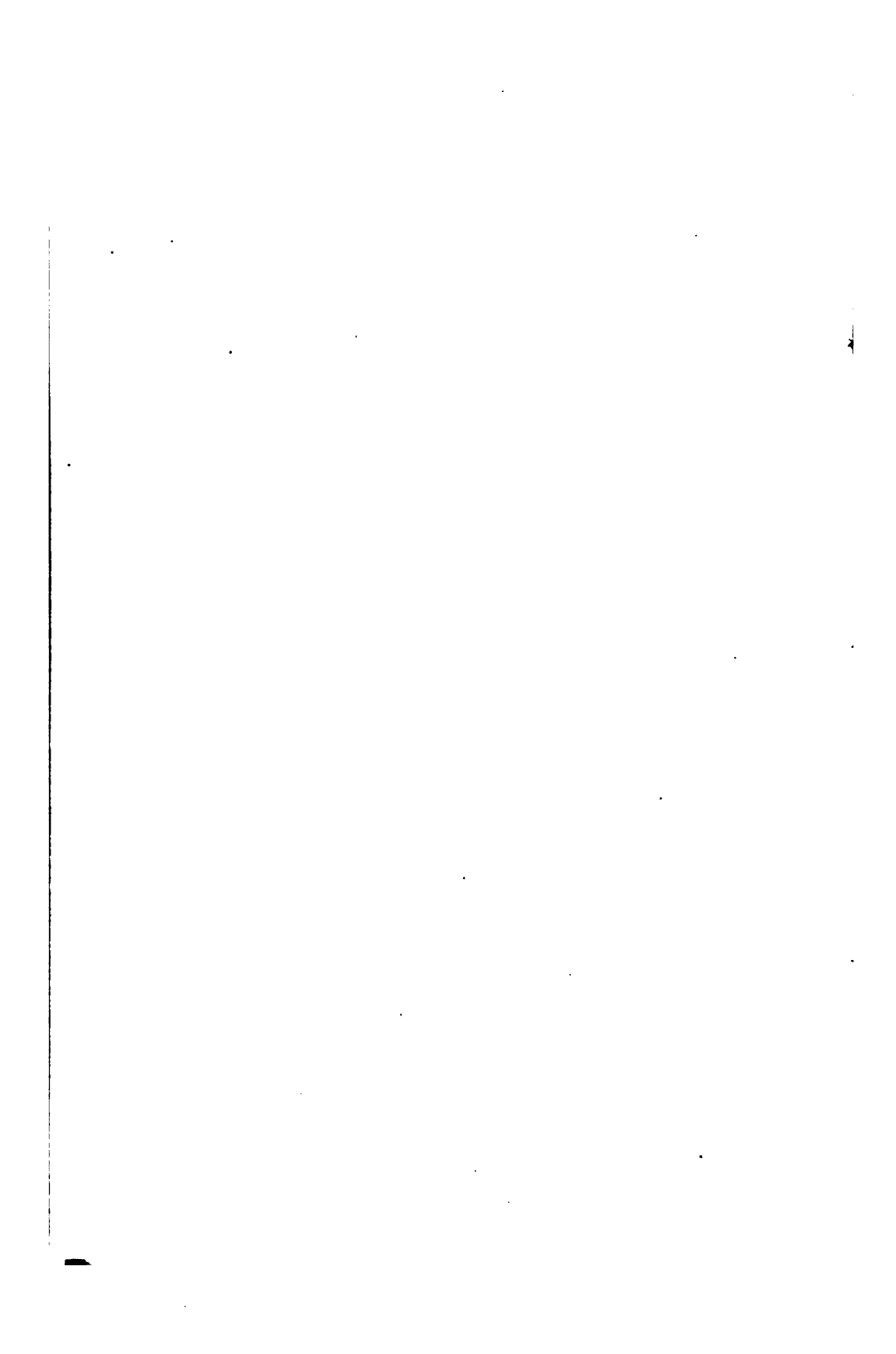
And on the 15th of March, 1860, he gave his soul up to his maker.

He had powerful political influence from 1830 up to the last years of his life; he was the most vigorous and influential chief of the liberal party of the north of the Empire; the parliamentary centre and phalanx of three or four provinces; an authority always listened to in the councils of his party; occasionally consulted on the organization of the ministries; one of the levers of the permanent regency, the intimate friend of the Regent Father Feijó, José Martiniano de Alencar never aspired, nor did he ever wish, to be minister; he was never ambitious of much, less asked for social greatness, that the Government could give him; he raised many men, but only wished for and obtained a deputy's seat, and afterwards a senator's, which the votes and the confidence of his fellow provincials gave him, of whom he was the most legitimate representative.

The more advanced liberals, and the republicans, hailed him as a martyr in his youth; the constituent assembly, the chamber of deputies, and the Senate respected him in his moderate liberal character, and as the element of order.

From 1830 forwards Father José Martiniano de Alencar, Deputy and Senator, belonged to the school of Evaristo, which was the school of good sense.





XXIII OF OCTOBER

MANOEL FERREIRA LAGOS



A native of the city of Rio de Janeiro, where he was born in 1816, Manoel Ferreira Lagos studied the humanities and followed the course of medicine in Rio de Janeiro.

A very distinguished student he cultivated literature in his study, and even on the benches of the school of medicine; he was already of valuable assistance to the Canon Januario in editing the quarterly Review of the Brazilian Historical and Geographical Institute, in which corporation he entered in 1840.

Before that year, in 1839, Lagos had completed with approval the course of medicine; he only wanted, in order to take his degree of doctor, to write and defend a thesis, and this is a most singular fact: he who had more

than sufficient knowledge and facility in composing, and in compiling memoirs ably, never could perform that act required by law. He, also, only exercised the practice of medicine privately in the houses of friends, and of poor families, always gratuitously.

In 1845 he succeeded Canon Januario da Cunha Barboza in the post of perpetual secretary of the Institute, a Review of which preserves a model report drawn up by the young secretary.

In 1850, the statutes of the Historical Institute being reformed, he left the place of first secretary, the perpetuity of which had been revoked; but during some years he was third vice-president of the same society, and only ceased being so owing to a long absence occasioned by the labors of the scientific commission, sent to some of the provinces of the north of the Empire, of which he was a member.

That commission otherwise not a successful one, was proposed in the Institute by himself, and signed by many other associates after the reading (which occupied several sessions) of the extensive, most delightful, and learned memorial, in which Lagos showed in the clearest manner, and in an epigrammatic and delightful style, a thousand falsities, absurdities, ridiculous errors and grotesque inventions with which the works of many travelers who wrote upon Brazil are filled. That memorial, in which sarcasm is sometimes carried too far, bore witness to its depth of study.

On his return from the scientific commission, Lagos occupied the attention of the Institute for a long time by reading a curious work of observations on customs, prejudices, uses, popular feasts, and even of most special words, and of exclusive signification to the less civilized population of the interior of Ceará: all that was lost. Because he

did not leave in the Institute the voluminous manuscript, the reading of which the members heard.

Out of the Institute, Manoel Ferreira Lagos, served his country devotedly as one of the most intelligent, zealous and active employees of the secretary of States Office for Foreign Affairs. With a wealth of knowledge, with a discretion and reserve most solicitous, and so to say, religious, he knew how to show himself to be the man of inviolable secrecy and a loyal public servant, a man who never belied his trustworthiness, whatever might be the political creed of the minister of Foreign Affairs.

Lagos was also the Director of the section of zoology and of comparative anatomy, as well as Librarian of the National Museum.

In the first Universal Exhibition of Paris he fulfilled, with the greatest zeal, the task of Commissioner of the Empire of Brazil.

All that laborious and devoted service of the Institute, the work of the Secretary's Office for Foreign Affairs, the direction of one of the sections of the National Museum, the task of the Brazilian Commissioner in the Universal Exhibition of Paris, — all that he carried out to the letter; but he always mixed up, in the fulfillment of his duty, the atticism of his mind, alway breaking out into epigrams, which made every one laugh, particularly when he did not spare himself.

This mockery of the things of this world did not leave him even when death was close upon him.

Affected by heart disease, thunderstruck by the diagnostic of able medical men, who announced to him the fatal nature of his disease, he laughed at the doctors, ridiculed the diagnostic, and deceived his family, multiplying epigrams on the sentence of his near approaching death.

And almost immediately after his last jest, Manol Ferreira Lagos drew his last breath on the 24th of October, 1867.

There never was a man who feigned so greatly, or was so greatly assured of his life ; one hour before his death he was playing, laughing, mocking the prognostics of the faculty.

Manoel Ferreira Lagos left a very great number of manuscripts and documents, many of them, unique, others most rare, all interesting. The Government purchased them and had them placed in the National Public Library.

The simple list of the titles of those manuscripts would fill many pages.



XXIV OF OCTOBER

MIGUEL DE SOUZA MELLO E ALVIM



Miguel de Souza Mello e Alvim was born on the 9th March, 1784, in the farm of Olaia near the town of Ourem, Province of Estremadura, kingdom of Portugal; he was the legitimate son of Antonio de Souza Mello e Alvim and of D. Maria Barboza da Silva Torres, and of very noble genealogy, derived from the Count D. Gonçalo Pereira, grandfather of the constable D. Nuno Alvares Pereira.

Having finished his preparatory studies, he was destined to the service of the Navy, and on the 24th March, 1798, he entered the company of « guardas-marinha » as a midshipman, and completing, with great success, the respective scientific studies, received his promotion to officer, and served successively in the frigate *Cysne*, in the line-of-battle ships *Princeza da Beira*, *Vasco da Gama* and

Conde D. Henrique, and also in the frigate *Urania* in which he made part of the squadron that, in 1807, accompanied the Royal Family of Portugal in their transmigration to Brazil.

In the mother country Miguel de Souza Mello e Alvim left his name worthily inscribed in the register of four campaigns, in the Mediterranean against the barbarous States, and in important missions in the seas of Africa and America; and getting tired of the boisterous troubles of the sea, brightened his spirit by the cultivation of letters and sciences, and went on accumulating riches in the treasury of intelligence.

In Brazil he continued to extend the series of his services: on the 8th March 1808 he was first lieutenant, and named for the commission charged with making a plan of Rio de Janeiro; he worked at this task with activity and skill, meriting the honor of special praise from the Government.

He was made a Commander on 17th December 1813, acting-captain on 4th July, 1817, and confirmed captain on 12th October of the same year. This distinguished naval officer might justly pride himself on having worked hard for promotion to the various grades, having, as a patron, his own merit; and by the aid of letters of recommendation he faithfully performed many important commissions. Thus in 1811 and 1812 he commanded vessels in Bahia and at the Island of St. Thomas; he commanded others in 1816, the following year was named Orderly-adjutant to the Governor of the Province of Santa Catharina, and there helped to found colonies and an Establishment of Thermal waters; he also made the campaigns of 1812—1816 and 1817 in the River Plate.

In 1818 he was made Naval Intendant of the Province of

Santa Catharina, and in the careful exercise of his duties, which continued ten years, he heard with indifference the echoes of the Revolutions on both sides of the Atlantic ; in 1820 that of Portugal, which pulled down the king of Brazil in 1821 ; in 1822 that of Brazil which wrested a sister-kingdom from Portugal, and founded an Empire ; and lastly that of 1823, which dissolved the Brazilian, Parliament and created the embryo of another political cataclysm.

Miguel de Souza Mello e Alvim was more of an administrator than a politician ; in the midst of those civil convulsions he always commanded the respect of the authorities, and was assiduous in the execution of his duties : the year 1822, however, offered him a new country in the land which two years before had given him a virtuous wife ; he did not hesitate, but preferred to his native land the growing Empire which had so pleasantly captured his heart ; he became a Brazilian, and one of whom Brazil has reason to be proud.

In 1828 he was called to Rio de Janeiro and received the appointment of Naval Intendant at that port, and on the 15th June of the same year he was made Minister and Secretary of State for Naval affairs, which functions he exercised until the 4th of December 1829. Councillor Alvim never cared for the glory of political influence ; a stranger to party struggles, he confined himself to being an active and scrupulous administrator ; he paid, however, for the errors of the Ministry to which he belonged, and when our representative system was in its infancy, in which not even the theory of solidity of Cabinets was observed ; the ardent Liberal opposition did not pardon him alone of the Ministry, but attacked them all alike : to-day, when cool passions are prevalent, justice is accorded to the worth, moderation and honor of this

serviceable man. Amongst the motives for aggression from which he suffered, only one existed in reality, and incontestably, and which the illustrious man never pretended to dissemble, much less to deny ; it was his loyalty and dedication to the first Emperor.

Descending from the heights of Ministerial power, Councillor Alvim did not rest; on the 11th December of the same year, 1828, he was nominated President of the Province of Santa Catharina, and exercised the functions of that post until the 21st of April, 1831: the news of the abdication of D. Pedro I, and of events which had passed and were still passing in the Capital of the Empire, alarmed the people's minds in the in the Capital of the Province; the peaceful city of Desterro desired also to give its tribute to the resentful spirit of Brazilian nationality, and to the revolutionary contagion; a military revolt broke out, the leaders of which which went to the palace and demanded the deposition of the President.

Gold is tried in the fire, and the souls of great men by adversity.

Councillor Alvim showed himself on the day of the crisis to be wise, energetic and patriotic; resistance was almost impossible, to yield was absolutely jeopardising to the public cause; Alvim forgot himself, and only remembered his Country; he did not desire strife, so gave good advice to the rebels and endeavoured to shew them a better road; their chief, Brigadier Leite Pacheco, was struck with wonder, and listened attentively to his remarks, and matters took the direction which outraged authority thought best; the victim, in honor of the Law, did not give up the Presidency to the revolutionists as they desired, but to the Vice-President, whom they obeyed. It is a rare occur-

rence in History, the winning of such a splendid victory by the vanquished party.

But Councillor Alvim came out of the brilliant struggle tired of public life ; besides this, being a friend of the ex-Emperor he did not desire to divide power with his adversaries ; he did not deny his Country, but he did not consider himself the right man to influence political affairs in the new epoch which was just dawning ; he asked for his retirement. He had been promoted to be Captain of the 1st Class on 12th October, 1823, to Chief of Division on 12th October, 1827, and finally retired with the rank of Commodore on 28th July, 1834 ; he intended to consecrate himself exclusively to the love of his wife and children, but the inhabitants of Santa Catharina, dragged him from the bosom of his family and gave him a seat in their Provincial Assembly, which elected him its President.

Em 1839 the rebellion of Rio Grande do Sul had the audacity to invade the neighbouring Province. Mello e Alvim roused himself at the cry of the Law, took temporary command of the Naval Forces in operation in the Province of Santa Catharina ; and for this important service received the praises of the Regency in the name of the Emperor.

The proclamation of the majority of H. I. M. D. Pedro II, had the charm of attracting to Court this old and most devoted servant of the State.

At the voice of the Emperor he left his pleasant retreat in Santa Catharina, and was appointed in 1841 member of the Supreme Military Council, and charged with the care of the Head-Quarters of the Navy. Or the 14th June he left for S. Paulo as President of that Province, from which post he obtained his discharge on the 24th

November of the same year, and returned to his duties in the Supreme Military council.

In 1844, a second time Intendant of the Navy in the metropolis, he was charged with other commissions until the 18th September 1851, when he was named Councillor Extraordinary of the State, and entering on its duties, he left, on account of incompatibility, the post of Orderly-Adjutant of the Ministry of Marine in charge of its Head Quarters.

The importance and weight of such considerable labors did not absorb all the vigilance and faculties of the old servant of the Nation, who yet found time and strength to occupy the position of Inspector of Municipal Works in the Metropolis, which were assisted by concessions of Lotteries or subventions of the Government. Finally, in August, 1855, he became an Ordinary Councillor of State, and, in less than two months after, rested from his earthly labors, dying in the city of Rio de Janeiro on the 8th October of that same year.

Behold the history of a noble life, Extending over eighty, years, and sixty four of them passed in uninterrupted public life! The biographer who may desire to study the matter, will encounter in each year a date marking an important or honorable fact and posterity will bless the memory of Councillor of State, Miguel de Souza Mello e Alvim.

On his breast shone medals and insignias, which were testimonies of the worth and virtues of which he had given so many examples to his fellow-men. This well deserving citizen was graced in 1812 with the ribbon of the Knight-hood of Our Lady of the Conception of Villa Viçosa, in 1828 with the commandership of S. Bento de Aviz, in the following year with the collar of dignity of the Imperial Order of the Rose, in 1851 made Grand Dignitary of the

same Order, and in 1850, by his most Faithful Majesty (the king of Portugal), he was made commander of the Most Noble and Ancient Order of the Tower and Sword of Valour, Loyalty and Merit.

This illustrious man was still further commendable by his probity and enlightened knowledge; he was well versed in mathematic sciences, the cultivation of literature, and composed beautiful poetry, the greater portion of which he would not consent to have published. His manners were very friendly, and in his private life he was an example of virtue.



XXV OF OCTOBER

MANOEL DE FREITAS MAGALHÃES



Manoel de Freitas Magalhães came into the world in 1787, and was baptised on the 17th February of the same year. He was the legitimate son of João de Freitas Magalhães and D. Anna da Encarnação, and was born in the town, afterwards city of Espirito Santo.

He received his primary instruction at his native place and, destined for the priesthood, he left for Rio de Janeiro, and having completed his studies in the Episcopal Seminary of S. José, took sacred orders on the 25th October, 1817.

He went back to his own Province, where he stayed only a few years, returning to Rio de Janeiro in 1822; he declared himself most ardently in favor of the Independence of the country; joined himself to the Liberal party, and was an enthusiast of the Andradas in 1823. An

oppositionist during the first reign, he had great influence amongst Masons, to whose body he belonged, and to whom he spoke in favor of the emigrant Portuguese Liberals who came to Brazil.

He was considered to be a very talented and sympathetic sacred orator, and modestly cultivated poetry.

In brilliant assemblies he merited the honor of being chosen Vicar for the Parish of S. Gonçalo, and afterwards of S. João de Itaborahy.

He was a member of the Provincial Assembly of Rio de Janeiro, from the first legislature to the year of his death, and several times presided therein.

He was deputy of the General Assembly, for the Province of Espirito Santo in 1843; but on the 15th of October of the same year he gave up his soul to God.

As a priest he left the most lively regrets in S. Gonçalo, and in Itaborahy examples which neither before nor since have ever been equalled.

In the parish and town of Itaborahy he shone, amidst the most ardent political struggles of parties, as a most potent element of order and harmony.

In 1840, during a jealous and threatening electoral controversy, he was enabled to impose his benevolent and mild will on the chiefs of the disagreeing parties, and to choose and cause to be accepted the members of the Electoral Board.

To secure and obtain so much he had an easy prerogative; he was charitable, and of easy access, and his house belonged less to him than to his parishioners, who found therein a neutral ground in political questions, and an agreeable spot to meet in.

Returning once to his parish after several months absence, Vicar Freitas was moved to tears on beholding a multitude

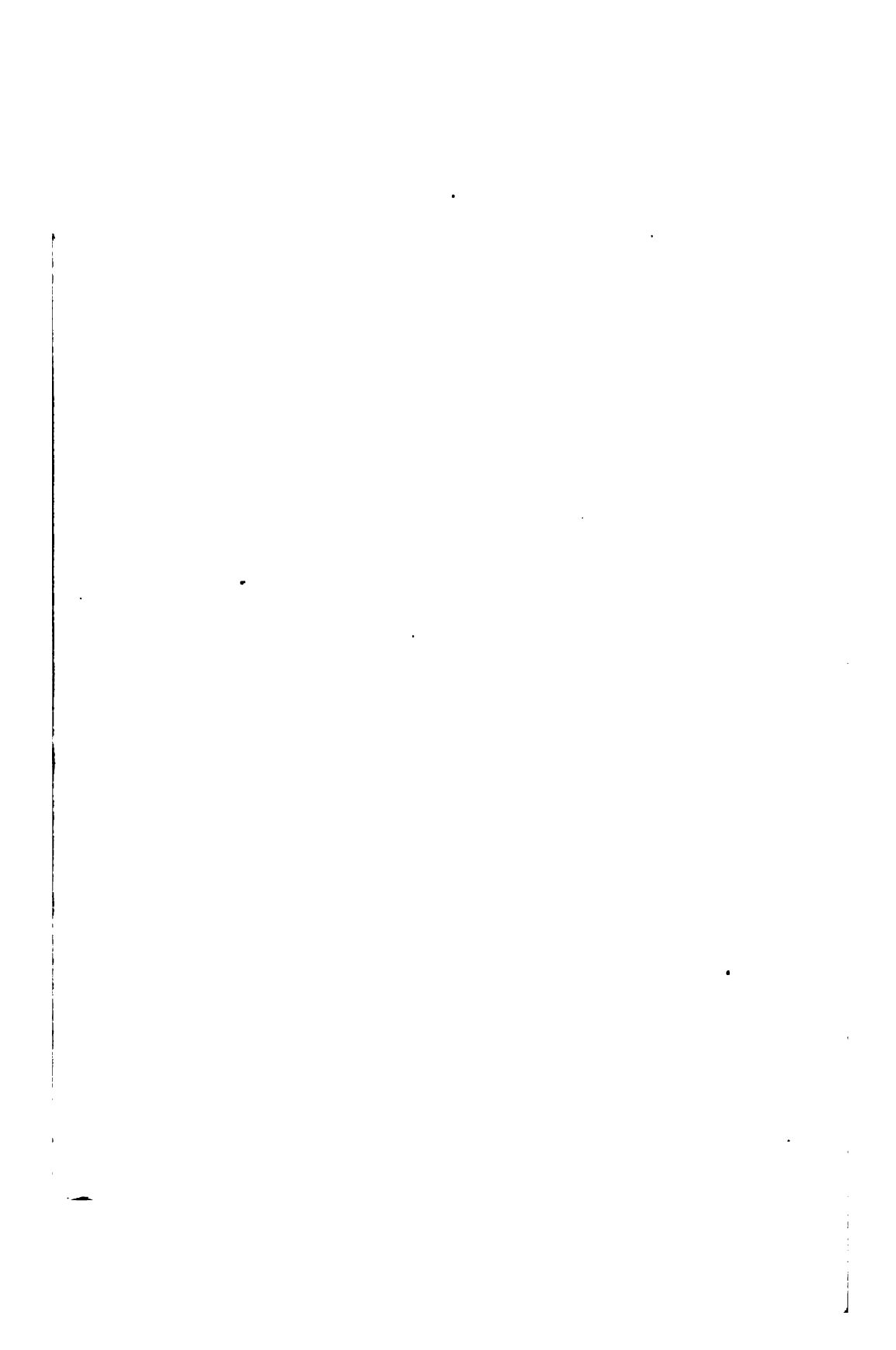
of men on horseback, who came a long way out to form his escort, and, in a friendly and triumphal manner to bring him in with rejoicings to his house in the town of Itaborahy.

He was an honorable and patriotic man, and model of a parish priest.

Months before his death, he dreamed one night that he distinctly heard a voice saying to him: « The month of October will be fatal to thee!... »

The dream produced a strong impression on his mind; and his friends endeavoured in vain to make him forget what he looked upon as an awful warning.

And it came to pass that Canon Freitas died suddenly on the 15th of *October!*



XXVI OF OCTOBER

MATHEUS SARAIVA




Matheus Saraiva was born in Rio de Janeiro either at the end of the seventeenth century or the beginning of the following one. Having passed his preparatory studies in the city of his birth, his parents sent him to the University of Coimbra, and there he graduated in medicine with a great reputation for intelligence and distinction.

He was nominated a Fellow of the Royal Academy of London.

In the city of Rio de Janeiro he practised medicine, distinguishing himself as much by his knowledge as by his disinterestedness and exemplary charity with which he treated the poor.

When he obtained praises for these acts, he was accustomed to say : « If any magistrate could imprison God,




or God could imprison. Himself, Charity is the Minister who, without sacrifice, could execute the sentence. »

Dr. Matheus Saraiva composed the work called : *Portuguese and Illustrated America*, and *Evangelical Voice by St. Thomaz*, endeavoring to show that the Apostle St. Thomaz visited Brazil, and also pretended to decipher sundry inscriptions and symbolical characters that he had met with, and amongst them no less than three in the mountains of Itaquatiara in Minas Geraes.

He also wrote *Polyanthea Phisocsmica, or Moral, Political, Doctrinal and Historical Instruction*, a work on the education of youth.

And another work, called *Polianthea Brazilica Medica Historica*, relative to the endemic and epidemic diseases of Rio de Janeiro, and their treatment.

The dates of his birth and death being unknown, the name of Dr. Matheus Saraiva is necessarily registered under that of the 26th of October.



XXVII OF OCTOBER

JOHN HOPMAN

A native of England, John Hopman came to Rio de Janeiro about the middle of the eighteenth century, and there he established himself as a merchant. He was a man of excellent education, and much given to reading: he was generally esteemed for his amiability and his orderly life: in commerce, he enjoyed the reputation of being both intelligent and honorable.

He loved Brazil, and declared himself entirely and for evermore a Brazilian, marrying D. Maria Izabel, a young lady of a distinguished family in Rio de Janeiro.

For the recreation of his family and of himself, he purchased an extensive piece of ground, and built a beautiful country residence at S. Christovão, at the corner of the Aterrado: there he commenced to culti-

vate European and Asiatic plants at that time most rare in Brazil, and which he took pleasure in, and even strove hard to propagate, giving and offering young plants or seeds.

He was a man who might be called an element of progress, and full of aspirations of the development of the great country, the birth place of his wife, and his adopted and dear country.

He was held in much consideration by the Viceroys, the Marquis of Lavradio, and Luiz de Vasconcellos e Souza: the latter obtained leave from the Government of the metropolis to nominate John Hopman a member of the *Board of Inspection* afterwards called *Junta do Commercio*: the former, before this, availed himself of John Hopman in the primitive, and at the time uncalculated source of the greatest and grandest fountain of agricultural wealth of Brazil.

In the Vice royalty of the marquis of Lavradio, there arrived at Rio de Janeiro, appointed Chancellor of the court of appeal of Rio de Janeiro, the chief Judge of the same court of Maranhão, João Alberto Castello Branco, who brought from that Capitania two Coffee plants, which by order of the Viceroy were cultivated in the garden of the bearded Italian monks (Barbadinhos).

From notes very obligingly offered by an illustrious person, a relation of the family of John Hopman, it must be concluded that the coffee plants were three in number, or only one cultivated in the garden of the *barbadinhos*, because, of them, it is affirmed that the Viceroy confided to the care of the curious and eager cultivator of exotic and new plants, *one plant*: but in the luminous work on the *History and culture of the Coffee plant*, of the distinguished and respectable Dr. Nicolaó Joaquim

Moreira, it is to be read that John Hopman had gathered in the garden of the *barbadinhos* some beans of Coffee, and had sown them in his garden.

Nevertheless, in those notes, the fact is cited, of the poet and patriot artist, Sr. Porto Alegre, the present Baron of Santo Angelo, on visiting, some years after the beginning of the present century the grounds of the country residence of the already long deceased John Hopman, embracing, with lively and easily explained commotion, the old historic coffee tree, which the Marquis de Lavradio had given as a plant. This doubt is at all events of very small interest.

Either with the historic coffee tree, or with the coffee beans that he had collected, and had sown, it is certain that John Hopman was the principal cultivator, and exciter to the cultivation, of the coffee tree, which grew and propagated in a lively and splendid manner.

In a few years John Hopman had already, so extensive a plantation of coffee trees in grounds then called *Arrosal* in Engenho Velho Street, that he gathered not only sufficient coffee for the consumption of his family, but also to make presents to his friends, and to export what remained—this fact being proved by an Account Sales, which his Lisbon correspondent remitted him in December, 1791, and which is still preserved as a curious document.

He was probably the first exporter of coffee from Brazil.

Some time afterwards, and still under the auspices of the Marquis de Lavradio, John Hopman was further, the inspirer and director of the industry of the making of guaxima cordage for the marine Arsenal. It is asseverated, that, on a certain day when Hopman's mind was seriously occupied with his commercial affairs, walking with long strides through his grounds, he broke the stalk of a guaxima plant,

and in twisteng it between his hands, he observed, on entering the house, that it had fibres both sufficiently resistant and strong to enable it to serve for cordage, and cables, and that from that accident, arose the industry which the Marquis, Viceroy encouraged, and protected, being later on abandoned, either from the superiority of hempen rope, or from the mean policy of the Metropolis.

John Hopman died in Rio de Janeiro during the Viceroyalty of Luiz de Vasconcellos ; for in 1791 the account Sales of coffee had already been addressed to his widow, its exportation, although on a very modest scale, having commenced before that year.

The aptitude and the taste of John Hopman for cultivating and introducing into the country which he adopted for his own, exotic and useful plants, passed on, as it were, as an inheritance to his daughter, the order issued by the Viceroy Count of Rezende, on the 25th of March, 1798, being a proof of this assertion, as it gave the culture of the cinnamon tree in charge to D. Norberta J. Hopman.

John Hopman well deserves to be remembered, among Brazilians who are generous and devoted to the progress of this great and fine country.

Exact dates are wanting in the life of this well deserving and obliging Englishman, the adopted son of the Country ; but his name which cannot be forgotten is engraven in the article under the date of the 27th October.



XXVIII OF OCTOBER

CONRADO JACOB DE NIEMEYER

Conrado Jacob de Niemeyer was born in the city of Lisbon on the 28th of October, 1788. He was the legitimate son of Conrado Henrique Niemeyer, Hanoverian Colonel of Engineers, in the service of Portugal ; his mother's name was D. Firmina Angelica de Niemeyer.

Resolved to follow his father's profession, he entered the regiment of Artillery at the Court, as cadet, in February, 1803, passing at once into the Military College, where he completed his preparatory studies with distinction, being considered, in 1808, the first scholar of the College.

The revelation of such a fine talent promised a splendid future ; the first triumphs of the young student augmented his ambition for knowledge ; but the epoch was not propitious for the cultivation of literature. The clang of

martial trumpets disturbed the attention which is indispensable for studying; the epoch did not belong to Minerva, the goddess of Wisdom, but to Minerva, the goddess of War, armed exactly as it left the paternal brain. The great Cesar of modern times, Napoleon, the maker of new Kings, the destroyer of ancient Crowns, the political geographer who, with the point of his sword, drew arbitrary limits to the Nations of Europe, had cast his dominating eyes over the Iberic Peninsula, and at the waving of his hand, which was an instrument of Providence, the Legions of France invaded the Kingdom of Portugal; and the proud Eagles which, in the language of Lamartine, made the tour of Europe, rested victoriously on the heights of alarmed Lisbon.

In those critical times, when resistance and the glorious uprising of Portuguese patriotism were yet a problem, the young student did not wish to bend his neck to the foreign yoke, and not being able to fight because nobody fought, he emigrated on the 2d of February, 1808, with two cadets, one corporal and eight soldiers, and went on board the English squadron which was blockading the port. Taken to Portsmouth, he remained there by order of the Portuguese Minister Plenipotentiary, forming, with his companions, part of the crew of the brig « *Destemido*, » up to the time he left for Brazil, where he arrived in July, 1809, disembarking in Rio de Janeiro.

Conrado Jacob de Niemeyer at once joined the Artillery Regiment, at the Court, and on the 9th August of the same year was promoted to 2d-lieutenant, with the obligation of finishing his studies relative to the arm of the service he had joined. He satisfied this condition with the greatest zeal, receiving his commission of 1st-lieutenant of En-

gineers in 1815, having completed his mathematical studies with distinction.

About that time Conrado began to be illustrious by a series of services which were continued during forty-seven years, and only ended with the death of this laborious and indefatigable man, who, in the last quarter of his life appeared always to be getting younger from the enchantment of work.

Conrado Jacob de Niemeyer may be considered from two points of view: as a military man, and as a true Engineer. If his name may be found among those involved in political events, it is certain that during almost the whole of his military life the soldier absorbed the politician, and discipline rather than opinion regulated his actions.

As a military man he never had the opportunity of gaining those laurels which a warrior most appreciates. It is true that he fought in Pernambuco in 1817 and 1824 in the cause of Legality, and on the 24th September of the latter year, immediately after the triumphal entry into the capital of that Province of the peacemaking army, he was decorated, by the hand of General Francisco de Lima e Silva, with the medal of distinction.

In 1821 and 1822, Conrado Jacob de Niemeyer, Captain of Engineers, assumed a decided political career, serving with the greatest zeal, the Constitutional cause and the Independence of Brazil, and duly received the thanks and praises of the provisional Junta of the Province of Pernambuco.

Dedicated to the new country which he had adopted, he paid it constant tributes of love and fidelity; but impelled by military obedience to undertake a commission which he himself called terrible, he got involved in the grave political disputes of the first reign. Commanding an expedi-

tionary force sent to Ceará in 1824, he was nominated President of the Military Commission which was there instituted to judge the persons compromised in the revolutionary rising of the so-called *Confederation of the Equator*, just such another as had at the same time been created in Pernambuco. Blood ran from the gallows, and the groans of the victims found an echo in the hearts of the Brazilians. The Liberal party did not pardon Conrado's severe discipline, and looking upon him as one of the absolutists of that period, blasted him with the flashes of their reprobation.

The Military Commander of Ceará having been called to the metropolis to respond to his abuse of authority of which he accused, he was not only unanimously absolved, but even praised by the Council of War that judged him.

The triumph of the Liberal party in 1831 threw Conrado amongst the number of disgusted persons who formed the party that called themselves *Caramuru*, or *Restorer*. In 1832 he was imprisoned and tried under pretext of having raised Joaquim Pinto Madeira of Ceará to the rank of Colonel, of having disobeyed the orders of the Government and co-operated in the disturbance of public order. He was absolved and justified in two Councils of War; but feeling disgusted with the career he had hitherto followed, he preferred another more modest and mild, therefore asked and obtained in 1833 his retirement with the rank of Colonel.

The military man rested; the Engineer redoubled his activity.

And it is as an Engineer that our friend leaves us a more noble remembrance. Each year of his life was marked by some advantageous labor, and, it may be said, formed a ring in a long chain of good services.

From 1817 to 1824 Pernambuco saw Conrado Jacob de Niemeyer charged successively with preparing a plan of Recife, Olinda and its suburbs, of establishing the telegraphic line between Recife and the extreme south of the Province; also of the study and plan of defence of the southern coast of the same as far as the River S. Francisco; of the direction and construction of bridges, roads, and earth-works, and of dams for deposits of water during a season of drought in the villages of the interior; likewise the organization of the plan of defence of the Province, and especially of the cities of Recife and Olinda; a task which he performed with the assistance of the then Major of Engineers, Firmino Herculano de Moraes Ancora; and finally of the plan for the conduct of water into Recife.

Being on another occasion in Pernambuco, in 1841, with his illustrious colleague, then Lieutenant-Colonel and afterwards Field-Marshal, Councillor Pedro de Alcantara Bellegarde, he presented a new plan for the work above mentined, which was duly executed to the full satisfaction of both. Yet again, in the same Province in 1855, he laid out plans for the drying-up of the marshes of Olinda, and others for channeling the waters of the River Beberibe so that navigation might be constant between the suburb of that name, Olinda, and Recife, thus avoiding the constant devastation caused by the rising of the waters of the River Capibaribe.

In Rio de Janeiro, in 1829, he examined into the state of the fortifications of the port and entrance thereto, and proposed means for bettering them; he made the drawings and estimates of expenses for the railroad from S. Paulo to Rio de Janeiro, and was nominated Fellow of the Statistical and Geographical Committee of the Empire.

The political revolution of 1831 imposed upon Conrado the punishment of rest : but in 1836, three years after his retirement was granted, he found himself at the head of the department of Public Works of the province of Rio de Janeiro ; was afterwards made member and then president of the board of directors of said works, and sweetened the labor of these tasks, by inspecting, along with Viscount Jerumirim, the works of the canal of Pavuna, and estimated the expenses necessary for their improvement and conclusion. He also drew up a plan for levelling the Castle Hill, which was laid before the legislative body in 1838.

In that same year he contracted for, and realized the construction of, more than ten leagues of the commercial road between the rivers Iguassú and Parahyba.

In 1846 he was charged with the re-construction and renewing of the bridges and earth-works of the Imperial Estate of Santa Cruz, of which he was made superintendent ; and so zealous did he show himself in the execution of his duties, that five years after he received from the Steward of His Majesty the Emperor's household special thanks for the services he had rendered, not only to that establishment, but also in the examinations be made of the best means of improving the entrances of the ports of Itaguahy and Guaratiba, and lastly for services in the silk manufactory of Itaguahy.

But it was in 1846 that he gathered the laurels of his most notable labor. Conrado Jacob de Niemeyer, effective member of the Historical and Geographical Institute of Brazil since 1839, published and dedicated to this Society his *General Chart of the Empire*, which brought him, as a just reward the diploma of Honorary Fellow of that Society, and the gold medal with which he was honored by

the hand of His Majesty the Emperor at the solemn meeting and anniversary of the institute in that year.

Colonel Conrado's *General Chart of the Empire* is however, far from being a perfect work ; faults and errors were daily making themselves more visible, even to their author, growing larger in number as the relative studies became more refined. But the difficulty and transcendency of that work, and the urgent necessity there was for it, augmented its value, and caused its unquestionable merit to be acknowledged, and, being justly appreciated in civilised Europe, gained for this distinguished engineer the diplomas of honorary member of the Geographical Society of Berlin and of the Botanical Society of Ratisbon.

In 1856 Colonel Conrado Jacob de Niemeyer was nominated officer of the general department of Public Works, and further charged with the making of a Corographic Chart of the Empire.

At 69 years of age the distinguished engineer completed the arduous and long enterprise; and then, assisted by his illustrious friend and colleague, General Bellegarde, he was ordered to present in three years the Corographic Chart of the province of Rio de Janeiro, finishing both these difficult tasks to the full satisfaction of the respective provincial government.

Conrado Jacob de Niemeyer died in the City of Rio de Janeiro in 1862, at seventy-four years of age.



XXIX OF OCTOBER

FRIAR ANTONIO DA PIEDADE



Antonio da Piedade was born in Rio de Janeiro, in the second half of the seventeenth century, and his parents bestowed upon him a careful education; he took his second name when he entered holy orders; he applied himself fervently to the study of theological sciences and philosophy, and was generally respected for his virtues and purity of manners.

Animated by an Apostolic spirit he became a Missionary, and having, on 29th October, 1702, received the appointment of Superior Missionary at the village of Garulhos in Campos dos Goytacazes, he penetrated vast regions of the Interior, and managed to attract an immense number of people to Catholicism and the road to civilization, and assembled them in a village.

But a grave epidemic breaking out, and not few Indians dying, the others deserted, vulgarly attributing the calamity to baptism.

Friar Antonio da Piedade, having waited until the epidemic ceased, again went into the woods, and preaching to and convincing the fugitive Indians of their errors, was influential enough to bring them back with him, and to restrain and govern them with his mildness and charity in the village he had formed, and which duly prospered thanks to his zeal and dedication.

The services rendered by Friar Antonio da Piedade were so valuable, that on the information, taken by the Governor of Rio de Janeiro, the King sent a special message that he should be thanked for them in his name.



XXX OF OCTOBER

GONÇALO SOARES DA FRANÇA

A learned man and a poet, Gonçalo Soares da França was born in 1632, in the capital of Espirito Santo : he cultivated literature with ardour, and wrote in the Latin language, which he thoroughly understood, a poem to which he gave the title *Brazilica, or D'scovery of Brazil*.

He composed various poems in Portuguese, which according to the testimony, of Coucillor Pereira da Silva (*Illustrious Men of Brazil, Supplementary Biography*) possesses very high merit.

The dates of the birth and death of this illustrious man are unknown ; but he should not therefore be forgotten, as he was one amongst few, in that age of darkness for Brazil, who, by force of study and with high intelligence, knew how to become a fountain of light.

Therefore let his name be inscribed, although arbitrarily so, on the 30th of October.

XXXI OF OCTOBER

JOAQUIM GONÇALVES LEDO

Joaquim Gonçalves Ledo, born in the city of Rio de Janeiro on 11th December, 1781, was the legitimate son of Antonio Gonçalves Ledo and D. Antonia Maria dos Reis Ledo. His parents destined him to follow a career of jurisprudence, and having studied Latin, and little besides, in his native city, went to Portugal when he was fourteen years of age.

He had completed his preparatory studies in Coimbra and was going through a course of law, when the news of the death of his father reached him, and the necessity of taking upon himself the management of his business obliged him to interrupt his studies and return to Rio de Janeiro.

Endowed with great facility of comprehension, brilliant intelligence and a prodigious memory, he went on studying

literature and conquering its difficulties, as well as other cabinet instruction in many of its varieties.

Up to the end of 1820, further information is wanting in the life of Ledo, except of his having been employed in the Secretary's office of the Military Arsenal, and already much esteemed in the city of Rio de Janeiro for his poetic talent, sweetness of disposition and amenity of manner.

As an employé in the Secretary's office he must have been very useful ; as, besides having great knowledge, he did every thing with great taste, writing with a neat and rapid hand.

In 1821 he appeared upon the political stage, having been made Elector, and took part in the Electoral Assembly which met on 20th April in the Exchange-rooms, and which going beyond its exclusive mandate, insisted upon the adoption of the Spanish constitution, taking measures to prevent the King's retirement to Portugal, and becoming disorderly from the very first hour.

The errors, abuses, and revolutionary extravagancies of the Assembly, were equalled by the action of the authorities, who without any previous intimation, sent a military force on the morning of the 21st April, belonging to the Portuguese division, to make a discharge of musketry on that part of the building where the Electors and many persons were assembled, and immediately invade the hall with bayonets at the charge. There were deaths among the Electors and populace and many others were wounded.

The Assembly was thus dissolved and Ledo had to hide himself for several weeks, as he was one of those compromised by the excesses of 20th April.

On the 26th of the month, D. João VI, with the Royal Family, set out for Lisbon, leaving the Prince D. Pedro, in Rio de Janeiro, as Regent of Brazil.

Immediately, in 1821, there were manifested aspirations of Independence, and when, as yet, the Prince Regent D. Pedro was opposed to the great work of Brazilian patriotism, Ledo and his illustrious friend, Father (afterwards Canon) Januario da Cunha Barboza, edited and published the periodical *Reflector*, which at first was a cautious and afterwards a flaming organ of the sentiments of the patriots.

In 1822 Ledo cooperated in the Petition of the Rio people, which, on the 9th January was carried to the Prince Regent, and received from him the reply.—

« *I shall remain in Brazil* » with which D. Pedro, disobedient to the Portuguese Parliament and the king, placed himself at the head of the Revolution for the Independence of Brazil.

The *Council of the Attornies General* of the Provinces having been convoked on the 16th February, by the government of the Prince D. Pedro, Ledo was one of those elected for Rio de Janeiro, and in some of the most important official documents of the year 1822, his style was pronounced brilliant, florid and highly polished.

The Ypiranga shout of the 7th September rang through the air ; and, on the 12th October, D. Pedro was proclaimed Constitutional Emperor and Perpetual Defender of Brazil : but even at that time the patriots of the Independence were struggling for rivalry in Rio de Janeiro, which culminated in the bosom of Masonry, D. Pedro being elected Grand Master.

The rivalry passed into the political arena ; Ledo, Januario José Clemente, Nobrega and others were enemies to the Andrada Ministry, censuring it as anti-liberal ; and on 28th October, the two Ministers Andrada (José Bonifacio and Martin Francisco) either provoked the dismissal of their

Ministry, or it was dismissed when they least expected it. History is still rather obscure on this point ; it is certain however that popular manifestations and official representations induced the Emperor to re-call the Andradas to the government two days after, on the 30th October.

José Bonifacio and Martin Francisco were carried in triumph by the people, and D. Pedro went to receive them in the street, embracing them and crying for joy.

But the Andradas returned to power, under the condition that they might employ in the government any extraordinary measures they might judge to be indispensable. They ordered an enquiry to be made respecting the revolutionary conspirators ; José Clemente, Januario and Nobrega were imprisoned, and afterwards banished to France ; but Ledo, on the 3st October, foreseeing the political persecution which also threatened him, hid himself, and afterwards managed to escape being made prisoner by flying disguised in the habit of a Friar, and went on board a vessel which carried him to Buenos-Ayres.

Neither Ledo, Nobrega nor José Clemente, all of them well-deservers of the Independence, were members of the Brazilian Parliament in 1823. Perhaps they remembered in their exile the *Sic nos non vobis of Virgil*.

But the Andradas fell from power, and the Parliament having been fatally dissolved in November, 1823, they also were imprisoned and experienced unjust banishment.

The exiles and proscripts of November, 1822, returned to the bosom of their country,

Ledo was elected Deputy for Rio de Janeiro in the first two Legislatures of the Empire, that is from 1826 to 1833, and figured therein as an enlightened and superlative orator, at times a framer of the answer to the Speech from the Throne on account of his ability, in

florid and most appreciated style ; and was almost always the influential member in Committees of ways and means.

Disagreeing with the systematic opposition of the Liberals, of mild character, the friend of D. Pedro I, and oftven attentively listened to by him, of a doubtful position in the Chamber, almost always voting with the Ministers, Ledo lost little by little all his popularity, and was warmly attacked by the Liberal Press which considered him outside the lines of its party, and accused him of versatility and ambition.

That he was really ambitious is not proved by facts ; because with all his acknowledged ability he was never called to the Ministry, nor ever occupied any high official position outside the Chamber ; he was only a member of the Tribunal of the *Junta* of Commerce for some years.

Having lost the confidence of the Liberals, known as a personal friend of D. Pedro I, Ledo, after the 7th of April, 1831, retired and ceased to exert any influence in the Chamber.

In the third Legislature he was not re-elected, although he had met the Liberals half-way, being a most useful auxiliary to Bernardo Pereira de Vasconcellos when he was Minister of Finance.

In 1835 the Province of Rio de Janeiro elected him member of its Assembly in the first Legislature, re-electing him in the two following ones. Ledo performed most important services in that Assembly, being the best man of the Tribune and in the labors of the principal Committees.

Intimately connected, since 1832, with the great Statesman Vasconcellos, he greatly assisted him in his vigorous opposition to the Regent Feijó, writing short articles in

prose and verse, in which he chiefly wielded the weapon of ridicule with ability and grace.

Falling sick, and being disgusted with politics, he retired, once for all, to his estate of *Sumidouro*, in the municipality of Santo Antonio de Sá, now call'd Santa Anna de Macacú, and died there, on the 19th May, 1847, of an organic lesion of the heart. His body was transported to the Capital of the Empire, where it was buried.

His greatest annoyance was the failure of his endeavours, on two occasions, to enter the Senatorial Lists for Rio de Janeiro : he complained of the disloyalty of some of his political friends ; and this is conjectured from a letter he wrote to his nephew, in which he sent a note of his answer to José Clemente Pereira ; the letter is dated 6th May, 1867, and written from his estate of *Sumidouro*.

Joaquim Gonçalves Ledo shone in the Parliamentary Tribunal, he spoke, as he wrote, with precision, eloquence and a florid style, and what might be called smooth as satin ; he was a speaker of skilful courtesy and enchanting manner ; his words were always pronounced with an exaggerated refinement of purity in the accentuation of the syllables, and without contrariety the pauses were well placed ; they left his lips like a sweet and placid brook between banks covered with flowers.

He was pleasant and had a gracious spirit unexceptionable in the society of his friends ; he was very fond of festive meetings, and often gave banquets, in the very best taste, to families of his acquaintance ; also fetes campêstres on his estate of *Sumidouro*, and also on those of some of his most intimate friends ; it was wonderful to behold his ability for creating innocent and pleasant amusements.

He wrote a great deal, principally about the history of the Independence, and events and things of 1822, but his

letter of 6th May, 1847, informs us that all his precious manuscripts were destroyed and burnt, from a feeling of well-deserved independence, which desired that his past services might be forgotten.

He left unfinished a drama called *The Orphan*, which, either by accident, or because its three acts could scarcely be appreciated in its unrevised state, escaped the flames which devoured all the rest of his papers, amongst which were several from D. Pedro I, and some with dates of 1822, in which the then Prince Regent, in writing to him, addressed him as *My Ledo*.

Joaquim Gonçalves Ledo had, during the first reign, the title of Counsellor, the Dignitary of the Imperial Order of the Cruzeiro, and the commandership of the Order of Christ.



I OF NOVEMBER

JOÃO PAULO DOS SANTOS BARRETO

João Paulo dos Santos Barreto was born in the city of Rio de Janeiro on April 28th, 1788. He studied the humanities in his native city, and early gave proofs of the fine intellect with which he was endowed.

Dedicating himself to the military profession, he enlisted at 19 years of age in an artillery regiment, and was appointed sergeant.

The young soldier was favored neither by wealth nor by noble birth nor by influential friends ; but was encouraged and sustained by a consciousness of his ability and merit.

At that time army promotions were made by competitive examinations. Into this glorious arena laid open to merit he entered with ardor and advancing from triumph to triumph, reached the rank of 1st-lieutenant.

In 1818 he was captain of engineers; in 1821, major; two years afterwards lieutenant-colonel, and in 1826, colonel on the staff.

The sergeant of 1807 had risen rapidly. Many persons thought strange of such good fortune, and the colonel of 1826 did not escape the attacks of envy.

The system of promotion for merit could not be agreeable to those who, conscious of possessing none, prefer that the promotions should be regulated by the number of years of service.

Mediocrity which, if patronage lend it not wings, is fain to crawl, is a winding stairway which cannot tolerate the lofty and rapid flights of the eagle. Tell it that at the age of twenty-two the great Condé was general-in-chief at the battle of Rocroy, and it will answer with a knowing smile: — «Yes, *he* was a prince.» Assure it that Pitt was a minister at the age of twenty-three, and it will sneeringly reply: — «He was the son of Lord Chatham.» Remind it that Murat at 30 years of age was a distinguished general, and it will try to prove to you that merit had nothing to do with this, as Murat was thrown by chance on the surface amid the convulsionary throes of the great French revolution.

True to its narrow instincts mediocrity will never be convinced that Condé, Pitt and Murat were simply men of genius.

João Paulo dos Santos Barreto had risen rapidly, it is true; but it is no less true that he had deserved to do so. For application, energy and a vast and brilliant intellect he ranked among the first of his contemporaries.

Already in 1818 he had served in the army which put down the republican revolution of Pernambuco. In the same year he was appointed assistant professor in the military college. In the following he aided Gen. Stokler in studying

a system of fortifications for the defence of the province of Rio de Janeiro.

In 1821 he was sent to Terceira island for the purpose of examining and reorganizing the system employed there of teaching mathematics and military tactics. Thence he proceeded to Lisbon and Paris, commissioned to study practically the subjects of engineering and hydraulics. But soon the heroic exclamation at Ypiranga resounded across the waters, and found its echo in the young Brazilian's heart. Returning to his country, now an independent nation, in 1824, he was immediately appointed Secretary of the privy military council of the Emperor.

In 1831 the revolutionary elements introduced into the army implanted therein the germs of insubordination. Instead of being a national defence it became a national danger, and was disbanded by the meritorious government which ruled the destinies of the country at that period. The throne and the institutions of the country were confided to the direct guardianship of the nation, and every Brazilian citizen was converted into a soldier. In the capital of the empire some of the old army officers organized a battalion which João Paulo dos Santos Barreto had the honor of commanding.

After having been Minister of War for a short time in 1835, he continued to execute important commissions, and in 1840 was appointed commander-in-chief of the army in Rio Grande do Sul, where a fatal rebellion had proudly raised its head.

The distinguished officer showed himself worthy of the confidence reposed in his abilities. Leaving the towns and fortified places he took the open field against the rebels, took their artillery, munitions of war and horses, and drove them to the frontiers. If he did not entirely succeed in

putting an end to the war, he at least paved the way to this important result.

Four years afterwards, having served as president of the province of Minas Geraes from which he was called away to take his seat in the chambers, as deputy from Rio de Janeiro, leaving behind the memory of a just, mild and enlightened administration.

On May 22, 1845, he took his place in the ministry as Minister of War, and in this capacity rendered conspicuous services in the organization of the army. Again minister of war in 1848, he remained in power only four months. He continued, however, to the last day of his life, to devote himself with patriotic zeal to the service of his government and his country.

He inspected the powder factory, and suggested the necessary improvements; he was in 1849 president of the board for superintending the artillery practice, and in 1850 of that for improving the munitions of war; he inspected in 1855 the Rio de Janeiro arsenal; he was a member of the committee for revising the military legislature; and likewise in many other important commissions did he give proofs of his honesty and capacity.

He received from the Imperial Government, from literary men and from the country, unequivocal demonstrations of the highest esteem and profoundest respect.

He was doctor of mathematical and physical science, councillor of His Majesty the Emperor, Lord-in-waiting, grand marshall of the army, Councillor of State, grand-cross of the order of Aviz, officer of the order of the Cross, master of the Horse to the imperial household, and retired professor of the military college.

The province of Rio de Janeiro elected him twice to the Provincial, and once to the General Assembly.

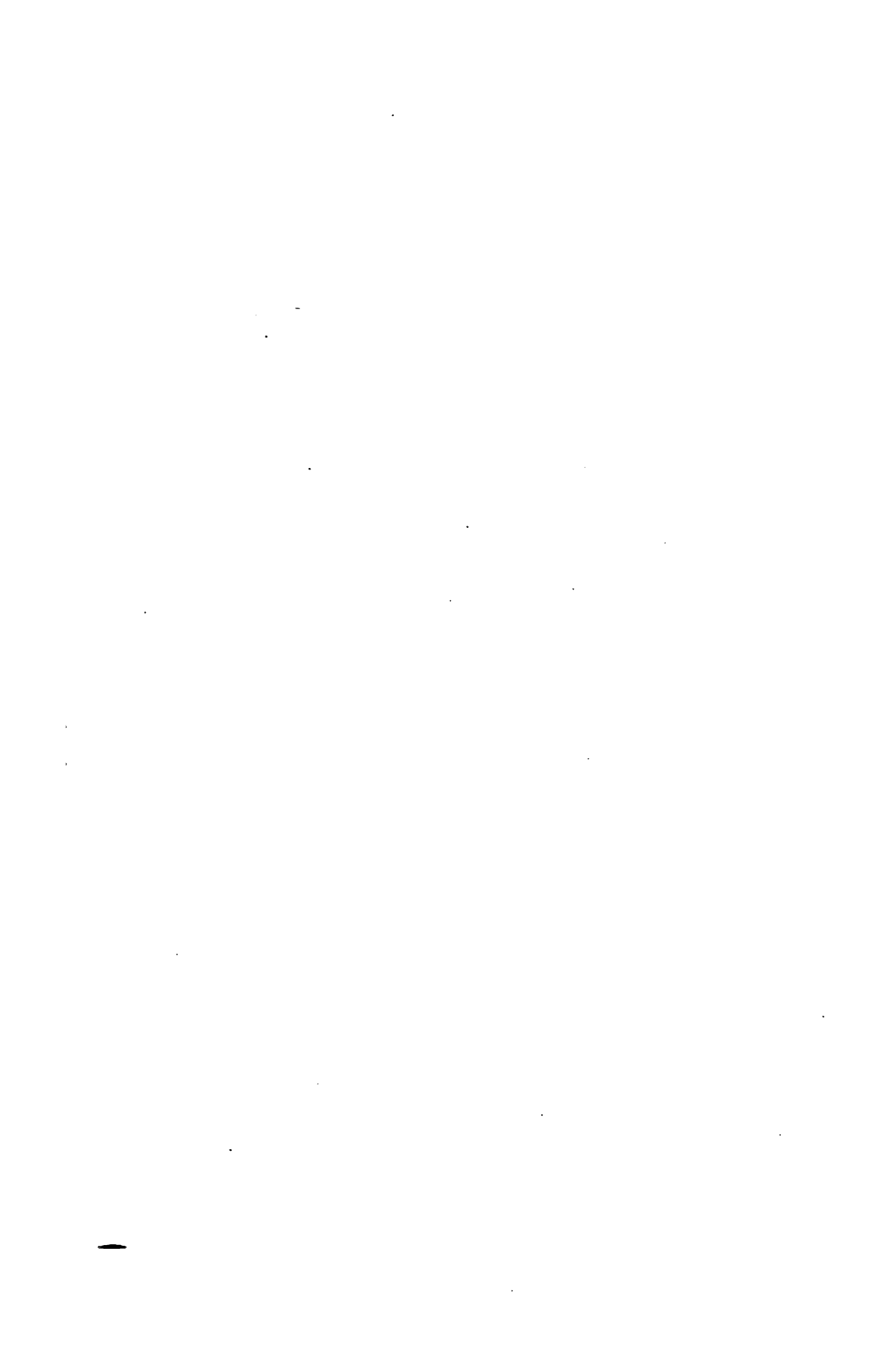
The Historical Institute and many other scientific bodies, both national and foreign, felt honored to count him among their members.

He was unquestionably an ornament to his country and an illustrious army officer profoundly versed in military science.

His general acquirements were numerous and varied. He was a sober, fluent and at times an eloquent orator. He was an agreeable conversationalist, and throughout his life, both in public and private affairs, was a model of honor and integrity.

He died on November 1, 1864, having lived 76 years of which 57 were spent in the service of his country. He was a meritorious citizen and soldier, and his memory should be honored and revered.





II OF NOVEMBER

PAULO JOSÉ DE MELLO AZEVEDO E BRITO

Paulo José Mello was a man of the highest order of merit, possessing a vast and brilliant intellect. He won the admiration of his contemporaries, by whom his poetical abilities were eulogized in the most flattering manner, and in his political and administrative career he had encouraging prospects, having attained to a seat in the senate.

Yet, either from culpable indifference, from excessive modesty, from systematic abstention or from a reserved disposition, extremely prejudicial to his country's interest, he left behind him a name barely remembered, though it had a right to be gloriously perpetuated.

He was born in Bahia in the last quarter of the 18th century.

He studied the preparatory branches and the humanities

in his native city, and acquitted himself honorably. Proceeding to Coimbra, he graduated in the University as bachelor of laws.

As soon as he had completed his studies he returned to Bahia, where he arrived on Nov. 2, 1803.

Embracing a juridical career, he soon established a reputation as a just and enlightened judge.

On the declaration of Brazilian independence which he had gladly welcomed, he was elected, after the adoption of the constitution in 1824, senator from the province of Bahia, having been chosen for this position in 1826.

He worthily filled several important offices, among others that of president of the province of Bahia, and enjoyed during his administration a well deserved reputation for justice, moderation and integrity.

A distinguished poet and a fertile writer, he labored with his pen a great deal; but only four or five of his poetical compositions were published, either in periodicals or separately. In the *Parnasso Lusitano* there is an *Epistle* of his production, which possesses unquestionable merit.

As a proof of his great poetical talent, and of the care which he bestowed on its culture, it is only necessary to remark that he won the praises of Francisco Manoel (Filinto Elysio) who was not very prodigal in the distribution of his eulogies.

In 1826 and the following years copies of delightful erotic and epigrammatic verses of Paulo José de Mello passed from hand to hand in the best poetical and literary circles of Rio de Janeiro and were highly appreciated by connoisseurs.

All these have been lost through indifference and neglect for which the poet himself was principally responsible.

In his old age Senator Paulo José de Mello wrote an Epithalamium celebrating the happy nuptials of the Emperor

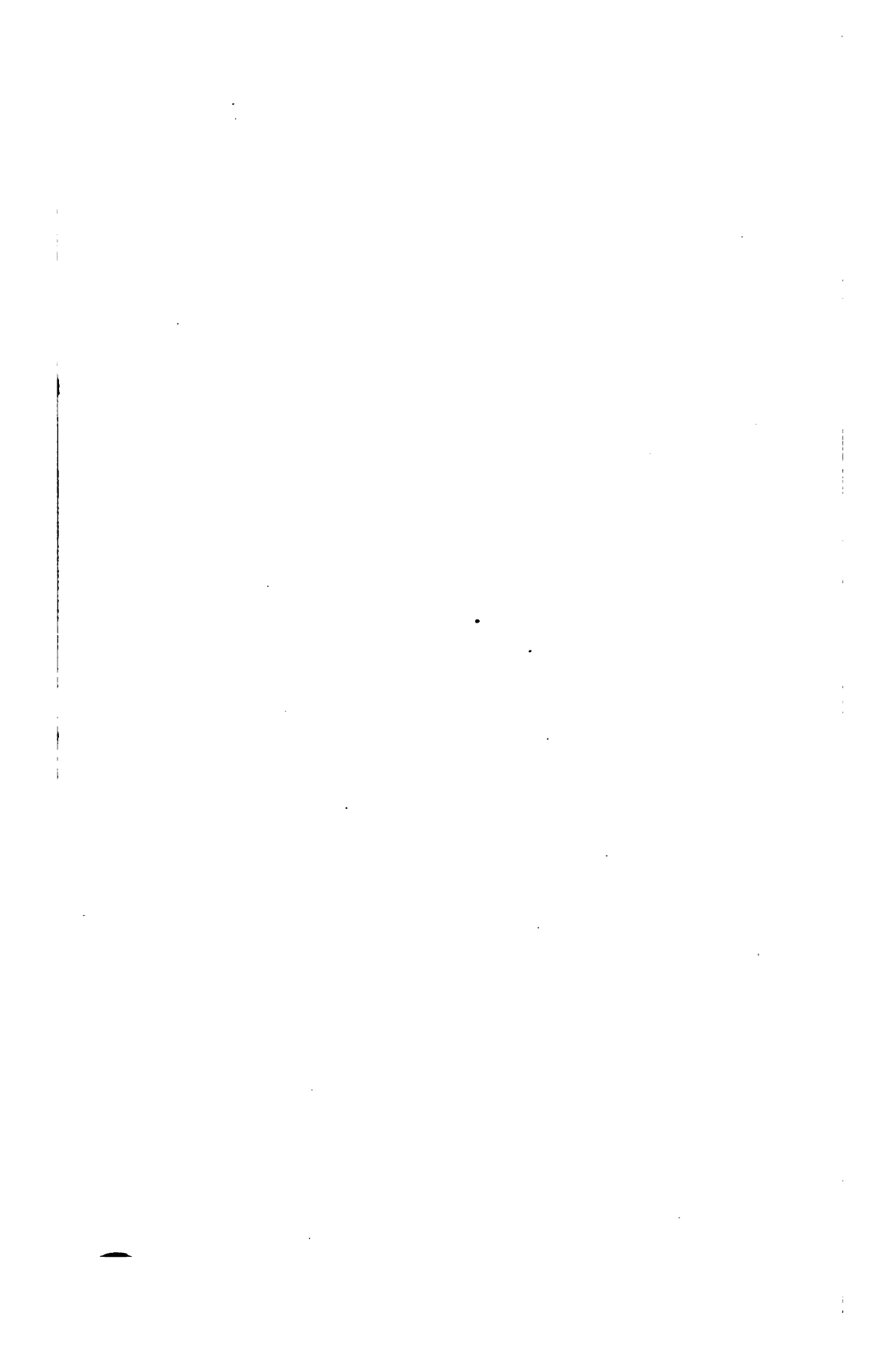
D. Pedro II. This poem and three birthday panegyrics, addressed to D. John VI and D. Pedro I, were published by Messrs. Laemmert in 1846, forming a small volume of 51 pages.

Paulo José de Mello e Azevedo e Brito died in the city of Rio de Janeiro in September, 1846.

What he lacked to complete his glory was to love it; for by his indifference, neglect or excessive modesty, he withheld from posterity the verses which he had written.

He was a great man, who condemned himself to be regarded by posterity as a little one.





III OF NOVEMBER

JOSÉ ANTONIO LISBÔA

Captain José Antonio Lisboa, having lost all he possessed in the Lisbon earthquake of November 1, 1755, came to Brazil, where he made a fortune in mercantile pursuits. His son, the subject of this sketch, also called José Antonio Lisboa, was born in the city of Rio de Janeiro on February 23, 1777.

In this city young Lisboa studied the primary branches and also Latin, philosophy and rhetoric. He was afterwards sent to Lisbon, where he prosecuted the study of mathematics in the college *Dos Nobres*.

In 1802 he proceeded to France, and after staying for some time in Paris, went to London, travelling for the purpose of acquiring information.

On his return to Portugal he was on the point of falling

into the hands of the inquisition on suspicion of having brought heterodox books from France; but warned of his danger, he embarked at once for Brazil.

On the arrival of the Portuguese royal family at Rio de Janeiro, which then became the capital of the monarchy, high courts of justice, and superior establishments of learning were instituted, among others the tribunal of the Board of Trade and a commercial college.

Of the latter Jose Antonio Lisboa was, by the Board of Trade, appointed professor, and his appointment having been confirmed by the prince-regent on January 23, 1810, he applied himself to his professorial duties with such zeal, proficiency and success, that he obtained the extraordinary favor of being allowed to retire with a pension at the end of eleven years, which permission was granted him by Decree of May 16, 1821.

On the 4th of the same month he had already been charged with examining the state of the Bank of Brazil whose affairs were in an insecure and unsatisfactory condition. He presented an able report containing a clear and correct exposition of the situation of the bank and a statement of its assets and liabilities.

The ability which he displayed in the execution of this difficult commission increased the confidence already felt in his financial and administrative acquirements and in his integrity.

In 1822 he was entrusted with the preparation of a statistical description of Brazil. He was afterwards placed on the finance committee of the chamber of deputies, although belonging himself to the other chamber. In 1828 he was occupied with the custom-house registry and in 1829 with the consular regulations.

Besides this he was a member of the Anglo-Brazilian and

Luso-Brazilian courts of claims, the latter to assess the damages mentioned in the 8th article of the treaty of Aug. 29, 1825, and the former to assess those caused to English vessels by the Brazilian blockading fleet in the River Plate during the war with the Argentine Confederation.

The method of conducting the business of one of these courts was arranged in accordance with a plan organized by him. In the other court he prepared a profound and masterly analysis of the memorandum of Lord Ponsonby, the English minister, causing a considerable reduction to be made in the claims against Brazil. The English Legation was so much annoyed by the successful skill with which he refuted its statements that it did not scruple to demand his dismissal, a demand which was vigorously resisted by the government of Brazil in the note of Sept. 4, 1830, addressed to the representative of Great Britain by the Minister Miguel Calmon Dupin e Almeida, afterwards Viscount and Marquis of Abrantes.

However, the English Legation was gratified by his withdrawal from the court of claims, for, on Oct. 2, 1830, he was called to a place in the Ministry, being entrusted with the Finance Department. He remained in office only till Nov. 3, when he retired from power from his unwillingness to pay, without the consent and approval of parliament, the expense incurred in virtue of the celebrated contract for furnishing munitions of war, made with the English merchant William Young.

In 1832 he was appointed, by decree of March 4, member of the committee for drafting the commercial code, and was author of the chapter on bills of exchange, which obtained the approval of his colleagues and of the government.

The financial position of Brazil had been very unfavorable ever since the latter years of the reign of D. Pedro I and

was aggravated still more by the depreciation of the circulating medium, which was reduced to paper and copper currency.

Competent men were chosen to study the matter and suggest a remedy ; among them was José Antonio Lisboa who presented the draft of a bill, printed in Rio de Janeiro in 1835, for adopting a new monetary standard and founding a bank.

José Antonio Lisboa died in Rio de Janeiro on July 29, 1850.

He was Imperial Councilor, commander of the Order of Christ, retired professor of the Commercial College, member of the Board of Trade, and member of the Brazilian Historical and Geographical Institute, in whose Quarterly Review he published the biography which he had written of his learned friend, Silvestre Pinheiro Ferreira.



IV OF NOVEMBER

MANOEL DE MELLO FRANCO

Manoel de Mello Franco was born on Jan. 31, 1812, in the town (now city) of Paracatú, Province of Minas Geraes, where he prosecuted his preparatory studies.

Having entered the São Paulo law school he was making rapid progress in his studies when he was seized in 1834 with a severe attack of a lung disease which forced him to interrupt his studies and take a trip to Europe.

When he reached the island of Madeira, his health was almost completely restored; but he wisely resolved to proceed to France and enter the Montpellier medical college, where the present venerable and learned Viscount of Prados was one of his fellow students, and a very intimate friend.

In 1836 his life was seriously endangered by a prolonged attack of inflammation of the liver.

Without hope of recovery, he set out for Brazil in order

to die in his native land ; but a few weeks after he found himself restored to perfect health.

The same year he returned to France, where the year after he took the degree of Doctor of medicine ; coming back to Rio de Janeiro, where he arrived on Oct. 23, 1837 ; he proceeded after a few months to Paracatú, and there fixed his residence.

Wide and enlightened views, an enthusiastic and excitable disposition, a strong will, untiring industry, a generous heart and inflexible perseverance, such were the principal qualities of Dr. Mello Franco, who not only dedicated himself to the practice of his profession, in which he became noted for the wonderful correctness of his views, in regard to cases on which he was required to express an opinion ; but also took on active part in politics, and in all questions relating to the welfare and progress of the country.

In Paracatú he filled several elective offices, and served as colonel in the National Guard.

Having been elected to the provincial assembly, he left Paracatú and took up his residence in Ouro Preto, the capital of the province.

He belonged to the Liberal party, in whose service no sacrifice seemed to him too great. When in 1842 the Liberal revolt broke out in Minas Geraes, Mello Franco was one of its leaders, and one of its most ardent champions. He entered into several engagements, and was captured at Santa Luzia, and kept in confinement at Ouro Preto for eighteen months, being at length tried and acquitted by the jury.

Some of the ladies of Diamantina, belonging to the best families of the place, who were enthusiastically attached to the liberal cause, presented him a ring made of their hair, to which every one contributed, and whose extremities were united and secured by a golden clasp, bearing the following

inscriptions :—« *July 26—Valor and Victory* »; « *August 29—Courage and Treachery.* » This historical memento is still preserved and highly prized by the worthy and virtuous widow of Dr. Mello Franco.

Although in confinement, Dr. Mello Franco was the soul of the Liberal press from 1842 to 1844. He contributed pecuniarily to the support of the printing-office which disseminated his opinions. These he manifested with unfaltering zeal and ardor, attacking the conquerors with a vigor that at times bordered on violence.

And such was the degree of esteem and confidence which he inspired that even his political opponents used their influence and solicitations with the newly appointed president of the province, General Andréa (afterwards Baron of Caçapava) to obtain permission for Dr. Mello Franco to leave prison at will for the purpose of visiting his patients.

At times somewhat eccentric and satirical, Dr. Mello Franco, as he afterwards laughingly used to tell, forced by a feeling of humanity to accept this favor of the president, imposed as a condition to this acceptance that when he visited a Liberal he should be allowed entire freedom from surveillance or restraint, but that when his visit was to a Conservative he should be strictly guarded.

It is probable, however, that he did not practically insist on the fulfillment of this condition, for he was constantly sought with unlimited confidence by Conservatives who carried him off to their houses to render his professional services to the members of their families who required them.

In Minas he continued to control and direct the press of his party till he was elected in 1844 to the Chamber of Deputies in which he took his seat in January, 1845.

He was re-elected in 1848, but the chamber was dissolved in the following year.

In the 8th legislature he returned to parliament as vice-deputy; and as deputy in the legislatures of 1861-63 and 1864-66.

The Liberal party being in power, Dr. Mello Franco supported the ministry till 1848, and rarely spoke. But when he was elected vice-deputy he took his seat by the side of Souza Franco who alone and unaided had during the session of 1850 brilliantly supported the Liberal cause against a unanimous Conservative chamber. It was then that the former began to display his ability as an opposition orator, speaking frequently during the sessions of 1851 and 1852.

He had not such a profound knowledge of political economy and of administrative science as his colleague and friend, nor did he ever indulge in flights of eloquence or make use of care and study in the preparation of his speeches.

He was an orator *sui generis*, who always succeeded in obtaining the attention even of his opponents and who became extremely popular as a speaker. As soon as he rose to speak, he commenced a vigorous onslaught on his opponents, denouncing in no measured terms the errors and abuses of which he deemed them guilty. There was nothing flowery in his speeches; on the contrary they were full of terrible thorns, as the ministers learned to their cost.

His language was plain and unpolished, and his words burnt like a red-hot iron. He attacked without mercy, and resisted with inflexible fortitude.

After exhausting his stock of arguments he would resort to sarcasm, and fearless and unshaken, would pour forth a perfect storm of censure on the devoted heads of

his opponents who formed at that time almost the entire chamber of deputies.

In these famous sessions of parliament did the herculean force and courage of Mello Franco form, so to speak, the complement of Souza Franco's consummate skill and science in conducting one of the most glorious parliamentary campaigns on record in Brazil.

After leaving parliament he was seized with a severe spell of sickness which almost carried him to his grave; but once more his strong constitution triumphed over disease, though it was terribly shattered in the struggle and rendered him unable to resist the illness to which he finally fell a victim.

In 1856 he fixed his residence in Petropolis and took charge of one of the sections of the *União e Industria* road, and managed its affairs with the utmost ability, leaving them in perfect order when he retired in 1858.

From Petropolis he removed to Rio de Janeiro where he established a large commission house for receiving consignments of coffee, in partnership with the Baron of Pitanguy and with his son Joaquim de Mello Franco, who is now the sole and worthy representative of the house.

Having been again attacked with the disease of the brain, whose first attack had nearly proved fatal, Dr. Manoel de MelloFranco expired on November 3, 1871, after a painful illness of several months' duration. On the following day, November 4, a numerous attendance of his political and private friends accompanied his remains to their last resting-place in the cemetery of S. Francisco de Paula in the city of Rio de Janeiro.

An exemplary husband and father, a man of pure morality, a useful citizen and one of the firmest, most independent and disinterested of Liberal politicians, Dr. Mello

Franco was besides an able, scientific and benevolent practitioner.

His wealth rendered him independent of his profession, but he continued to practice from choice and from regard to his friends and charity to the poor.

Distinguished for his able and enlightened intellect, he was still more so for his generous and magnanimous heart.



V OF NOVEMBER

JOAQUIM CANDIDO SOARES DE MEIRELLES

Joaquim Candido Soares de Meirelles was the legitimate son of the surgeon Manoel Soares de Meirelles. He was born on November 5, 1777, at Santa Luzia do Sabará, Province of Minas Geraes. From his father he inherited an inclination for the medical profession and those medical talents which won for him such renown in Brazil and particularly in the capital of the Empire. In the Seminary of São José in this city he distinguished himself in the study of the humanities, and in 1819 entered the Medical and Surgical College after having passed through the examination required at that time. In 1822 he entered the army as assistant-surgeon of the rifle battalion and was afterwards appointed surgeon of the cavalry regiment of Minas-Geraes. He rendered important services to his native province, orga-

nizing the military hospital at Ouro Preto and treating the sick during the terrible epidemic which then raged in the province.

So great was his skill, activity and success in the treatment of the epidemic cases that in 1825, where he was in Rio de Janeiro, the epidemic again breaking out at Ouro Preto, the respective municipal chamber requested the government to send Dr. Meirelles to combat the disease.

But in 1825 Dr. Meirelles went to Europe as a State pensioner for the purpose of developing and perfecting in France the medical knowledge which he had acquired at the college in Rio de Janeiro. In Paris his time was principally employed in frequenting the military hospitals, in the practical study of anatomy, in attending able and instructive lectures by day and in assiduous study of appropriate books at night. In two years he had completed his observations and obtained diplomas from the French Academy as Surgeon and Physician. He, therefore, hastened his departure for his native land.

The love of science had cost Dr. Meirelles severe trials, as he himself afterwards laughingly related. The following are his own words to which he gave utterance in 1825: — « I was already a husband and father. Of the fifty mil reis in Portuguese currency, which I received as a pension from the government, I put by half for my wife and children. With the remaining twenty-five I had to pay for tuition and to buy books and anatomical subjects. During the week days I lived on very little, my nourishment consisting of fruit and bread; but on Sundays I repaid myself for my abstinence by dining out with Paulo Barbosa, José Marcellino Gonçalves, captain-major José Joaquim da Rocha or the Viscount of São Lourenço. These Sundays were days of great enjoyment to me — real days of festivity, not so much on

account of the good dinners as from the pleasure we experienced in talking of home. »

In 1828 Dr. Meirelles, not content with the large city practice which his fame and the constant proofs of his skill and science brought him, solicited and obtained the charge of a ward in the hospital of the Santa Casa da Misericordia, where he gratuitously and freely gave the benefit of his talents, learning and experience to those who needed them.

Wishing to elevate the medical profession, advance the study of medicine in Brazil and unite the physicians in the bonds of real fraternity, Dr. Meirelles conceived the project of founding a society for the purpose of realizing these objects. It commenced on a very modest scale, consisting at first merely of four or five friends who met at his house; but, after overcoming inexplicable obstacles, and allaying the suspicion of its being a revolutionary club, it began to flourish, and in 1830, on April 24th, was regularly organized under the name of the Imperial Academy of Medicine.

Initiator of the idea and its firm upholder, Dr. Meirelles deserves to be considered the founder of this establishment, of which he was for several years the worthy president.

He also contributed with his suggestions to the improvement of the Medical and Surgical College which was reorganized on a wider basis under the name of the Medical School. The plan of reorganization was principally his work; but like Virgil he had a right to say « *vos ego versiculos feci, tulit alter honores* », for he was not appointed professor of the Medical School of Rio de Janeiro.

As a consolation for the ungrateful forgetfulness of the government of his country, he received some years afterwards a proposal from one of the republics on the Pacific Coast (which, however, he did not accept) to establish there a Medical School.

The closing period of his life was honorable and worthy.

Of him it might be said what Antonio Carlos, the Brazilian Mirabeau, provoked into a display of excusable pride, once said of himself:—« This sun at its setting is as brilliant as it was when in its meridian splendor. »

Aged and fatigued with the cares and labors of a busy life, the illustrious physician was appointed Surgeon-general of the Navy, an office in which he continued to display the utmost solicitude for the public service, improving the administrative regulations and customs which he found in vogue, economizing the public monies, enforcing the necessary hygienic principles, and setting a praiseworthy example by the scrupulous and energetic performance of his duties.

In 1865, rejuvenated by patriotic enthusiasm, blind to the ravages of age, and deaf to the claims of a justifiable love of ease, seeing and hearing only the call of his affronted country, and following the noble example of the Emperor, he accompanied the monarch on his glorious journey from Rio de Janeiro to Porto Alegre and Uruguayana, where the foreign invader humbled himself and gave up his arms without the shedding of a drop of blood to mar the victory which crowned one of the most admirable and patriotic deeds of the first citizen of the Empire.

In this honorable though easy campaign, in which, however, there was no lack of hardships and privations, Dr. Meirelles only escaped death to advance surely and steadily to the grave which yawned before him. Stricken down by typhus, he was snatched from the jaws of death and restored to life. But to what sort of life? To a life which his knowledge as a physician told him was only a step from death, whose approach he detected in every pulsation of his heart and in every twitch of his nerves, in the sufferings he

endured and in the palpable fact that his constitution was completely destroyed.

The devotion of Dr. Meirelles to the cause of science and to his professional duties did not cause him to neglect the calls of patriotism. He lived as it were two separate lives, one consecrated to his profession and the other to politics.

On January 2d, 1812, he it was who hurried to the theatre of S. João, afterwards S. Pedro de Alcantara, to inform the Prince that the Portuguese troops headed by Jorge de Avillez, had broken out into armed revolt when they were informed of the Prince's resolution to remain in spite of the orders which he had received from Portugal.

In 1840 he was one of the ablest supporters of the proposition to declare the Emperor of age, and the services which he rendered this cause were not exceeded by those of any other of its adherents.

In 1842 the country was agitated by violent party feeling and political commotions. Dr. Meirelles was banished to Europe in company with Councillor Limpo de Abreu, afterwards Viscount of Abaeté, Councillor Salles Torres-Homen, afterwards Viscount of Inhomirim, and other political celebrities. But returning to Rio de Janeiro, he did not find a single judge or tribunal disposed to call him to account, and his restoration to his offices and honors removed all traces of suspicion of his conduct.

Member of the provincial assembly of Rio de Janeiro at one period, and deputy from Minas Geraes in the General Assembly at another, Dr. Meirelles was distinguished as a loyal, thorough and energetic champion of liberal principles, and of a constitutional representative monarchy.

He had been honored with the title of Councillor, the cross of the Cruzader, those of the orders of the Rose and

São Bento de Aviz, and the medal commemorating the capitulation at Uruguayana.

Besides these rewards for services rendered, these favors with which royalty honors merit, Councillor Joaquim Candido Soares de Meirelles enjoyed the confidence and esteem of H. M. the Emperor and his august family, and was physician of the Imperial household.

In the republic of letters he was honored with the utmost regard ; he was honorary member of the Imperial Academy of Medicine, corresponding member of the Brazilian Historical and Geographical Society, and of many literary and scientific societies in Brazil and in Europe.

Councillor Joaquim Candido Soares de Meirelles died on July 13th, 1868.

VI OF NOVEMBER

FRANCISCO DE ALMEIDA

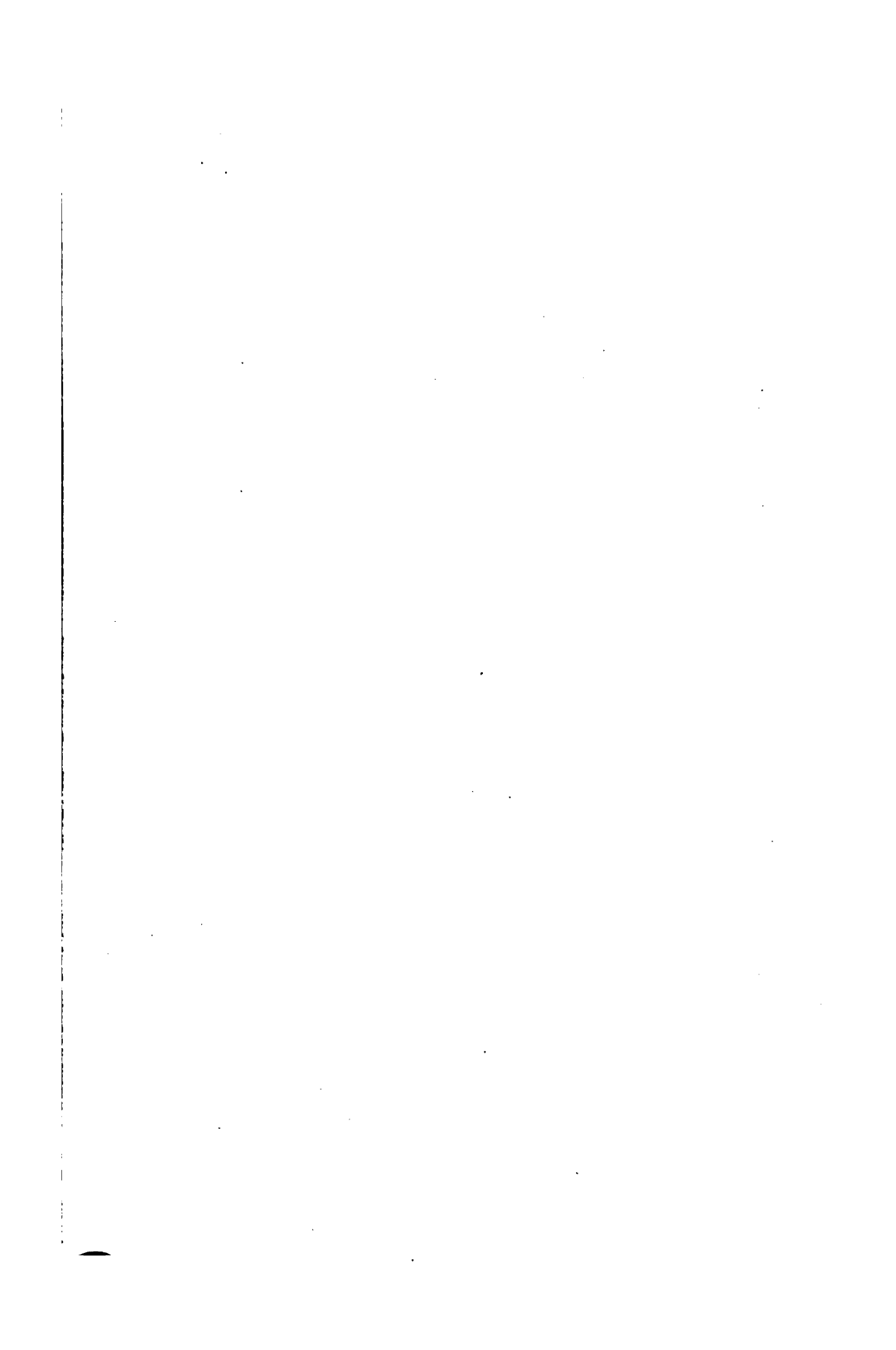
Francisco de Almeida was born in the year 1724. Having been invited to enter their order by Jesuit priests who admired his talents, he had time to be initiated therein before the promulgation of the decree by which the Marquis of Pombal succeeded in effecting the banishment of the sect from the kingdom of Portugal and its possessions.

Father Francisco de Almeida was greatly esteemed and admired for his poetical talent by his contemporaries.

He wrote with equal ease both Latin and Portuguese verse.

A fine specimen of the former is his poem *Orpheus Brazilianus* written in honor of the venerable Father José de Anchieta, justly the pride of the Jesuits in Brazil.

The name of Francisco de Almeida, in default of other dates is here registered on the 6th of November.



VII OF NOVEMBER

JOSÉ VIEIRA DO COUTO

José Vieira do Couto was born in Rio de Janeiro in 1762. Having studied the humanities in the same city and given proof of a high order of intellectual capacity, he was sent by his family to Portugal, where he completed and perfected his preparatory studies, and afterwards graduated in the philosophical and mathematical branches at the Coimbra University.

So great was the reputation which he obtained at the University as a learned mathematician and literateur, that the government gave him a professorship in that establishment.

At that time Coimbra was the hot-bed of liberal doctrines, which, imported from revolutionary France, were eagerly welcomed, cultivated and disseminated by the ardent, youthful and generous spirits who frequented the University.

Vieira do Couto was a liberal, and what was worse for him was suspected of being a *free-mason*, and was therefore banished to Ferreira island, where, discontented and mortified in consequence of this unjust persecution, he died in 1811.

In default of certain dates, his name is here registered on the 7th of November.

He wrote the following works :

Description of the Saltpetre mines of Monte Rodrigo, etc ;

Description of the Mines of the Captaincy of Minas Geraes, their Locality, Assays, etc.

Description of the Captaincy of Minas Geraes, its territory, Mineral Productions, Climate, etc.

The first was printed at the Royal Printing-Office in Rio de Janeiro in 1809 ; the second under the auspices of the Brazilian Historical and Geographical Institute at the Universal Printing-Office of Laemmert of Rio de Janeiro in 1842, and the third in the Quarterly Review of that Institute in 1848.



VIII OF NOVEMBER

JOSÉ LEANDRO DE CARVALHO



Among the scientific, literary and artistic celebrities which the Portuguese court found on its arrival at Rio de Janeiro in 1808, José Leandro de Carvalho has been distinguished by historians and chroniclers as a portrait-painter of wonderful merit.

He was born in the 18th century, posterior to the year 1750, in a place called Muriqui, in the parish of São João de Itaboraí. His name is not found in the baptismal registry, which is not astonishing in view of the neglect with which this important duty was treated. Many of his relatives, however, still exist, and, according to their testimony, he was the legitimate son of Angelo de Carvalho and Antonia Francisca das Chagas.

José Leandro, who was never out of Brazil, studied painting with the artists then in Rio de Janeiro, all of whom

received pupils in their studios, and in a short time he became the rival of his friend, Leandro Joaquim, of Manoel da Cunha and of Raymundo.

He painted on the ceiling of the church of Senhor Bom Jesus a picture of the *Ascension*, which has since disappeared under the white-washer's brush.

He painted on cloth (a style of painting in which he excelled) beautiful figures of the prophets for the altar-cloths of the church of São Francisco de Paula during Lent.

He had the pleasure of painting the decorations of the church of his native parish, and to this day, at the corner of the Rua da Carioca may be seen the little house where he lived while he executed this work of which not a vestige now remains.

A competent authority, the present Baron of Santo Angelo, writes of José Leandro as follows :

« He was an indefatigable worker, and there is scarcely an oratory in this city (Rio de Janeiro) that does not possess a *Saint* or a *Lady of Conception* executed by him. »

But it was in portraits that he excelled, being able in some cases to paint them perfectly from memory.

The worthy biographer of the distinguished artist, Manoel Duarte Moreira de Azevedo, relates that José Leandro, having seen the prince-regent D. John for the first time in the procession of *Corpus-Christi*, eight days afterwards exhibited in his house the most perfect portrait of the prince that had been taken in Brazil.

Having been afterwards summoned to the city palace and to that of the *Quinta da Boa Vista*, he took other portraits of D. John and also of all the princes and princesses of the royal family.

It having been resolved to improve and ornament the royal chapel, it was determined that the chief altar-piece

should represent the royal family, and that the painting thereof should be given to the artist who should be victorious in a trial of skill prepared for this purpose. The competitors were Leandro José and an Italian artist.

The contest was decided in favor of the former by the prince-regent himself, and the work of the artist may still be seen, having been restored after being barbarously desecrated.

For the ceremony of consecrating and crowning the prince-regent, who succeeded his mother, D. Maria I, on the throne, José Leandro painted the two apostles which ornament the pilasters of the royal chapel.

As a scene-painter of the theatre São João he disputed the supremacy with Manoel da Costa, at that time the most famous painter of this class.

After 1822 the inspired artist continued to gather fresh laurels until 1831, when he was the victim of a dire misfortune.

Shortly after the abdication of the Emperor D. Pedro I, on the 7th of April, orders were given for erasing the painting of the altar-piece of the royal chapel. It is said by some that José Leandro witnessed this act of vandalism, and by others that he himself was required to perform it.

He could not survive this cruel stroke of fortune. Overcome by his trouble, he fell into a decline, and finally died on the 8th of November, 1831; and on the following day his body, swung in a wretched hammock, was carried to the church of São Francisco de Paula.

In 1850 the painting of the altar-piece was restored.

José Leandro left several children, one of whom bore his name, and was, though much inferior to his father, an artist of some merit as a painter of flowers and landscapes.

IX OF NOVEMBER

DOMINGOS CALDAS BARBOSA

Domingos Caldas Barboza was the son of a Portuguese and an African Negress, and according to the statement of Canon Januario da Cunha Barboza, was born at sea, when his father accompanied by his mother, in an advanced state of pregnancy, was returning from Angora to Rio de Janeiro, or in the latter place as is stated by the present Viscount of Porto Seguro, who founds his belief on some of Caldas' verses, on the declarations of several of the relatives of a Portuguese nobleman, who was a generous patron of the poor poet, and on the testimony of Father José Agostinho de Macedo.

The better founded of the two opinions seems to be that of the Viscount of Porto Seguro, which is stated at length in an excellent biography published in the 14th volume of the Brazilian Historical Institute; but in any case by residence,

education, feelings, and his own oft-repeated declarations Domingos Caldas Barboza belonged to Brazil.

Acknowledged by his father and tenderly reared, he studied in Rio de Janeiro at the Jesuit School, disputing the supremacy in his class with the most talented and industrious students; but given to humorous and satirical verse, he made enemies and had the misfortune to offend persons of high position and great influence.

His humble origin and his color were considered *aggravating circumstances of the crime*, and he was obliged to enlist in the army. He was sent to the colony of Sacramento, where he remained till it fell into the hands of the Spaniards in 1762. On his return to Rio de Janeiro he was discharged from the army, and, with his father's assistance made his way to Portugal, where he lived on his narrow means, probably seeking a patron, and endeavoring to acquire further instruction.

His poetry was just beginning to obtain some reputation when, in Vianna, Caldas received news that his father was dead and, that consequently he was left all alone in the world.

Fortunately a noble gentleman came shortly afterwards to his assistance.

José de Vasconcellos e Souza, a magistrate, afterwards Count of Pombeiro, welcomed him first to the house of his father, the Marquis of Castello Melhor, and, after his marriage, to his own apartments at Bemposta. He caused him to be admitted into holy orders, and obtained for him a benefice and the place of Chaplain of the Supreme Court.

Thus sheltered from the cold, bitter winds of poverty, and enjoying to a certain extent the smiles of fortune, Caldas Barboza undoubtedly subjected himself systematically to the kind of life in which the accident of color and

the remembrance of his origin would cause him least mortification among the rich and noble families of Portugal. As he played the *viola* well, and was no despicable singer of *modinhas* and *lundus*, he was gladly welcomed into the best houses of the kingdom.

Continuing always to compose poetry, he never had any pretention to the rank of a great poet ; on the contrary, he was always modest and humble, *superior*, as the Viscount of Porto Seguro well observes, *to any feeling of envy or rivalry towards his brother-poets*, to some of whom he rendered many services.

To his benefactor he was always grateful, never causing him the least annoyance, except by his pardonable disobedience to the former's injunction to refrain from eulogizing him or any of his family, this being an order which he was constantly neglecting in a manner wholly unaccountable and incompatible with his usual obedience.

On a trip to Italy he was admitted into the *Arcadia* at Rome under the pseudonym of Lereno. He also had the honor of being one of the founders of the *New Arcadia* at Lisbon.

He won the praise of José Agostinho de Macedo, Belchior Curvo Semedo, and other poets of his time.

But Bocage, although for awhile his intimate friend, Filinto Elysio and some others attacked him without mercy and in a manner unworthy of poets of a superior order of merit, such as they were, calling him the *Dusky-Troubadour*, *Orang-outang*, etc.

Domingos Caldas Barboza died at the palace of the Count of Pombeiro, in the sixtieth year of his age, on the 9th of November, 1800.

Innocencio Francisco da Silva, the learned and meritorious author of the Portuguese Biographical Dictionary, says

very truly and appropriately that Caldas Barboza, *although he could not be considered a poet of genius, or of wonderful powers of imagination, displayed in his verse ease, correctness and elegance.*

The *lundus* and songs which he often improvised to the sound of his *viola* are criticised for the common-place phrases and apparent absurdities which they contain, such as, for instance :

« Meu bem está mal com eu »

« Gentes de bem pegou nelle » etc.

But such *absurdities*, of which the poet was incapable of seriously making use, were evidently intended to amuse the aristocratic hearers of the singer of *lundus*, by an imitation of the incorrect and laughable language of the common people.

It would be cruel injustice to gauge the poetical merit of Domingos Caldas Barboza, by the improvised verses which he sang to the accompaniment of his *viola*, for the entertainment of his hosts and their guests at the houses which he visited.

He left numerous compositions which prove his poetical talent, and a certain originality which distinguished him, though it could not raise him to the height of Filinto, who, instead of criticizing, shamefully reviled him, or of Bocage who treated him with so much ingratitude.



X OF NOVEMBER

**ANTONIO CARLOS RIBEIRO DE ANDRADA
MACHADO E SILVA**

The subject of this sketch was the legitimate son of Colonel Bonifacio José de Andrada, and of D. Maria Barbara da Silva, and was born in Santos on the 1st of November, 1773.

Brother to José Bonifacio and Martim Francisco, he was like them one of the heroes of Brazilian independence.

He completed his preparatory studies in Santos, and studied the humanities in São Paulo, under the direction of the virtuous bishop D. Manoel da Resurreição, and went to Coimbra where he graduated with high honors, as bachelor of laws.

Endowed with an admirable intellect, an ardent imagination, and an extraordinary memory, he did not limit himself to the study of the law, but when he left college aston-

ished every one by his vast literary, philosophical and historical acquirements.

He chose a judicial career, serving as municipal judge of Santos, and in 1815 went to Pernambuco, where he had been appointed district judge and corregidor of the district of Olindo. Shortly afterwards he was appointed to the bench of the Superior Court of Bahia, but remained in Pernambuco, where he continued to hold the two above-named offices.

His judicial career terminated in 1819. He had distinguished himself therein by his enlightened views and his strict integrity, which was so zealously guarded that, while a magistrate, he refused to accept even insignificant presents from friends.

When the republican revolution broke out in Pernambuco on March 6, 1817, he was appointed a member of the executive committee of the revolutionary government. He was not in Olinda at the time, but on his arrival accepted the duty assigned him and exercised considerable influence in directing the revolutionary movement.

A supporter of principles at that time considered ultra-liberal, endowed with an ardent disposition, warm-hearted, enthusiastic and impulsive, Antonio Carlos had no hand in the revolutionary plot; but, having been appointed a member of the executive committee and being flattered, caressed and persuaded by the revolutionary leaders, he had the imprudence, which in him was double, as he had serious misgivings concerning the success of the movement, to allow himself to be connected with the revolution.

This fact, however, may be easily explained. Antonio was the intellectual superior of the principal men in Pernambuco. His house was a sort of school for the teaching of

democratic principles, and his popularity was extremely great.

On the breaking out of the revolution, if he had failed to enroll himself among the armed defenders of the doctrines he taught, would he not have seemed to be governed by a fear of the consequences ?

Antonio Carlos was courage personified, and this virtue was developed and intensified by his lofty and sensitive disposition.

The revolution having been overcome and crushed, Antonio was sent a prisoner to Bahia on the vessel *Mercurio*, with twenty-nine of his companions in misfortune, and there kept in confinement until 1821.

Expecting to share the fate of his friends who had perished on the scaffold, Antonio Carlos, with lofty courage and resignation, almost welcomed death in an inspired poem containing the following beautiful lines :

« Sagrada emanção da divindade,
Aqui do cadafalso eu te saúdo !
.....
.....
Livre nasci, vivi, e livre espero
Encerrar-me na fria sepultura,
Onde imperio não tem mando severo,
Nem da morte a medonha catadura
Incutir póde horror n'um peito frio,
Que aos fracos somente a morte é dura !

Tried and condemned, he did not allow his courage to give way. His dungeon was converted into a school in which his well-stored mind was a real cyclopedia of information and instruction for his companions.

D. John VI offered him his liberty, if he would sue for pardon. With fearless dignity Andrada answered : — « Par-

don I will implore my Maker to grant me for my sins ; of the King I ask only justice.»

The Portuguese revolution of 1820 produced a general amnesty in Bahia.

Antonio Carlos was set at liberty in 1821, and was shortly afterwards elected by the province of S. Paulo deputy to the Portuguese Constituent Assembly, when his brilliant eloquence soon rendered him conspicuous.

Immediately after its convocation in 1821, and throughout the year 1822, that assembly initiated and persistently maintained a hostile bearing towards Brazil. In 1821 it destroyed the centralisation of the provinces, severing the administrative ties which bound them to the capital and connecting them directly with the court of Lisbon, suppressing the higher courts of justice established in Brazil and decreeing the return of the prince-regent D. Pedro to Europe.

In 1822 this hostile policy was carried still further in consequence of the revolutionary tendency in Brazil sanctioned by the prince-regent's disobedience (openly declared on the 9th of January) to the decree abolishing the regency and recalling him to Europe to perfect his education by travel through the countries of the old world.

During these two years, Antonio Carlos was the eloquent, daring and ardent champion of the rights, dignity and independence of his native land.

In 1822 his fiery and patriotic eloquence reached the extreme point of audacity.

Interrupted, insulted and threatened in the midst of his speeches by the common people in galleries of the constituent assembly, the great Brazilian paladin, far from allowing himself to be cowed by these demonstrations, was by

them stimulated into greater vehemence and more ardent zeal.

Refusing to sign the new constitution of Portugal and renouncing his seat in the assembly in view of his country's declaration of independence, he embarked with six other deputies on board an English vessel, and, arriving at Falmouth, drew up and published the celebrated manifesto of October 22, which was also signed by his illustrious companions, explaining the motives which had induced them to withdraw from the Lisbon Côrtes.

In 1823 Antonio Carlos was the master-spirit of the Brazilian Constituent assembly; he was the most eloquent and influential orator of this august body, and was moreover chairman of the committee which presented a draft of the constitution to be adopted.

On July 17 the Emperor dismissed the Andrada ministry. The new cabinet which contained some members of elevated merit and acknowledged moderation in their views, such as Carneiro de Campos (afterwards Marquis of Caravellas) and Nogueira da Gama (afterwards Marquis of Baependy) adopted at once, on an extremely delicate point, a policy entirely opposed to that of the preceding government.

The Andrada Ministry was characterized by its anti-Portuguese opinions; that of July 17 went to the opposite extreme.

The Minister of War on the 2d of August issued an order incorporating with the army the Portuguese prisoners of war, who had been taken in the Bahia campaign. This act in connection with others of the same kind excited strong opposition.

The feeling of rivalry between the two nationalities was reawakened.

In the army a large number of the officers were born in

Portugal, and the military element interfered in the political question. A personal question which arose produced the effect of a spark on dry tinder.

A Brazilian who had been ill-treated by two Portuguese officers complained to the constituent assembly. The complaint was remitted to a committee which reported that no action should be taken by the assembly on the question, and that the complainant should resort to the usual process of obtaining redress in such cases.

A discussion ensued, and in the ranks of the opposition Antonio Carlos made, on November 10th, the famous speech in which he made use of the following ardent and thrilling expressions :

« What do we behold, Mr. President? An outrage on the Brazilian name and no sign of marked disapproval in the midst of the nation's representatives?

« The lukewarm silence of death, born of constraint, binds the tongue, or the still more criminal smile of indifference rests on the countenance. Good Heavens! and are we representatives?

« No! we are nothing if we stupidly look on and behold outrages perpetrated, without redress, on the noble Brazilian people, by foreigners whom we have adopted and taken into our pay to cover us with insults! . . .

« . . . The blood boils in my veins and the hairs of my head stand on end at the sight of so heinous an offence, and almost mechanically, I cry for vengeance! If we cannot save the honor of our people, and if it be the incapacity, and not the treachery, of the government that encourages bandits and assassins, let us say to the deluded people which confides in its representatives : — *Brazilians! we are unable to protect your lives and your honor; take their defence into your own hands and avenge yourselves your outraged rights!*

But can men in our position use such language as this?... No!... at least I for my part will endeavor, while life remains to deserve the confidence with which the noble Brazilian people have honored me. I may be assassinated. It will not be the first time a defender of the people has been a martyr to his patriotism. But my blood will cry for vengeance, and my name will go down to posterity as that of the avenger of his country's honor. »

The intervention of the soldiery was audacious and unconcealed, going to the length of presenting to the Emperor a demand for the *exclusion of the Andradas from the Assembly*.

On November 12th, the constituent assembly was dissolved, and the chamber was surrounded by troops. On leaving it, Antonio Carlos (with some other deputies) was arrested. In charge of the guard he passed by a piece of artillery. Striking it on the breech with his hand, he laughingly exclaimed: — « Respect for the mistress of the world ! »

He remained in exile in France for four years. In 1828, he was permitted to return to Brazil; but, on his arrival, was arrested and tried, being finally acquitted by the Superior Court of Rio de Janeiro on September 6, of the same year.

From 1828 to 1831 Antonio Carlos lived in retirement at Santos, ungratefully forgotten by his countrymen in the election of deputies to the 2d legislature.

In 1831 the permanent regency appointed him envoy extraordinary and minister plenipotentiary to the court of St. James, but he would not accept the high diplomatic mission that was offered him.

Opposing the moderate liberals who then held office, he was engaged in a newspaper controversy with Evaristo da Veiga who censured him in his paper, the *Aurora Fluminense*. To these censures he published answers which were

issued gradually and which contained, besides great erudition, keen sarcasm and contemptuous expressions, which the magic of his eloquence cause one to overlook.

He was assailed by the moderate-liberal and ministerial press as one of the leaders of the Restoration party, and, on his setting out for Europe, it was generally believed that he had crossed the ocean for the purpose of persuading the ex-Emperor D. Pedro I to return to Brazil. This belief seems to have been well-founded, though the question is not as clear as could be wished.

The famous parliamentary orator returned to Brazil in 1835 and in 1838, reappeared in parliament, having been elected to the fourth legislature, which was noted for the talent it contained, numbering amongst its members Vasconcellos, Calmon (afterwards Marquis of Abrantes), Montezuma, Honório Hermeto, Limpo de Abreu, Maciel Monteiro, Rodrigues Torres, Rebouças, Sinimbu, and other great orators. But it is no depreciation of any of those illustrious statesmen to affirm what is merely the simple truth, that they were all eclipsed by the glorious splendor of the eloquent sexagenarian.

From the close of 1838 to 1841 Antonio Carlos, true to his nature, ardently and violently opposed the Conservative ministry.

He frequently carried everything before him with his irresistible torrents of eloquence, wit and sarcasm, particularly in his unstudied replies to remarks made in the midst of the debates.

Wounded in his pride, he would retort with a display of haughtiness and egotism, couched in eloquent and vigorous language that never failed to win a storm of applause from his audience.

One day, in 1839, the ex-Minister of War, Sebastião do

Rego Barros, responding to a vehement discourse of the fiery veteran, alluded to his advanced age in the following words :— « The sun itself has its decline. »

Aglow with the flame of parliamentary majesty, Antonio Carlos replied :— « But this sun at its setting is as brilliant as when in its meridian splendor. »

In 1840 he was the parliamentary leader of the movement for declaring the Emperor of age. On July 22, after the reading of the Decrees appointing Bernardo Pereira de Vasconcellos minister of the Empire and adjourning the sittings of the General Assembly, Antonio Carlos made a violent harangue, and placing himself at the head of his partisans in the chamber, and accompanied by a large concourse of people lead them to the Senate Chamber to demand that the people's will should be respected.

On the following day the Chambers, newly convoked, declared the Emperor of age, and on July 24 Antonio Carlos was appointed Minister of the Empire.

On March 23, 1841, he resigned his office, and the Conservative party conquered and overthrown on July 22 of the previous year, was again summoned to take the helm of State.

Antonio Carlos made himself conspicuous in the Chamber by his energetic opposition.

The provincial assembly of S. Paulo, in conformity with his recommendation, adopted a representation which he had drawn up and which he was sent to Rio de Janeiro to present, laying before the Crown violent accusations against the dominant party.

So obnoxious did he render himself to that party and so high did political animosity run at that period that he was deprived of the honors of gentleman of the Imperial Household, which had been conferred on him by the Emperor.

In 1842 the Chamber to which he had been elected was dissolved.

In 1845 with the triumph of the Liberal party he was again sent to parliament.

The same year his name was placed in the list submitted to the Emperor for the choice of a Senator. He was selected for this purpose and admitted into the Senate.

Speaking in this body for the first time and comparing with his usual felicity of expression the two legislative chambers, he made use of a fine illustration which has since been a thousand times repeated. « I come, said he, « from the burning sands of Hindostan to the snows of Siberia. »

But the temperature of that icy region was unable to cool his constitutional ardor. Only death (unfortunately then too near) could quiet the restless spirit of the Brazilian Mirabeau.

He died on December 5, 1845, a few months after his entry into the Senate.

Antonio Carlos Ribeiro de Andrade Machado e Silva was the type of Brazilian parliamentary eloquence.

He suffered persecution for the sake of liberty and perpetuated his name as the worthy and heroic paladin of Brazilian independence. He committed errors, particularly in a too offensive display of pride; but he was noted for his integrity and disinterestedness, left a brilliant and glorious record as a parliamentary orator.

He lived seventy-two years, but in the last years of his life he retained all the freshness, enthusiasm, inspiration, eloquence and intellectual vigor of youth

He has passed away from the stage of existence, but his memory is cherished as the most durable memento of the parliamentary glory of Brazil.

XI OF NOVEMBER

GENUINO OLYMPIO SAMPAIO

Born in 1828 in the province of Bahia, Genuino Olympio Sampaio was the legitimate son of the ex-major of the old Reserve Corps, Henrique José de Sampaio, and of D. Zeferina Maria da Conceição Sampaio. He began the study of the humanities in his native city, where he was employed in a commercial house ; but on the breaking out of the revolt of November 7, 1837, he emigrated to one of the rural districts and there enlisted in the legalist army on the 11th of the same month, when he was only fourteen years of age.

A few days afterwards the boy-soldier took part for the first time in an engagement, and so conducted himself as to be promoted for gallantry to the rank of ensign.

In 1838 he took part in the taking of the capital of the province.

He was sent at his request to serve against the rebels in Rio Grande do Sul, where he entered into numerous engagements and remained until the end of that terrible rebellion in 1844.

In 1847 he was promoted to a lieutenancy. Two years afterwards he served in Pernambuco against the so-called *Praieiros*, and was in several engagements, including the well contested and bloody battle of February 2, 1849.

In 1851 he was sent to Montevideo in the war against Rozas, the dictator of the Argentine Confederation, and, crossing the Plate in the division commanded by the gallant officer, afterwards made Count of Porto-Alegre, took part in the battle of Monte Caseros.

From 1860 to 1863 he was employed in the exploration of the upper Uruguay and was often in charge of the exploring-party in the absence of the commander.

In 1864 he was appointed assistant director of the military college of Rio Grande do Sul.

On Dec. 2, 1855, he was appointed captain of the 2d class on the staff. When the Paraguayan war broke out and his country called on her sons to rally around her standard Olympio Sampaio at once offered his services and departed for the seat of war at the head of a battalion of infantry which he commanded till the end of the war.

From 1865 to 1868 he was in twenty-one engagements, including those of May 2 and May 24, of Sept. 22 at Curupaity, where he was wounded, but refused to leave the field; at Potrero Ovelha, at Estabelecimento, at Chaco, and finally in the horrible and decisive struggle at Lomas Valentinas from Dec. 25 to 27, 1868.

On Dec. 11 of that year he had been promoted for gallantry to the rank of lieutenant-colonel.

After the last of the above-mentioned victories, he ob-

tained a leave of absence and went to Porto-Alegre, where hereceived the following highly honorable message from the heroic Ozorio, then Viscount, and afterwards Marquis of Herval :

« I am informed that you have left the army somewhat dissatisfied.

« If you think I can remedy the evil, you are invited to return with me to Paraguay, for which destination I expect to leave on the 14th. There will be no lack of battalions for you besides the 7th. — Your friend and comrade — Viscount of Herval. »

This letter shows that Olympio Sampaio left Paraguay dissatisfied, but without a single murmur of complaint.

However the gallant Herval, though wounded, responded to the call of the General-in-chief Gaston de Orleans, Count d'Eu, and husband of the Princess Imperial. Olympio Sampaio hastened to the post of honor under the young and glorious warriors and served through the brilliant, arduous and difficult campaign of the closing period of the war : a campaign amid mountains, deserts, forests and swamps and replete with severe fighting, toils, hunger and privations of every kind.

The victory of Brazil was at last complete.

Olympio Sampaio returned a colonel to Rio Grande, where he took command of a detachment of troops on the frontier, fixing his residence at Bage. He and his battalion, having been afterwards relieved of this duty, retired to Porto Alegre, where he lived in the enjoyment of the pleasure, ease and quiet of home.

Sad, precarious and incomprehensible are the destinies of mankind ! What a fate awaits the gallant soldier, who at 14 years of age had been promoted to the rank of ensign !

In the settlements near São Leopoldo, peopled almost exclusively by German immigrants, *Maurer*, a wicked impostor and chief of a horrible sect, entitling himself a prophet and surrounding himself with a band of fanatical proselytes, practically bid defiance to the authorities and the laws of the country.

A tolerance born of contempt, but censurably imprudent, gave him time to strengthen his hold on his insane followers, and increase their number with new proselytes, all equally ready to believe or do anything which he told them.

The provincial government sent Colonel Olympio Sampaio at the head of a force to attack Maurer's followers. He obeyed, and, despising the enemy against whom he was sent, was advancing at the head of a hundred and sixty men along a forest path, when he fell into an ambuscade. He resisted gallantly, but finding his force insufficient, was obliged to withdraw after losing thirty-five of his men.

A few days afterwards he was strongly reinforced and renewed the engagement. He was gaining ground when, as was easy in consequence of the nature of the ground, he was surprised by an attack from an unforeseen point, and was mortally wounded, living only a few hours thereafter.

It had been his fate to take part in several fratricidal struggles, but always on the side of order and legality.

He had served in the campaigns of Bahia, Pernambuco and Rio Grande do Sul, in the noble and generous war in the Argentine republic, and in the whole of the Paraguayan war, entering into some thirty engagements.

He was wounded only once, which was at Curupaity, refusing there to quit the field. In the thirty engagements in which he took part, he never failed to triumph when under a Brazilian general. Only once — at Curupaity —

did he form part of a beaten army ; and there he was under the command of an Argentine general.

After all these glorious achievements, performed in thirty-seven years of military life, it was his fate to fall at the hands of a deluded follower of a wicked and miserable impostor !

But at least he lost his life in serving the cause of order and civilization.



XII OF NOVEMBER

MANOEL RODRIGUES DA COSTA

Manoel Rodrigues da Costa was born in Minas Geraes in the latter half of the 18th century. He was also educated there, and there likewise was he admitted into holy orders.

He was a man of sparkling wit, a strong will and a patriotic heart.

Involved in 1789 in the Minas conspiracy, he was the companion in misfortune, of the illustrious men who conspired for their country's liberty and independence before the proper occasion had arrived. Like the others he was condemned, but his punishment, though oppressive, was much softened on account of his priestly character which had great weight with the religious Queen D. Maria I.

Five priests, implicated in the conspiracy, were condemned, remitted to Lisbon, and imprisoned in the fortress of S. João da Barra. After four years' imprisonment they were

transferred to convents, where, some of them, instead of meeting fraternal charity, were prettily roughly treated.

At the end of ten years Father Manoel Rodrigues da Costa was freed from restraint; but, impenitent and contumacious in the sin of patriotism, to which he had been a victim, he devoted himself to examining in Lisbon the branches of industry which might be introduced into Brazil, and, on his return, carried with him a weaver and vine-dresser. After arriving he established a cloth factory and planted grape-vines and olive-trees on an extensive scale; but not having sufficient means, and not being able to obtain assistance from the government, he was unable to carry his undertaking to a successful conclusion.

In 1808 Father Costa laid before the Count of Linhares plans for the improvement of the roads and for the navigation of the rivers, and for the settlement of the unpeopled districts of Minas Geraes. But in this also he was unsuccessful.

In 1822 he was rejuvenated in his old age by the magnetic thrill caused by the hope of independence.

He and the patriotic José Teixeira da Fonseca Vasconcellos were two of the most ardent and worthy laborers in the revolutionary cause in Minas Geraes.

In 1823 Father Manoel Rodrigues da Costa, the aged and venerable Liberal of Minas Geraes, the proscrip of 1792, had the glory of being elected, like José Rezende da Costa, a member of the Brazilian Constituent Assembly, and of witnessing the solemn opening of that body.

But on November 12th of that year he was constrained to weep, not for himself nor from fear, but for the cause of constitutional monarchy, seriously threatened by the dissolution of the sovereign delegates of the people.

Elected to the first ordinary legislature, he resigned his seat on account of his age and bodily infirmities.

In 1830 he had the honor and pleasure of offering hospitality to the Emperor and Empress.

He died in Minas Geraes at little less than ninety years of age.

He was a man of cultivated intellect, tried fidelity, undoubted patriotism and strict integrity. He was esteemed for his worth throughout the Empire, and was regarded with veneration in his own province.

He was decorated by the Emperor D. Pedro I with the medals of the orders of Christ and the Cruzador, and was appointed honorary canon of the Imperial Chapel.





XIII OF NOVEMBER

ANTONIO LUIZ PEREIRA DA CUNHA

MARQUIS OF INHAMBUPE



Antonio Luiz Pereira da Cunha was born in the city of Bahia, on April 6th, 1769. Having prosecuted his preparatory studies in his native city, he at the age of twenty-one went to Lisbon, where he completed the study of the humanities, and received the degree of bachelor of laws at the Coimbra University, where he had also studied mathematics and philosophy.

He began his public career in 1789 as municipal judge of the town of Torres Vedras, and, three years afterwards was appointed district judge of Pernambuco, and served as justice on the bench of the superior court of Bahia. In 1798 he served as provisional governor of Pernambuco, in con-

formity with the law of 1770, and in virtue of the dismissal of the governor and captain-general.

On January 2nd, 1802, he was transferred to the judicial district of Rio das Velhas, in Minas Geraes, and on February 22nd, was decorated with the cross of chevalier of the order of Christ.

The same year he was appointed justice of the Superior court, and assigned to the bench of Sabará, on which he took his seat on Feb. 4th, 1803,

Three years afterwards he was appointed justice of the Supreme Court of Portugal. Obtaining a leave of absence, he returned from Lisbon to Brazil shortly after the departure of the Royal family in 1807.

On May 13th, 1808, he was appointed chancellor of the Bahia superior court, with the title of councillor, and with the office of solicitor of the exchequer, into the duties of which office he was to enter on his return from Bahia.

The death of the Count of Ponte, governor and captain-general at this city, obliged Pereira da Cunha to form a part of the provisional government, composed of himself, the Archbishop, Friar José de Santa Escolastica, and Lieutenant-General Godinho.

In 1811 the prince-regent, D. John, bestowed on him the cross of knight-commander of the order of Christ.

Charged with framing a code of municipal regulations and ordinances for the city council of Rio de Janeiro, intended to be applicable to all the municipal corporations of the kingdom, he presented the result of his labors, which, however, was not adopted, on account of containing provisions (according to the author of Gallery of Illustrious Brazilians) curtailing the supreme power of the sovereign.

From 1815 to 1820 he held the offices of solicitor of the

exchequer, of member of the committee appointed for compiling the digest of the orders and regulations of the navy, of member of the Board of Trade, Agriculture, Manufacture and Navigation, and finally of commissioner of grants.

In February 18th, 1821, D. John VI, much annoyed at the constitutional revolution which had triumphed in Portugal the year before, and not wishing to leave Brazil, had promulgated the Decree, in virtue of which was sent the prince D. Pedro to Portugal and, convoked the delegates elected by the cities and towns of Brazil, and of the Portuguese islands in the Atlantic Ocean, to assemble for the purpose of examining the newly framed Portuguese constitution, of deciding whether or not its provisions were applicable to this kingdom, and of suggesting the necessary amendments. To accelerate the latter measure the king appointed a committee, which would at once commence its labors, and would, after the meeting of the delegates convoked, assist them in their proceedings.

Pereira da Cunha was one of the twenty member of that committee, whose term of existence, however, was extremely short.

On February 26th, the Portuguese troops employed in garrisoning the capital, mutinied against the Royal Decree, and succeeded in causing the princes Pedro and Miguel to swear to support the new Portuguese constitution. They went still further, furnishing a list of names of persons to be appointed to certain offices.

Pereira da Cunha, although entirely unconnected with the movement, was proposed for the place of police intendant, and was summoned to the theatre of S. João, where the mutineers were employed in their task of misgoverning the State.

He accepted the post offered him, and, as police intendant,

rendered important services to public order during eight months, at the end of which time he was relieved of his office.

On the dissolution of the Brazilian constituent assembly in November, 1823, Pereira da Cunha was appointed on the 13th of that month member of the Council of State, which was created by D. Pedro I for the purpose of framing the Constitution of the Empire. He was one of the framers and signers of the document which was adopted as the constitution on the 25th of March, 1824.

In 1825 he accepted the portfolio of the Department of Foreign Affairs, and on Nov. 23rd of that year signed the treaty with Great-Britain for the extinction of the African slave trade.

In the same year, before entering the ministry, he had received from the Emperor the title of Viscount of Inhambupe and the medal of dignitary of the order of the Crusader, and later he was raised from the rank of Viscount to that of Marquis.

At the first general election his name was included on the senatorial list by these provinces, and he was selected by the Crown to represent that of Pernambuco.

He was frequently minister, and for some years occupied the chair of President of the Senate.

The liberal party was constantly in opposition after the dissolution of the Constituent Assembly, and no favor was shown by its leaders to the Marquis of Inhambupe, who was devoted to the cause of the Emperor, though not a reactionist like the Marquis of Paranaguá.

The Marquis of Inhambupe was a member of the ministry formed on the evening or night of April 5, 1831, which occasioned the rising of the people and troops on the following day.

The Emperor D. Pedro I, not wishing to restore the previous ministers to the places of which he had deprived them, formally abdicated on the 7th. The ministers were all permitted to resign, with the exception of the Marquis of Inhambupe, who was required to retain his office in order to deliver the government into the hands of the succeeding ministry.

After April 7th, 1831, the Marquis of Inhambupe, deprived of all political influence, merely occupied himself with his duties in the Senate, of which he was president at the time of his death. This event took place on the 18th of September, 1837.

He left to his family honorable poverty, and to his country the remembrance of a long and useful life spent in its service.

XIV OF NOVEMBER

MANOEL DE MACEDO PEREIRA DE VASCONCELLOS

Manoel de Macedo must not be confounded with the illustrious citizen of Pernambuco who bore this part of his name, and who lived and suffered a century earlier. He was born on May 5, 1726, in the Colony of Sacramento when this disputed province was in the possession of Portugal, but soon abandoned the land of his birth and was admitted into the order of Jesuits.

In this order he became celebrated for his talents and learning, as well as for his thrilling eloquence in the pulpit in Lisbon, where he professed, and in Coimbra, where he studied and received the degree of doctor. He obtained a brilliant reputation as a literary man and as a poet of enviable merit.

He did not consider the jesuits so innocent as to wish to accompany them in exile, when they were banished by the

Marquis of Pombal. He preferred to remain in Portugal and joined the order of São Felipe Nery.

The foregoing is agreeable to the opinion of Councillor Pereira da Silva in his *Plutarco Brasileiro*; but Barbosa, who was contemporaneous with Manoel de Macedo, says that the latter, after being ordained an elder, was at once admitted into the order of São Felipe Nery, it, therefore, not being correct that he had been a jesuit. Innocencio F. da Silva in his *Bibliographical Dictionary* follows the opinion of Barbosa, and adds that Manoel de Macedo left the order and became a secular clergyman in 1760, when some of the priests of that order were suffering persecution from the Marquis of Pombal.

In any case he was noted in Portugal as a pulpit orator and as a poet of some merit, having belonged to the *Arcadia Ulyssiponense*, under the name of *Lemano*.

Balthazar da Silva Lisboa in a short passage in his MMS. mentions him as a learned Brazilian priest and as a celebrated preacher and poet.

He gives the date of his death — November, 14th, 1790; but does not say where it took place.

The following are the works of Father Manoel de Macedo Pereira de Vasconcellos which were published in his lifetime:

Órações Sacras, in three volumes, several sermons and panegyrics and various poetical productions.

XV OF NOVEMBER

FRIAR JOÃO DA APRESENTAÇÃO

João, who afterwards took the religious name of Apresentação, legitimate son of João Baptista Campello and D. Brites Bandeira de Mello, was born in Recife, Pernambuco, in the year 1670.

He studied the humanities in Bahia and applied himself sedulously to the study of philosophy at the Jesuits' College.

On Nov. 15, 1707, he retired to the convent of the Seraphic Order at Paraguassú, Bahia, made his profession on Nov. 21, 1708, and afterwards went to Olinda to study theology, in the convent there.

The bishop Friar José Fialho appointed him his confessor, and also synodical examiner and missionary, and designated him to accompany him on his episcopal tour to the different parishes belonging to his see.

Appreciating his learning and virtues, he carried him to Bahia where he was chosen arch, bishop and afterwards to Portugal on his transfer to the see of Guarda, where Friar João da Apresentação became professor of moral theology for the clergy.

In 1720 Friar João da Apresentação went to Valladolid to attend the meeting of the General Chapter. Returning to Valladolid, he continued to teach, and besides was appointed penitentiary of the Seraphic Order and an inquisitorial censor.

Friar João da Apresentação was noted for his virtues and his learning as well as his eloquence as a pulpit orator. Unfortunately the sermons and other works which he wrote, are no longer existent.

He had prepared for the press four volumes of ascetic, moral and panegyric sermons, as Barboza states in his *Bibliotheca Lusitana*, and besides this a Life of the Bishop D. José Fialho, and several minor literary works.



XVI OF NOVEMBER

SIMÃO PEREIRA DE SÁ

Simão Pereira de Sá, was a Jesuit writer, and was born in Rio de Janeiro in 1701.

He studied in the Jesuit College and was afterwards admitted into the order.

He was much esteemed for his intellectual endowments.

He graduated in the theological and canonical branches of the Coimbra University, and was deservedly ranked among the celebrated members of his order.

He wrote a great deal; but few of his productions have been preserved.

He left some interesting essays, among which the following are the most important:

Topographical and Military Essay on the Colony of Sacramento.

Chronological Description of the See of Rio de Janeiro, founded in virtue of the papal bull of Innocent XI, dated Nov. 16, 1676.

In default of other dates that of the bull for creating the see which Simão Pereira de Sá described, is here selected for the registry of his name.

XVII OF NOVEMBER

MANOEL ANTONIO DE ALMEIDA

Manoel Antonio de Almeida, a talented and promising writer who perished in the morning of life, was the legitimate son of Manoel de Almeida and D. Josephina Maria de Almeida, and was born in Rio de Janeiro on Nov. 17, 1832.

He was as richly intellectual as his parents were pecuniarily poor.

For lack of means he studied the humanities irregularly and with difficulty. But his studies at home and his brilliant intellect enabled him to acquire the instruction of which his poverty threatened to deprive him by preventing his assiduous attendance at school.

In 1852 he was admitted into the Medical College, and was able to make rapid progress in the respective course of studies, and at the same time to assist his family with the salary paid him by the *Correio Mercantil*, on whose edito-

rial staff he was employed at that time, when the paper was under the direction of the venerable Dr. Joaquim Francisco Alves Branco Muniz Barreto, and when its editor-in-chief was the very able Dr. Francisco Octaviano de Almeida Rosa, now Senator and Imperial Councillor.

Like Manoel Antonio de Almeida, Henrique Cezar Muzzio, another youth of brilliant talents obtained from the protection of those two distinguished Brazilinas, and from his labor on the editorial staff of the *Correio Mercantil* the necessary means for attending the medical college and gaining the diploma of physician.

Besides his daily task in the *Correio Mercantil* Manoel de Almeida published in weekly articles in that paper and republished in two small volumes in 1854 and 1855 his *Memoirs of a Militia Serjeant*, a correct and entertaining picture of the former costumes of country and of events which took place in colonial times.

This work was greatly eulogized and was thought to give promise of a brilliant future for its author.

He next published in the same paper his *Bibliographical Review*, a series of literary critiques, which were followed by other works; among those that were most favorably received by competent judges and by the public in general were, *Flowers and Fragrance*, *Physiology of the Voice*, and *A Sad Story*.

In December, 1857, he took the degree of doctor of medicine.

He did not practice medicine, probably because, on account of the literary reputation which he had acquired, no one thought of asking him to visit patients.

The government came to the assistance of the literary physician without patients and appointed him director of the National Printing-Office, and afterwards clerk in the

Department of Finance. It also commissioned him to write an abridged *Financial History of Brazil*, beginning with the colonial period of the nation's existence.

The promising young writer who had already given brilliant proofs of his ability was not permitted to perform this arduous task.

In November, 1861, he embarked on the steamer *Hermes* bound for Campos, and on the 28th of that month the steamer was wrecked and sunk.

At the age of 29, Manoel Antonio de Almeida had the same sepulchre that awaited the great poet Gonçalves Dias — the unfathomable depths of the Ocean.



XVIII OF NOVEMBER

D. CECILIA BARBOSA

This lady who came of good family and was noted for her virtues was born in Rio de Janeiro on the 18th of November, 1613.

She was married to Agostinho Barbalho Bezerra who, like his father, Col. Luiz Barbalho Bezerra, was one of the illustrious men of the period in which he lived.

Her father-in-law distinguished himself by important services and left his name graven on one of the brightest and most glorious pages of the history of the Dutch war.

Her husband was governor of Rio de Janeiro, and set a striking example of loyalty to his sovereign and of worthy behaviour during serious revolt which broke out in the city, being eulogized and rewarded for his conduct on this trying occasion.

Left a widow in a state bordering on actual poverty,

D. Cecilia devoted herself to the care of her daughters, being the sole dependence of these beloved charges.

The young ladies were not rich enough to obtain an offer of marriage from any of the young noblemen in Rio de Janeiro. Their mother's means were too limited to incur the by no means inconsiderable expense of a removal to Portugal, and besides a well-founded fear of pirates detained them from a transatlantic journey. But what was perhaps more distressing to the mother than the fear of pirates, or at all events was extremely repugnant to her feelings was the bare thought that her daughters might be induced to marry persons of ignoble blood.

The aristocratic feeling found a consolation and a fortunate resource in the religious spirit which dominated at that time.

On July 25, 1675, D. Cecilia Barbosa manifested publicly and solemnly her desire to found in the Hermitage of Nossa Senhora d'Ajuda a cloister for her daughters, herself, and the damsels and matrons who wished to retire from all connection with the world and live in solitary retirement, devoted to the service of God.

The poor widow by herself was able to do little; but her enthusiasm affected those who were more powerful than herself and equally religious.

The Ajuda convent was founded in Rio de Janeiro. To others belongs the glory of contributing more in a material sense to founding this establishment on the proper basis; but the idea which is the corner-stone of the edifice belonged to the widow of Agostinho Borbalho and the mother of his children.

The original idea of founding the convent of Ajuda has, then, this aristocratic defect, which is in direct contradiction to all that is charitable or fraternal.

The first superiors or abbesses were all (if there were any exceptions, they have not been recorded) ladies of noble families.

But even so the origin of the establishment has a certain historical character which, through it may be scorned at the present day, derives its prestige from the past.

It is useless to discuss the merit of D. Cecilia's wishes and resolutions.

The civilization of the present time is not that of the 17th century.

D. Cecilia Barbosa was a benefactress of her age.

The Ajuda convent which is now an anachronism was nearly two hundred years ago blessed as a pious and useful institution.

The name of D. Cecilia Barbosa should not be forgotten.



XIX OF NOVEMBER

JOAQUIM DE OLIVEIRA ALVARES

Joaquim de Oliveira Alvares was the son of a merchant of the island of Madeira where he was born on the 19th of November, 1776.

He prosecuted his preparatory studies in England and afterwards at Donai, and having acquired besides other instruction a knowledge of the Latin, Greek, French, English, Italian, Spanish and German languages, he entered the Coimbra University where he graduated with the degree of bachelor of mathematics and philosophy.

Entering the Portuguese royal navy, he was placed in command of a small cruiser on the coast of Algarvia where in company with another and larger vessel he was attacked by a superior force of French vessels.

Abandoned by the larger vessel, Oliveira Alvares fought

to the last, till he was finally obliged to strike and fall into the enemy's hands.

The French commander in an official document bore witness to the gallantry of the commander of his prize.

The date of this event and those of his release and subsequent service in the squadron sent to Naples under the command of the Marquis of Nizza are not precisely stated and it is likely that there is some confusion in this respect.

He left the navy for the army and came to Brazil, where in 1804 he was appointed captain of artillery in the S. Paulo volunteer legion. In 1807 he was promoted to the rank of major commanding the artillery of the legion which in the following year was detached for service in Rio Grande do Sul. In 1810 he had risen to the rank of lieutenant-colonel.

In Rio Grande do Sul he went through the Uruguayan campaigns of 1811 and 1812, and was promoted to the rank of colonel commanding the legion on Feb. 29, 1812, and to that of brigadier-general in 1814.

In 1816 he commenced the war against General José Ger-vazio Artigas, leader of the confederation formed by the provinces of Banda Oriental, Entre Rios and Corrientes. This war ended in 1820 with the victory of Taquarembó and the flight of Artigas.

Oliveira Alvares covered himself with glory on Oct. 27, 1816, at Corumbí where at the head of little over 800 men he defended himself against Artigas with 1500, and notwithstanding this disparity the latter was completely routed, leaving on the field 512 killed, 100 prisoners, including many officers, and a large quantity of arms, munitions, baggage and horses.

On Jan. 4, 1817, another battle was fought at Catalau,

and Oliveira Alvares was one of them who most distinguished themselves in this signal victory.

Promoted to the rank of brigadier-general on July 27th, 1837, for his gallantry at Carumbé and Catalan, he was made brevet marshal the following year, and Knight commander of the order of Aviz.

At the close of the war in 1820, he retired covered with martial glory and laurels, but broken in health, to Santa Catharina, and thence to Rio de Janeiro, where on the morning of April 21st, 1821, he rendered an unexpected and generous service.

It is known that the Portuguese troops, even more inexcusable than the disorderly and foolish electoral assemblage gathered in the Exchange, began to fire on that assemblage without previous intimation of the order to disperse.

Immediately afterwards a loaded piece of artillery was pointed at the building; but Marshal Oliveira Alvares, who was near by, drew his sword, and at a single bound reached the piece and cut the lighted match.

The blood which flowed that day, at the Exchange, made the first indelible separating mark between Brazil and Portugal.

In the same year Joaquim de Oliveira Alvares embraced the cause of Brazilian independence, and acted in concert with the other patriots.

On Nov. 11th, 1821, he was appointed adjutant-general of the military district of Rio de Janeiro. The head-quarters were in the building in the Rua da Guarda Velha, which is now occupied by the Ministry of the Empire, and Oliveira Alvares established there a club of conspirators, which he disguised under the ostensible character of a newspaper reading-room.

The meetings of the club, which were attended by Ledo, Januario, José Joaquim da Rocha, Nobrega, Friar S. Paio and others, were held in a back-room of the building, which had been a kitchen. Gordilho, groom of the robes to the prince-regent D. Pedro, belonged to the conspiracy and acted as an intermediary between the prince and the conspirators, who exerted themselves to induce the former to place himself at the head of the revolutionary movement and thus win an imperial crown and imperishable glory.

The prince hesitated ; but the decree of the Portuguese constituent assembly, rudely annulling his authority in Brazil, and ordering him to travel in Europe for the purpose of *finishing his education*, irritated him, and put an end to his hesitations in December, 1821.

D. Pedro's revolt against the authority of Portugal was prepared by a series of official and popular remonstrances against the obnoxious decree.

On Jan. 9th, 1822, D. Pedro assumed an attitude of open disobedience to the Lisbon government, and unhesitatingly announced his intention of remaining in Brazil.

Two days afterwards, that is, on Jan. 11th the Portuguese troops, who had lately become accustomed to impose their wishes on the government, took up arms under their general Avilez, and occupying the Castle hill and menacing the city, endeavored to coerce the prince into obedience to the orders emanating from the sovereign power at Lisbon.

Joaquim de Oliveira Alvares was sick in bed with an attack of the gout when he heard the news of the mutiny of the Portuguese troops. Notwithstanding his sufferings he caused himself to be conveyed to the Campo de Santa Anna, where the Brazilian troops and a number of patriotic civilians were assembled, and there, lying on a carpet spread over the grass, he took command of all the forces and adopted the ne-

cessary measures for repulsing the attack of the Portuguese, remaining in the field for the purpose of directing the operations with due diligence and energy during the whole of the night of the 11th and until the morning of the 12th, when Avilez retired to the other side of the bay with the two thousand auxiliaries under his command.

On January 16, Oliveira Alvares entered the ministry, being placed at the head of the War Department. At the same time José Bonifacio was appointed Minister of the Empire and of Foreign Affairs, and Caetano Pinto de Miranda Montenegro, afterwards Marquis of Praia Grande, Minister of Finance.

On account of increasing ill-health, aggravated by excessive exertion in behalf of the revolutionary cause, he tendered his resignation, which was accepted.

On Jan. 7, 1822, he had been promoted to the rank of field-marshal, and on October 12 of the same year he was appointed military councillor, and on July 25, 1823, imperial councillor; on Oct. 12, 1824, he was promoted to the rank of lieutenant-general, and on May 12, 1825, was made knight-companion of the Order of the Cruzader.

On July 24, 1828, he was for the second time called to the post of Minister of War, and was one of the negotiators of the preliminary treaty of peace, made with the Argentine Confederation on Aug. 27 of the same year.

On February 1, 1829, there was in Pernambuco a riot in which republican cries were heard. The people treated with indifference the rioters who, after proceeding from Afogados to Ipajuca, dispersed before the arrival of the troops. The president of the province, in communicating this event to the government, gave it undue importance. The government, accordingly adopted extraordinary measures. The minister of justice signed a decree, suspending

the constitutional guarantees in the province and the minister of war created a military commission in the capital to try the persons suspected of rebellion and summarily execute the sentence imposed, except the death penalty which was made dependent on the Emperor's sanction.

At the meeting of the general assembly the Deputy Hollandia Cavalcanti, afterwards Viscount of Albuquerque, introduced a bill for the formal impeachment of the two ministers. The committee, to which the bill was referred, presented a report in which the unsettled and agitated state of political affairs was considered an extenuating circumstance, for the suspension of constitutional guarantees and a motive, for abandoning proceeding against the minister of justice, but the act of the minister of war was deemed a violation of the constitution, which prohibits all exceptional, and extraordinary tribunals.

This report gave rise to a long and heated discussion, which became extremely personal and annoying to Joaquim de Oliveira Alvares, and was finally disapproved by a vote of thirty-nine against thirty-two. It must be confessed that the Emperor D. Pedro I took no pains to conceal the interest he felt in the acquittal of his ministers, especially Joaquim de Oliveira Alvares who, besides being in greater danger of impeachment, was His Majesty's personal friend.

On Aug. 4, 1829, Oliveira Alvares resigned his place in the ministry, and in October was decorated with the grand-cross of the newly created order of the Rose.

On his election to the second legislature as deputy from Rio Grande do Sul, the ultra liberals proposed and endeavored to annul his election not from any vice or defect in the electoral process, *but on account of his acts as minister and his plots against the public liberties and the representative system.* This persecution of which Oliveira Alvares was one

of the victims was also shared by Clemente José Pereira and Salvador José Maciel. Fortunately the moderate liberals united with the government deputies in preventing the adoption of so pernicious a precedent. Even so there were thirty-five votes in favor of annulling the election of Oliveira Alvares and José Clemente, who were more obnoxious than Salvador Maciel, while forty-one deputies for recognizing their right to the contested seats.

In the same year in which this occurred (1830) Oliveira Alvares went to London to receive a large inheritance left him by a brother who had been engaged in trade in that city.

When he took leave of the Emperor, he remarked with the freedom permitted to an old friend and with characteristic humor:

« Sire, I bid you adieu; but if the political currents in Brazil do not change their direction, we will soon meet at the carnival of Venice. »

In 1831 they did meet, not indeed at the carnival of Venice, but at London where the ex-Emperor D. Pedro gave his friend and former minister new proofs of particular friendship and esteem.

In 1832 the Restoration party sought the aid and intervention of Oliveira Alvares for the purpose of executing their plans.

If it be permitted to accept private sources of information, which are always of doubtful reliability, in regard to the secret plans and correspondences D. Pedro, after securing the stability of his daughter's throne in Portugal, agreed to return to Brazil, if all, or the greater part, of the municipal chambers of the Empire should petition him to do so. But the agents of the restoration party wished D. Pedro to return

to Brazil with the foreign legion which had served at the siege of Oporto.

They desired the expedition to be placed under the command of Oliveira Alvares, who, when the proposition was submitted to him, exclaimed :

« Return to Brazil at the head of foreign troops ! Never ! »

The subject is a very important one, and the information on which the above statement is founded is of very recent origin ; this interesting subject therefore demands further and minute investigation.

Before the year 1830 Joaquim de Oliveira Alvares began a voluminous work called the *General Statistics of Brazil*. He had collected for this purpose a large and valuable library of books, documents, and curious and rare maps ; and had also studied with zeal and ardor the natural history of the vegetable and mineral kingdoms of the country. He had moreover completed the manuscript of a considerable portion of his work, which was probably worthy of his great learning ; but unfortunately all this was lost, for after his death in France all these papers were missing.

In London he rendered Brazil a conspicuous service. Learning that the country had not the means to meet its engagements, and resolving that his country's credit should not suffer, while it was in his power to prevent such a calamity, he generously placed at the disposal of the Brazilian minister the whole of his vast wealth with instructions to use it to perform the obligations of Brazil.

Pensioned off with the grade of Lieutenant-General on July 5, 1833, and the Emperor D. Pedro I being no longer alive, Oliveira Alvares prepared to return to the Empire. But feeling unwell and feeble, he resolved to try first the effect of a different climate and of a short journey. He ac-

cordingly went to Paris where he died in 1835 and was buried in the cemetery Père Lachaise.

Joaquim de Oliveira Alvares was one of the heroes of the southern campaigns and of the Brazilian revolution ; he was a brave soldier and a man of talent, honor and integrity.

The political passions which assailed him from 1828 to 1830, and his administrative blunder in 1829 (expiated by his narrow escape from impeachment and from expulsion from the seat to which he was subsequently elected in the chamber) cannot efface nor conceal the military glory which he won in 1816 and 1817, nor his patriotic services in 1821 and 1822.



XX OF NOVEMBER

FRANCISCO VILLELA BARBOSA

MARQUIS OF PARANAGUÁ

Francisco Villela Barboza was born in the city of Rio de Janeiro on November 20, 1769.

His father, who bore the same name, was a merchant born in Braga, Portugal ; and his mothers name was Anna Maria da Conceição.

He had the misfortune to be deprived, at a tender age, of both of his parents. Left a poor and destitute orphan, he was cared for by a maternal grandaunt, the latter being also his godmother and his mothers namesake.

At the expense of these two ladies he was sent to the Coimbra university in the eighteenth year of his age, having

previously studied in Rio de Janeiro the Latin classics, rhetoric and rational philosophy.

At Coimbra he spent the first year in acquiring the knowledge of Greek necessary to his admittance into the University. He had passed his examination, when he was suddenly almost obliged to abandon his studies. Having married without consulting his aunt, she became offended and ceased to send him remittances.

In this difficult situation he was assisted by Dr. Francisco de Lemos, a native of Rio de Janeiro, bishop of Coimbra, Count of Arganil and ex-rector of the University, who furnished his young countrymen the necessary means for his subsistence and college expenses, until he graduated in the mathematical course in 1796.

In Villela Barboza's diploma there is an honorable mention of two prizes which he had received for extraordinary progress in the first two years of his mathematical studies, couched in the following terms :

« *Praemio insuper, regio prescripto insignioribus statuto, in primo et tertio sui curriculi anno publicè donatus fuit.* »

In 1797 he went to Lisbon, where he entered the royal navy with the rank of 2d-liutenant, and in this capacity served in several expeditions during four years, distinguishing himself at the siege of Tunis and in the capture of Algerian pirates in the Mediterranean.

In 1801 he was appointed assistant-professor of the Royal Naval Academy, for which place he was proposed by the faculty of the University.

He then solicited his transfer to the engineer corps, which was granted him with the rank of 1st-lieutenant. He was for some time assistant-professor of astronomy and navigation, but was afterwards appointed professor of geo-

metry which he continued to teach till his retirement in 1822.

In his military career in Portugal he reached the rank of Major of engineers, which he resigned in 1823 previous to returning to Brazil.

His reputation as a mathematician and literateur justly stood high in Portugal.

While engaged in his professorial labors, he composed and offered to the Royal Academy of Science his *Elements of Geometry*, which the Academy caused to be published in 1815.

In 1817 he published in Lisbon a continuation of the above work, entitled *A Short Treatise on Spherical Geometry*.

He also wrote an interesting essay entitled *Sobre a Correção das Derrotas da Estima*. For this work he received a prize from the Royal Maritime, Military and Geographical Society of Lisbon, of which he was a member.

He likewise belonged to the Royal Academy of Sciences and at one time served as *ad interim* secretary. The Memoirs of this Academy contain some eloquent addresses made by him.

But another wreath also encircled his brow.

He was a writer of exquisitely harmonious and charming verse.

While at the University he published his *Poems*, a small volume of odes, cantatas, sonnets and other varieties of poetical compositions. Afterwards he wrote a cantata entitled *Spring*, which was first published in the Memoirs of the Royal Academy of Science. This production, which was afterwards republished, established his reputation as a poet.

He continued to the end of his life to devote himself to

the muses, and his productions were highly commended by his intimate friends for whose benefit they were written.

But in 1821 Villela Barboza is forced into political life. The success of the Portuguese revolution of 1820 was followed by the convocation of the constituent assembly, and Rio de Janeiro honored her illustrious son with a seat in that body.

In a short time the majority of the assembly openly manifested its contempt for the American kingdom, and hostility to the prince-regent D. Pedro.

The contentions of 1821 were followed by the revolution of Sept. 7, 1822, when the independence of Brazil was declared by the cry of Ypiranga.

The Brazilian deputies at the Lisbon Côrtes did their duty; but years afterwards it was calumniously alleged that Villela Barboza, who had then become Marquis of Parana-guá, had opposed his country's independence.

Villela Barboza was not, it is true, so puissant a champion of the Brazilian cause as Antonio Carlos, Barata, Feijó, Lino Coutinho and some others; but he showed his loyalty to his country, signing the petition for the annulling of his diploma as deputy, as soon as the revolutionary movement in Brazil displayed the general desire of the people for an independent government.

The only charges that can be brought against Villela Barboza are that he continued in the constituent assembly until the close of the session and that he remained in Portugal after the declaration of Brazilian independence, only throwing up his commission in the Portuguese army in April or May, 1823.

In the month of June he embarked for Brazil, and unfortunately arrived at Rio de Janeiro but a little while before the month of November, on the 10th of which he entered

the ministry, in charge of the departments of the Empire and Foreign Affairs. Two days afterwards the constituent assembly was dissolved and Villela Barboza was considered the principal adviser of this fatal and impolitic measure.

Shortly afterwards he assumed the direction of the Navy department.

As minister he belonged to the committee of councillors of state who drafted the constitution of the Empire and was one of the ten signers of that document. He remained in the ministry till January, 1827, when he resigned for motives highly honorable to his character.

Between 1823 and 1825 he was made dignitary and grand-cross of the order of the Crusador, Viscount and afterwards Marquis of Paranaguá, besides being councillor of state.

When the senate was organized in 1826, he was chosen a member of that body by the province of Rio de Janeiro.

In December, 1829, he again accepted the portfolio of the Navy in the ministry organized by the Marquis of Barboza who took charge of the Finance department; and after the dismissal of the latter on Oct. 5, 1830, Paranaguá remained in the Cabinet which was then reorganized.

In consequence of the agitated state of public feeling and the serious occurrences in March, 1831, in Rio de Janeiro, when the excitement of the liberals was strongly stimulated by the spirit of nationality incensed by the audacious insults of some of the Portuguese, D. Pedro I, on the 20th of that month accepted the resignation of the Marquis of Paranaguá and the other unpopular ministers, and selected a new ministry from the ranks of the opposition, composed of men of liberal ideas, but out of parliament and without political influence.

The situation appeared to improve. The moderate Libe-

erals, such as Evaristo and others, supported the new cabinet. But the radicals openly conspired, and accordingly the Emperor D. Pedro I organized on the night of April 5, his last ministry, delivering the port folios to the Marquis of Paranaguá and five more of the most unpopular of his ex-ministers.

On the following day the people and nearly all the soldiers assembled in the evening and at night in the Sant'Anna square (afterwards called Praça da Acclamação), and demanded the return of the ministry of the 20th of March. To these demands D. Pedro I responded by abdicating his throne at two o'clock in the morning of April 7.

The ministers handed in their resignations which were duly legalized, except the Marquis of Inhambupe, a minister of the Empire, who was deputed to deliver the government into the hands of the Regency.

The Marquis of Paranaguá remained at his post in the Senate. The action of time, the force of circumstances, and the current of events were alike impotent to shake his convictions or alter his principles. He was considered to be as ever, an extreme and strict conservative, a firm supporter of the authority of the legitimate rulers of the country.

In 1840 he was president of the Senate, and exerted all his influence in favor of the proposal to declare the Emperor D. Pedro II of age, uniting, for this purpose during the parliamentary struggle, with the liberal party, from which he separated himself as soon as the common object was accomplished.

In 1841 he received the port folio of the Navy in the conservative ministry of March 23, and continued to hold this place till January, 1843, when the ministry resigned.

At the ceremonial of anointing the Emperor D. Pedro II,

the Marquis of Paraná was chosen to act as Lord High Constable.

This illustrious statesman died on Sept. 11, 1846.

In scientific matters no one ventured to entertain a doubt of his elevated merit.

In poetry his *Spring* is by itself sufficient to distinguish him. The Marquis of Paraná wrote beautiful poetical compositions up to the end of his life. An ode which he improvised on hearing in the Senate a speech delivered by the learned Viscount of Cayrú (apparently of the same political school as himself) was published and became well known.

Many of his poems, some of them erotic, were lost. It is said the illustrious octogenarian, on finding his end approaching, threw them into the fire with his own hands.

Of his honor, integrity and personal disinterestedness there was never the slightest cloud of suspicion to overcast the clear and serene sky of his well deserved reputation.

But in his political life he was obliged to encounter storms, popular odium, false estimates and just censure.

The Marquis of Paranaguá committed serious blunders; but he was led into them by his principles and his honest convictions.

Either from attachment to the old governmental system, or from his natural disposition and profound convictions he believed essentially in despotic authority, and appeared to regard all opposition as unjustifiable resistance.

For this reason his acts were often characterized by a severity bordering on intolerance. He desired the welfare and liberty of the people, but he dreaded the consequences of unrestrained freedom from governmental tutelage.

In 1830 he advised the dissolution of the Chamber, but the Emperor D. Pedro I in noble and generous language rejected his advice.

Entering the ministry on April 5, 1831, he proposed extraordinary compressive measures to which D. Pedro I refused to consent. On the night of the 6th, when witnessing the deathagony of the first reign, and on the morning of the 7th when the abdication took place, the tortures experienced by his loyal and devoted heart were ample punishment for his great political blunder—the prominent part which he took in causing the dissolution of the Brazilian constituent assembly.

But his acts in the council of state and in the ministry, as well as in the senate, were all dictated by his real convictions and by the principles which he never ceased to maintain, display and defend.

He ever acted as he thought and felt, in which he was not only justifiable, but highly honorable.

The Marquis of Paranaguá was a man of honor and integrity, of never-failing loyalty, and of a greatness of soul which was proved by his unshaken constancy and firmness amid the political storms which threatened him with destruction, but could never daunt his courage.

Besides his high offices, honors and titles which have nearly all been mentioned, the Marquis of Paranaguá was a member of several foreign scientific societies and of the Brazilian Historical and Geographical Institute.

XXI OF NOVEMBER

EMILIO JOAQUIM DA SILVA MAIA

Emilio Joaquim da Silva Maia was the legitimate son of the merchant Joaquim José da Silva Maia and of D. Joaquina Rosa da Costa, and was born in the city of Bahia on August 8, 1808.

From his earliest years, he displayed great aptitude for literary pursuits. The ancient metropolis of Brazil abounded in good teachers, and with these Emilio was making rapid progress in the study of the humanities when at the age of 15 years, in 1823, he began to experience the effects of political storms and convulsions.

In 1817, while still in his infancy, he beheld, undoubtedly with the sensibility and at the same time with the thoughtlessness of childhood, the victims of the Pernambuco revolution. In 1821, at the age of thirteen, he witnessed the demonstration of February 12 in his native city. The

times were stormy and in 1823, following the destiny of his father who was implicated in the war for independence, he embarked on July 2 with all the family to Maranhão, whence four months afterwards they were drawn by the father's fortunes to Portugal.

Reaching Oporto on the first day of the year 1824, the young Brazilian obtained admittance into the Coimbra university, where his talents soon became known and applauded. Intending to follow the medical branch of studies, he had already obtained the degree of bachelor of natural philosophy when political commotions again disturbed his studies and obliged him to exchange the student's gown for the sword.

It was the time of the war between the Constitutionalists and Absolutists. The young student, led by his father's example and by the natural convictions and ardor of youth, allowed himself to be swept along by the revolutionary waves and threw himself energetically into the struggle. At all events his cause was a glorious one — that of liberty against despotism and of his rightful Queen against a tyrannical usurper. But victory rested on the enemy's banners, and the academical volunteers, to which Emilio Maia belonged, were obliged to save themselves from the scaffold by fleeing to foreign lands.

After proceeding from Spain to England, the young Brazilian, with a part of his family returned to Brazil, again beholding his native land in 1829. But he returned to Europe the same year in order to finish his studies, and finally on Sept. 2, 1833, obtained from the Paris University a diploma as doctor of medicine. Longing for the land of his birth, he arrived in March, 1834, at Rio de Janeiro, where he fixed his residence.

Dr. Emilio Joaquim da Silva Maia had vowed to consecrate

himself to the cause of science. In keeping this vow he rendered an important service to his country. Forswearing politics, he did not allow himself to be allured by social grandeurs. He preferred literary society to political gatherings; the practice of medicine to the administrative and political labors, and the quiet study of the natural sciences to the ardent commotions of parliamentary debates.

Happy at home, devoting himself exclusively to the cares of his medical practice, to literary and scientific studies and to the instruction of youth, Dr. Emilio Maia could count the years of his life by the real and important services which he rendered his country.

He was one of those laborious, indefatigable and serviceable men, who need no epitaph engraven on their tombstones to hand their name down to posterity, nor a friendly and partial biographer to recount their deeds.

Dr. Emilio Joaquim da Silva Maia distinguished himself in his medical practice by his zeal, activity, skill and charity. He was a member of the Rio de Janeiro Municipal Chamber and, on account of his activity and enlightened ideas, was very useful to the municipality.

He studied the natural sciences with care and pleasure, teaching them in the Imperial College of D. Pedro II, where he had been a professor since 1838. He was likewise director of one of sections of the National Museum, and, as was recognized by learned naturalists of the old world, did much to advance the cause of science by his studies, writings and labors.

He wrote a great deal in the Reviews of the National Industry Aid Society, and Imperial Academy of Medicine, of which latter he was for a long time editor, and in the *Mi-nerva Brasileira*, of which he was founder and editor-in-chief.

He was one of the founders of the Brazilian Geographical and Historical Institute.

To the great qualities to which these services bear witness Dr. Emilio Joaquim da Silva Maia united others no less estimable.

He was a good and affectionate father, a loving husband, a faithful friend, a loyal companion and an honest citizen.

Laborious and busy, he never lost an instant, and knew no other rest than that which he obtained from sleep in the few short hours of the night.

He shortened his days, because he would not spare himself, not even when he was stricken down with the sickness that carried him to the tomb.

Though sick for many months, he refused to abandon his professoral chair or his library, till, forced to take to his bed, he saw that his case was hopeless. His last hour sounded, and his last sigh was breathed on Nov. 21st, 1859.

Dr. Emilio Joaquim da Silva Maia was highly respected by learned and literary men. He belonged to nearly all the literary and scientific societies in Brazil, among which the principal were the Historical and Geographical Institute, the Imperial Academy of Medicine, the National Industry Aid Society, the Bahia Literary Institute and the Velloziana Society.

In Europe his name was written on the roll of the Lisbon Society of Medical Science, the French Society of Natural Sciences, and that of the Northern Antiquarians.

His writings are numerous, but unfortunately are scattered through various periodicals. Essays on political events in Brazil, synoptical tables of the animals of Brazil, prepared for the purpose of facilitating the study of zoology in the Imperial College of D. Pedro II, an address on the scientific and benevolent societies which have been founded

in America, an historical eulogy of José Bonifacio de Andrada e Silva, and several essays on subjects relating to medicine, natural science and literature, besides several academic addresses may be found in the Reviews of the Institute, in the Annals of the Academy of Medicine and in nearly all the literary and scientific periodicals of Rio de Janeiro.



XXII OF NOVEMBER

JOSÉ SATURNINO DA COSTA PEREIRA

José Saturnino do Costa Pereira was the legitimate son of Felix da Costa Furtado and of D. Anna Pereira. He was born in Nov. 22, 1773, in the colony of Sacramento, then forming a part of the Portuguese colony of Brazil.

He graduated at the Coimbra University, and entered the engineer corps at a date that has not been precisely fixed.

In 1814 he was certainly in Rio de Janeiro, for on December 4th of that year the Academy of Mathematical, Physical and Natural Sciences was founded, and he was not only appointed one of the professors, but also employed to write several compendiums for the use of the academy; which shows that his abilities were duly recognized.

In this establishment, afterwards called the Military

Academy, José Saturnino had the reputation of an able professor.

He was brother to Hypolito José da Costa Pereira Furtado de Mendonça who, as has been stated in his biography, had edited since 1807 the *Correio Braziliense*, published in England.

It is not only credible, but actually proved by letters and notes left by José Saturnino, that he kept his brother secretly informed of the progress of events and of the political designs of the Brazilian government, and it is asserted that this secret correspondence was not unknown to the Prince-Regent, afterwards King John VI, who used it more than once for his own purposes.

This fact, which appears to be positive, leaves no stain on the character of José Saturnino, who was working in the interest of his country.

When the independence of the Empire was proclaimed and the constitution framed, José Saturnino da Costa Pereira entered the Senate in 1828, having been included in the list of persons submitted to the Imperial choice by the province of Matto-Grosso.

In the senate he spoke frequently, but always concisely and to the point; he was an able reasoner, and always well-informed, but without pretensions to eloquence.

He was a firm monarchist and supporter of the government, without subjection to any party whatever.

On May 16, 1837, he was chosen minister of War in the last year of the regency of the Rev. Diogo Antonio Feijo.

He went out of office on Sept. 18th of the same year, and of course was able to accomplish very little in the short space of four months, spent principally in heated debates with the strong opposition party in parliament.

His political life was not brilliant, because he did not

endeavor to make it so. His speeches in parliament were short and calm; but he was a notable worker in the committee-rooms, where he was kept constantly employed.

He did not trouble himself with political ambition; his favorite occupations were scientific labors and studies.

He was senator of the Empire; four times minister of War, knight commander of the order of Christ, companion of the order of the Crusader, retired professor of the Military School of Rio de Janeiro and officer of engineers.

He was passionately fond of the fine arts, especially music, and there was one, at least, among his children who could have distinguished himself in this art, if he had not limited the exhibition of his talent to families or private societies.

He died in the city of Rio de Janeiro on January 9, 1852.

Before his death the following of his works had been printed :

Elementary Treatise on Mechanics by M. Fournier, translated into Portuguese, and augmented with additions extracted from the works of Prony, Bossut, Marie, etc.

Investigations concerning the most voluminous of solids of equal surfaces.

Topographical Dictionary of the Empire of Brazil.

General History of Animals, classified according to Cuvier's System, extracted from the observations of the latest and most creditable travelling naturalists.

Elements of Geodesy, preceded by the Principles of Spherical Trigonometry and Astronomy, necessary for the correct understanding of the former, extracted from the Work of Puissant.

Elements of Mechanics.

Application of Algebra to Geometry or Analytical Geometry, according to the System of Lacroix.

Elements of the Differential and Integral Calculi, according to the System of Lacroix.

Notes for the formation of Guide-books of the Coasts of Brazil.

Of these works the first, sixth, seventh and eighth were compendiums for the use of the Military School.

He also left many unfinished and skeleton manuscript works, which offer a conclusive proof of his great industry in scientific pursuits.

It seems unlikely, but it is positively asserted by respectable relatives of Senator José Saturnino, that he wrote and caused to be printed at the National Printing-Office a scientific novel in 14 volumes entitled *The Burnt College*.

The learned Dr. João Joaquim Pizarro, member of the Medical Faculty of Rio de Janeiro, husband of a granddaughter of José Saturnino, declares that among the latter's papers there are documents showing that the work had been sent to the printing-office. But unfortunately the work was never published, and there is no proof of its having been printed.

Was the manuscript lost in the printing-office?

Was it taken away and hidden?

This is a problem which no one can solve.

Among the papers left by José Saturnino it is stated that he had written, finished and sent to the press the work in 14 volumes.

Does *sending to the press* mean *delivering to the printing-office*?

In any case the lost volumes must have been a gigantic work whose fundamental idea seems to have been almost the same as that of the novels of Jules Verne.

From the notes and memoranda found among the papers

of José Saturnino it would appear that the 14 volume novel was a vast scientific study.

Adverse fortune, in the shape of a secret and treacherous enemy *had fired the college* of a learned professor who, fleeing from persecution, and accompanied by devoted pupils, travelled over Brazil, journeying along the coast and through the interior; meeting with all sorts of romantic adventures, in which he took occasion to teach, in a humorous and agreeable form, geography, topography, a description of the manners and customs of the Indians, and of the method of civilizing them, and in short everything relating to the greatness of Brazil, which could amuse and instruct his young pupils and fellow-travellers, on this scientific journey or pilgrimage.

It is therefore easy to see that by the disappearance of this novel Brazil lost a great treasure.



XXIII OF NOVEMBER

MANOEL ARRUDA DA CAMARA

Manoel Arruda da Camara was born in 1752, in the district (now province) of Alagoas, then belonging to the captaincy of Pernambuco.

On November 23, 1783, he was admitted into the Goyana convent of the Carmelite order, adopting the name of Friar Manoel do Coração de Jesus.

Shortly afterwards he went to Portugal, where he studied medicine in the Coimbra University. He was obliged to emigrate, on account of the rigorous measures adopted by the government against the students who had openly declared themselves in favor of the principles of the French revolution.

Arruda da Camara went to France, and in Montpellier resumed the study of medicine, taking the degree of doctor

and obtaining at the same time his secularization from the court of Rome.

On his return to Brazil, he passed by Lisbon, where he made a short delay before returning to his country.

Arruda da Camara practiced medicine in Pernambuco; but he had carefully studied the natural sciences, especially botany, and with such interest did he prosecute these studies that he soon obtained a considerable reputation.

The government employed him in scientific commissions in Rio de Janeiro and Pernambuco, but unfortunately he did not live long enough to accomplish all he had projected.

His death took place in Pernambuco in 1818 in the 52d year of his age.

Manoel Arruda da Camara conceived an excellent project for a botanical work entitled *Centurias*, or the Pernambuco Flora, which, however, he was never able to realize in a systematic manner; but he published a number of pamphlets, thus causing the plants to become known.

He left drawings and manuscripts as materials for this work, some of the plants without explanation and others well described.

He was also author of the following important works:

Dissertation on the *gravata* and other textile plants of Brazil: 1810.

Address on the utility of gardens in the principal provinces of Brazil: 1810.

Essay on the culture of the cotton plant, with plates: 1799.

Essay of Brazilian plants suitable for the Manufacture of Potash: published in the 4th vol. of the Memoirs of the Lisbon Royal Academy of Science, p. 83-93.

Advice to Farmers on the inutility of fermenting grains or

seeds for the purpose of increasing the crop, as had been recommended in a publication at that time : 1792.

There are many species and even genera of Brazilian plants named by Arruda ; but few of his designations are now retained except as synonyms, such as the Carnauba-tree (the Northern palm), to which Arruda gave the botanical name of *Coripha cerifera* (*Copernicea cerifera* of Martins) ; the Cagopary or *Moranobea erculenta* of Arruda (*Platonia insignis* of Martins), etc., etc.

In many orders of plants belonging to the Brazilian flora may be found species and genera named in honor of the Brazilian botanist, besides the notes relating to the useful vegetable productions of Brazil.

Sainte Hilaire perpetuated the name of Arruda in designating the genus *Arrudea* in the family of the Gutlifers.

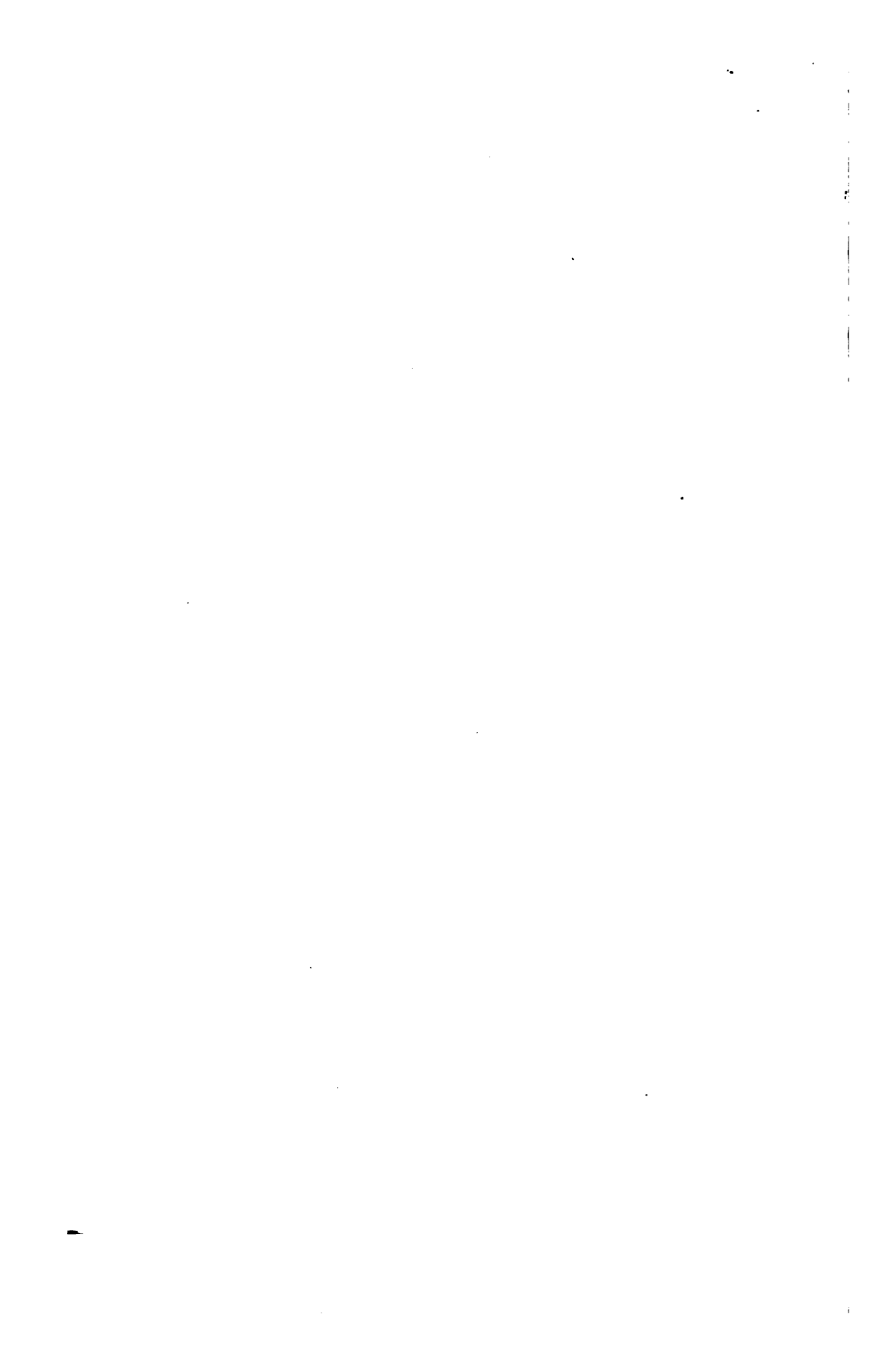
Much has been said concerning his knowledge of mineralogical science.

It is supposed that some of the commissions with which he was intrusted related to this subject.

Manoel Arruda da Camara was a member of the Royal Academy of Sciences of Lisbon, and was held in high esteem by learned naturalists of the old world.

In Brazil, which considers itself honored by so illustrious a son, some persons fix his birthplace in Pernambuco and others in Parahyba, and finally as the result of the investigations of the industrious and learned Dr. Saldanha da Gama (whose opinion is here adopted) it appears that he was born in Alagoas, which at that time formed a part of the captaincy of Pernambuco.





XXIV OF NOVEMBER

JOSÉ MONTEIRO DE NORONHA

José Monteiro de Noronha was born in the city of Nossa Senhora de Belém, capital of Grão-Pará, in the year 1723, in which he was also christened on Nov. 24th. His father, pleased with the talent which he early displayed, confided his literary education to the Jesuit priests of the Santo Alexandre College, where the promising child completed the study of Latin, and made rapid progress in philosophy, physics, theology, geometry and in other sciences in which he was instructed.

The followers of Saint Ignatius Loyola exerted themselves to persuade José Monteiro to join the order; but, not yielding to their persuasions, he returned home, where he practiced law and was elected member of the Municipal Chamber, serving in virtue of this office as municipal Judge during the absence of this magistrate. In 1754, having lost

his beloved and virtuous wife, he sought consolation in the bosom of the church, was admitted into holy orders and made presbyter.

The bishop, Friar Miguel de Bulhões, appointed him vicar-general of the immense district of Rio Negro, in which capacity Father José Monteiro rendered important services to the cause of religion and society, reforming the habits of his flock and setting a humane and virtuous example.

In his vicarial visits he was obliged to make long journeys, often navigating unknown rivers, which led him to undertake the writing of a guide-book of the localities which he visited. This project, which he afterwards extended to the whole of the province of Pará, he was able to execute, but the difficulties with which he had to contend in doing so can hardly be conceived.

Having finally finished his work, he was unable to print it, but fortunately it was not lost, as several copies were kept of this important work, in which, for the first time a native of Pará had written on the geography, topography and statistics of his province.

By the bishop, Friar João Evangelista Pereira, the illustrious and pious Father José Monteiro was appointed vicar-general of Pará.

This worthy and learned priest was also distinguished as a pulpit orator, but unfortunately his sermons have been all lost except one of great merit, which he preached on the opening of the charity hospital founded by the bishop, Friar Caetano Brandão.

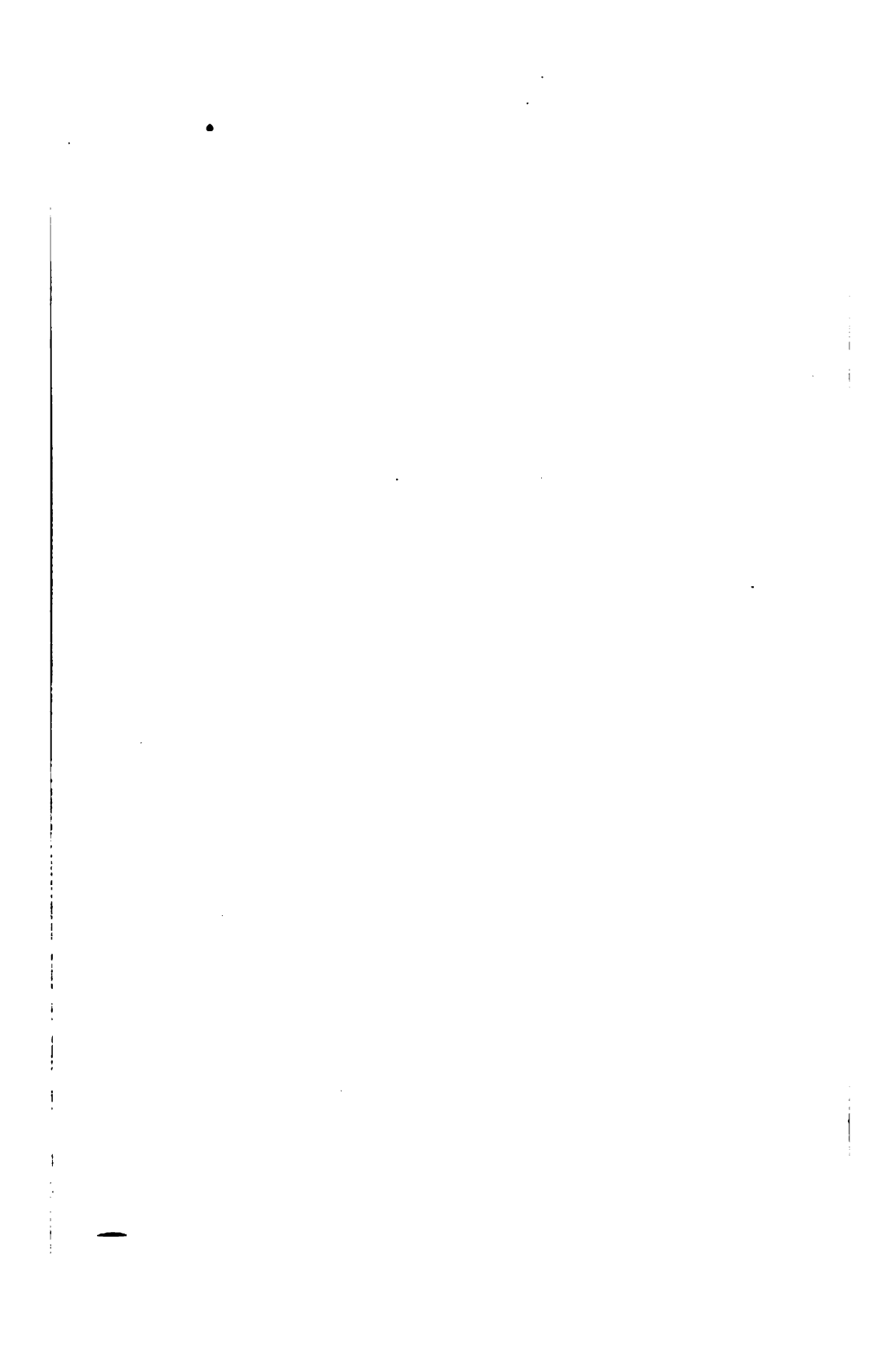
He served in Para more than once as capitulary vicar, winning the respect and veneration of all.

On April 15, 1794, he placidly expired in the midst of his

honors and in the enjoyment of the love and esteem of his flock.

His ecclesiastical services and labors were certainly useful to his fellow men and are deserving of gratitude ; but besides this, history cannot overlook his *Guide-book* which, although inferior in geographical knowledge to later works, must be admired as a work demanding immense labor and perseverance on the part of its author, and as the first ray of reliable scientific light thrown on a vast, and then almost unknown, region of the Brazilian Empire.





XXV OF NOVEMBER

JOÃO DE BRITO E LIMA

João de Brito e Lima was born in Bahia on Oct. 22nd, 1671. He was the legitimate son of the alcaide-mór Sebastião de Araujo e Lima, lieutenant-general of artillery, and of D. Anna Maria da Silva.

He studied the humanities in the city of Bahia, never leaving his native land and, consequently, never being able to enrich his intellect with extensive and varied acquirements.

At that period, beyond the colleges and convents established by the civilizing influence of religious orders, the

Brazilians had no means to acquire instruction in their own country. There were no public libraries nor printing-offices, and good books were scarce and not easily obtained.

João de Brito e Lima was merely a mediocre poet; but in judging his literary merit, it is necessary to take into consideration the circumstances and intellectual level of the time in which he lived.

His works, printed in Lisbon from 1718 to 1742, consist of an elegiac poem to the first-born child of the Count of Villa-Flôr, a festive poem on the marriage of the Prince-Royal, another addressed to Judge Madeira, verses on the death of D. Leonor de Vilhena, sonnets, etc.

Besides these works Balthazar da Silva Lisboa in his MS. *Biographical Notes on Illustrrious Brazilians* (left by him to the Historical Institute) mentions the following poetical productions of João de Brito:

Cezaria, an epic poem, containing the genealogy of D. Vasco Fernandes, Count of Sabugosa, and a narration of his actions in the government of India and Brazil. — Unpublished.

A *Poem*, on the entrance into Bahia of the infantry captain Manoel Xavier. — Unpublished.

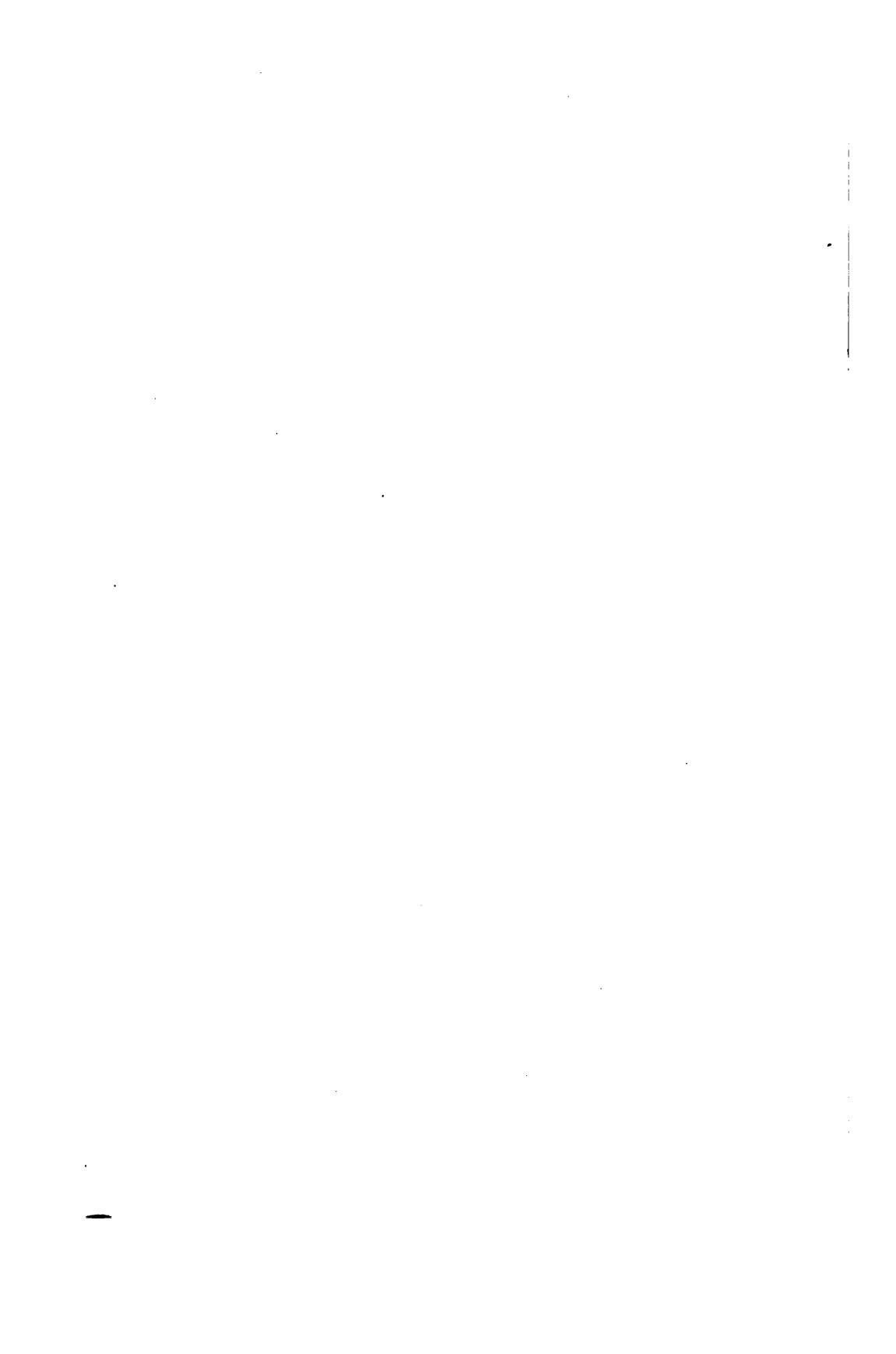
Another poem on the profession of two sisters in the Convent of Santa Clara in Bahia.

Another on the happy arrival of the arch-bishop, D. Luiz Alvares de Figueiredo.

João de Brito e Lima was a member of the *Academia dos Esquecidos*, founded under the auspices of the Count of Sabugosa.

Balthazar da Silva Lisboa says that, as well as he can remember, João de Brito e Lima died on November 25th, 1747; what is certain is, that he was seventy years old at the time of his death.





XXVI OF NOVEMBER

LADISLAU DOS SANTOS TATIARA

Ladislau do Espirito Santo Mello was born on May 24, 1801, in the village of Feira de Capuam, in the Parish of Senhor do Bomfim da Matta, then belonging to the municipal district of the capital and afterwards to that of the town of Matta.

He obtained his primary instruction from his father, the lawyer Manoel Ferreira dos Santos Reis, and prosecuted his preparatory studies in the city of São Salvador, numbering among his masters the celebrated and respectable Dr. Antonio Ferreira França.

In April, 1820, Thomaz Antonio da Villa Nova Portugal, minister in the Portuguese government then in Rio de Janeiro, obtained for young Ladisláu a pension for eight years in order that he might graduate in medicine at the Coimbra University.

This favor shows the hopes of a brilliant future inspired by the talent of the Brazilian student; but he was unable to profit, for on his arrival at Bahia *en route* for Lisbon the affair of Nov. 7, 1821, took place and immediately afterwards the holy struggle for independence.

The battle-cry of Brazilian regeneration could not fail to find an echo in the breast of the high-spirited and intrepid young man who, exchanging his books for the sword, hastened to the post of honor. Emigrating to the patriot camp in the vicinity of the city, he served as amanuensis at the head-quarters of Lieut-col. Joaquim Pires Carneiro e Albuquerque, afterwards Viscount of Pirajá, who had assembled the two battalions of Torre and Pirajá in order to rescue the former capital of Brazil from the hands of the Portuguese.

At this glorious period the partisans of Brazilian independence, in irrepressible explosions of patriotism, employed the most ingenious devices in discovering expedients for displaying their sentiments to the world.

A flaming press, the sacrifice of property in behalf of the noble cause, perils, privations and battlefields where every citizen risked his life, all was not enough.

Patriotism inspired many with the desire to forget the very names which they had inherited from a Portuguese ancestry, and among others young Ladislau do Espirito Santo Mello, who changed his name to Ladislau dos Santos Titára by which he was ever afterwards known.

The war for independence continued.

Ladislau dos Santos Titára enlisted as a cadet in the regular artillery on August 29, 1822.

On Oct. 27 he was called to head-quarters to act as clerk in the department of the adjutant-general of the liberating army, being transferred on Jan. 23, 1823 to the 4th battalion of riflemen, in which he continued to serve without pay until he was made an officer.

In April, 1823, he was appointed brevet staff-lieutenant by General Pedro Labatut, commander-in-chief of the liberating army, and on the 21st of May, was appointed acting military secretary in the place of the actual secretary who was in arrest.

He continued to perform the duties of this office until he was relieved thereof in such a manner as to cast reflections on his zeal and, consequently, sting him into just resentment.

He demanded a court of enquiry which acquitted him of all blame and ordered him to be restored to his post; but he contented himself with the first part of the sentence and did not resume his office.

In February, 1826, he entered the service of the Registry of the Port of Bahia, and in the same year, when the Emperor Pedro I visited that city, was appointed staff-lieutenant.

Following a military career, he accompanied, as military secretary, the expedition sent in April, 1840, from Bahia to the Piauhy frontier. In 1841 he served in Santa Catharina as adjutant of the recruiting depot and as military secretary, acting, also, temporarily as major.

In 1842 he served in São Paulo as paymaster of the forces sent on the Rio Negro expedition. In October of the same year he was ordered to Rio Grande do Sul, when in

1847 he was placed in charge of the military depot. In 1851 he was appointed assistant quarter-master and held this office till 1856, rendering good service.

Having promoted to a majority, he was in 1859 designated to assist at Rio de Janeiro in compiling the military code under the direction of Senator João Antonio de Miranda. The same year he was chosen by the Minister of War to prepare a chronological index, of which he presented the first five years on November 26, 1857. A grand idea, a noble and honorable impulse drew Ladislau Titára from his literary to a military career, but it was never able to make him forget his first inclination.

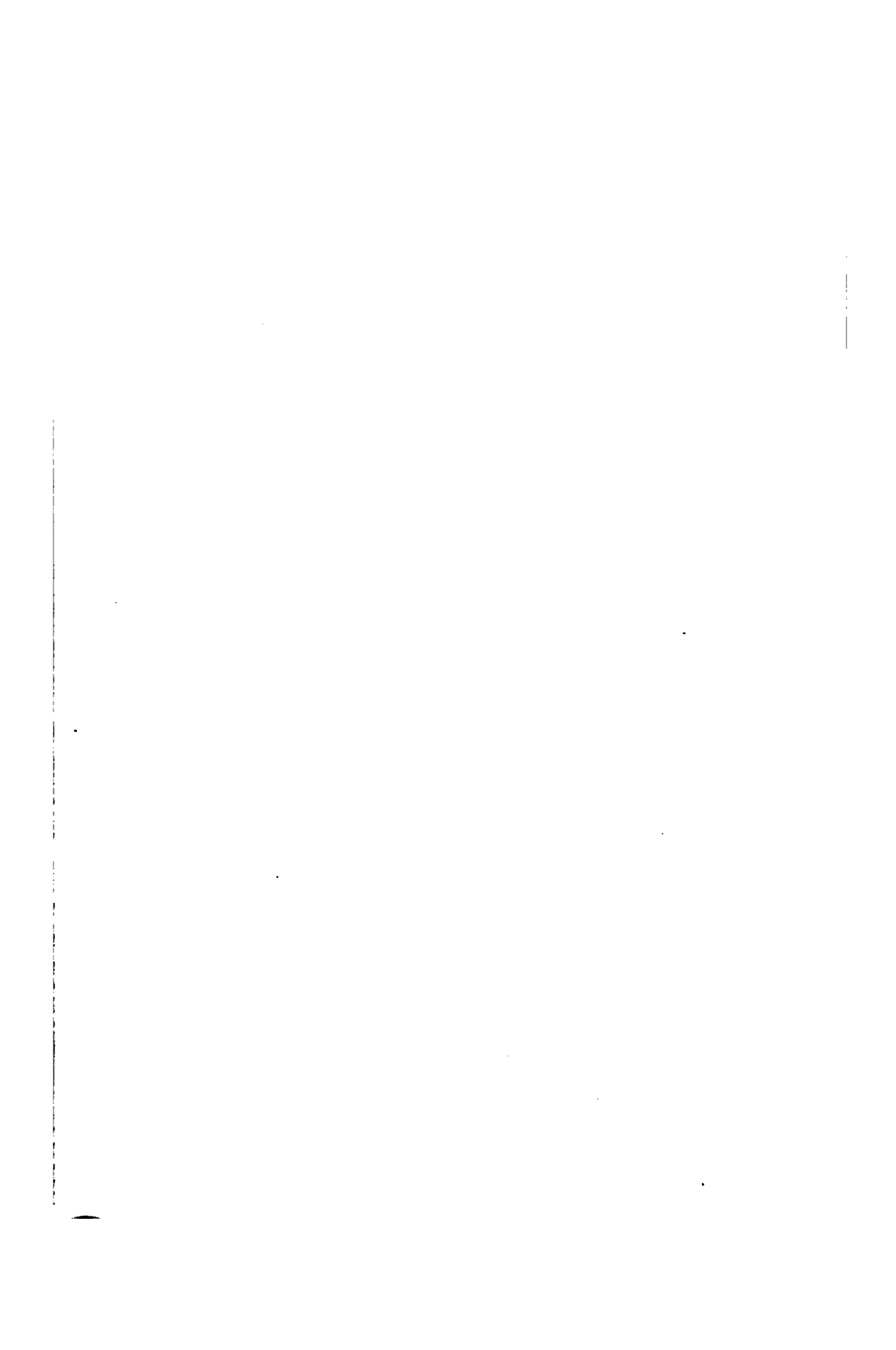
The soldier sought repose from his military duties in the culture of his taste for literary and historical studies. He was the author of eight volumes of poetry, a treatise on tropes and figures, with examples in Latin and Portuguese, a highly esteemed work in two volumes, called the *Auditor Brasileiro*, and the History of the Grand South American Liberating Army in its campaigns against the Tyrants of the River Plate, a valuable work containing some important facts respecting the battle of Itusaingo. Besides these printed works, he left a manuscript entitled *Corographic Notes on the Provinces of Bahia, Santa Catharina, São Paulo and Rio Grande do Sul*.

Always industrious and always patriotic, Ladisláu dos Santos Titára consecrated everything to his country; he gave her his arm, his heart and his mind—the warrior's sword, the writer's pen and the poet's harp.

The breast of Titára already adorned with the Independence medal, received by the special favor of H. M. the Emperor D. Pedro II on the 10th of February, 1846, the

cross of the Order of the Crusader, on July 8, 1848, that of the Order of Aviz, and on December 2, 1852, the appointment of companion of the Imperial Order of the Rose.

Major Ladisláu dos Santos Titára died in the city of Rio de Janeiro in the year 1861.



XXVII OF NOVEMBER

JOSÉ PINTO DE AZEREDO

José Pinto de Azeredo, son of the regimental surgeon Francisco de Azeredo, was born in Rio de Janeiro in the year 1763. After studying the humanities in his native city with the laudations of all his teachers, he was sent by his father to Europe to study medicine in the celebrated Edinburgh Faculty which in 1787 conferred on him the degree of doctor.

Having received his diploma, Pinto de Azeredo wrote an essay for the Harveiana prize, entitled « A Dissertation on the Chemical and Medical Properties of the so-called Lithontriptic substances » to which essay the said prize was awarded.

This essay, accompanied by a hundred and six experiments made by the author, made a considerable impression and excited great interest.

On his return to Rio de Janeiro, he practiced his profession for four years with great credit; but in 1792, desiring a wider field, he went to Lisbon where shortly after his arrival he accepted the office of chief physician at Angola. He there rendered excellent service, teaching the practice of medicine as he had been ordered by the government, and collecting full and valuable notes from his extensive practice.

At the end of four years, sick and exhausted, he fled the fatal climate of Angola, and returned to Lisbon, where some months after he published his highly esteemed work on « Some of the Diseases prevalent at Angola. »

By Queen Maria I he was appointed physician of the Royal Bedchamber and decorated with the cross of chevalier of the order of Chirst.

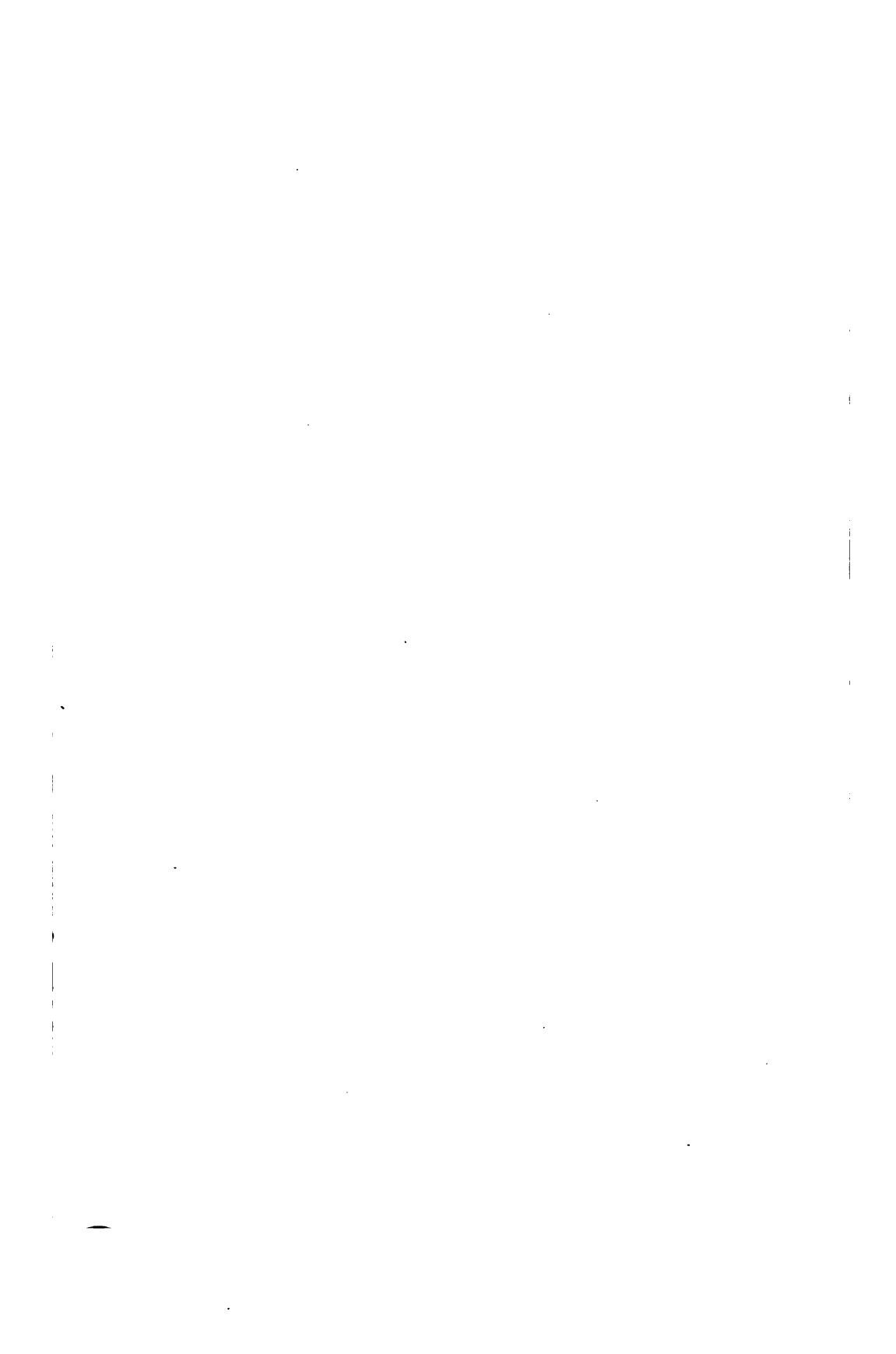
In 1807, when the prince-regent D. John resolved to send to Brazil the Prince D. Pedro with the title of Constable, Dr. José Pinto de Azeredo was chosen to form a part of the latter's *suite*. But he failed to go, not only because this idea was thwarted by the sudden and unforeseen emigration of D. John himself and the whole royal family, but also because the illustrious Brazilian physician was stricken down with an attack of the brain fever and died in Lisbon in the same year of 1807.

Dr. José Pinto de Azeredo was a member of the Harveian Society at Edinburgh and of the Lisbon Academy of Science.

Dr. Emilio Joaquim da Silva Maia wrote an historical

panegyric of Dr. José Pinto de Azeredo, which he read on November 27, 1840, at a public meeting of the Brazilian Historical and Geographical Institute. From this panegyric are extracted the principal facts here narrated; and in default of other dates for registering the name of the illustrious Brazilian, selection is made of the 27th of November, the day on which his services were solemnly commemorated.





XXIII OF NOVEMBER

JOSÉ ELLOY PESSÔA

José Eloy, son of the surgeon, Major Christovão Pereira da Silva and of D. Josepha Maria Pessoa, was born on July 27, 1792, in the city of Bahia. He there received his primary and secondary instruction and was ready to go to the Coimbra University, as his father desired, when he concluded to enlist, which he did on November 28, 1807, in the first company of the artillery regiment that garrisoned his native city.

On account of his advancement in his studies and the excellent result of the examinations to which he was subjected, he was soon promoted to the rank of captain.

The captain-general, Count of Arcos, appreciating his talent and aptitude for mathematical studies, obtained from

the prince-regent John leave for José Eloy to attend the Coimbra University, receiving at the same time his military pay.

The latter, after graduating, returned to Brazil with a diploma as bachelor of philosophy and with the rank of Major in the army.

The year of 1821 was one of revolutionary excitement. Major José Eloy de Pessoa who arrived at Bahia in August, brought from Bahia all the revolutionary ideas there in vogue.

On November 3, he took part in a demonstration for the deposition of the Provincial Committee organized on February 10, was arrested and sent to Lisbon. As soon as he was released he returned to Bahia which on his arrival he found to be in possession of the Portuguese general Madeira, while the patriot army was organizing the means of resistance in the surrounding country. Without waiting to hear more, he hastened to the patriot camp where he worthily served until General Labatut withdrew him from the seat of war, much to his regret, in order to send him to Sergipe as military and civil governor, a commission which was highly honorable, especially at that time.

Bahia being liberated, the Emperor D. Pedro I honored Eloy Pessoa with several administrative commissions, promoted him to the rank of Lieutenant-Colonel and placed him in command of the artillery brigade in the city of Bahia.

On his arrival at that city, he found everything in confusion and terror on account of the mutiny of the troops, in which the commander of the military district, Colonel Felisberto Gomes Caldeira, had been murdered. Taking

command of the legal military forces, he displayed such energy, zeal and courage that in a short time the rule of law and order was restored in the city.

In 1825 he was ordered with his brigade to take part in the southern campaign, and was detached to garrison the island of Garrit. But in the cisplatine war, the army received more injury from internal intrigues than from the enemy. Eloy Pessoa was one of the victims of calumny and perfidy, and obliged to return to Rio de Janeiro where he retired from active service with the rank of colonel.

Consoling himself with the pleasures of home in the bosom of his family, he devoted himself to the practice of law, in which he gained considerable reputation.

In 1831 he returned to active military service and entered the engineers corps, rendering important services in the construction of military works at the capital of his native province. He also lectured on artillery and field fortifications to a class which he opened on May 3, 1832, with an eloquent and learned address.

In 1837 he was appointed president of the province of Sergipe, and aided the legal forces in the victory over the republican revolt which broke out in Bahia on November 7 and continued till the 15th of the following February.

He was a member of the legislature of his province, and elected deputy to the General Assembly from that of Sergipe. In Alagôas he commanded the legal forces against armed faction, and was appointed by the provincial government of Bahia and by the military corps to congratulate the Emperor when the latter was declared of age.

A man of honor and morality, generally esteemed and possessing, as far as was known, no enemies whatever, he

was shot one night, on returning from the city of Bahia to his country residence on the Rio Vermelho road, by an assassin who was never discovered.

He died on March 2, 1841, when he was still in the prime of his life, the victim of a mysterious and inexplicable crime.

His death cast a gloom over the city of Bahia which honored the illustrious victim with the most solemn and demonstrative exequies.

At the time of his death, José Eloy Pessoa was brigadier-general, chevalier of the orders of the Crusador and São Bento de Aviz, groom of the Imperial bedchamber, corresponding member of the Brazilian Geographical and Historical Society, and besides had been decorated with the campaign medal conceded to those who distinguished themselves in the war for the liberation of Bahia.

He was reputed an able chemist, and taught practical and theoretical chemistry to a scientific society in Bahia. He was, moreover, proficient in several languages.



XXIX OF NOVEMBER

SATURNINO DE SOUZA E OLIVEIRA COUTINHO

Brother of Aureliano, Viscount of Sepetiba and legitimate son of Aureliano de Souza e Oliveira and his wife, whose name is not mentioned by biographers, Saturnino de Souza e Oliveira Coutinho was born in Corrego Secco, where the city of Petropolis now stands, on November 29, 1803.

He prosecuted his preparatory studies in the city of Rio de Janeiro and graduated in the law course of the Coimbra University, returning to the Brazilian capital in 1825.

He opened a lawyer's office and soon distinguished himself. Among his clients were the Bank, the Municipal

Chamber, several important commercial houses and, what is more, the two Andradas, Antonio Carlos and Martim Francisco, who retained him for their defense when they returned from exile.

In 1831 Saturnino, who was a Liberal, took part with the moderate party. He was then justice of the peace of the parish of Sacramento, and when the National Guard was organized was elected lieutenant-colonel of the battalion of that parish.

As justice of the peace he was at the São Pedro d'Alcantara theatre when the troops, incensed at provocations received, fired into the pit, though without aiming at the spectators.

Saturnino hastened to prevent a repetition of this act, though by the ultra-oppositionists he was for some time attacked as being the author of this unwise and inexcusable conduct of an undisciplined soldiery.

On the 17th of April, 1832, he commanded his battalion in an engagement with the *Caramurus* or partisans of the conspiracy organized for restoring D. Pedro I to the throne, risking his life for the cause of law and order.

In 1831 and 1832 he distinguished himself by his civic courage and patriotic devotion, as an energetic enemy of anarchy and an intrepid supporter of the liberal cause.

In 1833 he was elected deputy to the General Assembly by the province and city of Rio de Janeiro, and where, in the following year he took his seat in the chamber, he showed himself worthy of the confidence of his constituents.

Appointed inspector of the Rio de Janeiro custom-house, he held this office for a number of years.

He promoted the building of the Exchange, recommended various useful, economical and fiscal, reforms, assisted in drafting the respective regulations and so conducted himself as to win the approbation and laudations of such ministers as Martim Francisco and Calmon, afterwards Marquis of Abrantes. From the trade he received every proof of the confidence, esteem and consideration with which he was regarded.

Saturnino enjoyed more than any other inspector of the first custom-house of the Empire, the entire and well-merited confidence of the government, and at the same time the utmost popularity with the trade.

In 1836 he had a disagreement with the minister of finance, and, in consideration of what was due to his self-respect and to the important office which he held, he resigned ; but about a year afterwards he was restored to his position by the minister, Miguel Calmon Dupin e Almeida. The latter act gave great satisfaction to the merchants. The captains of the merchant vessels in port adorned their rigging with banners, and the mercantile community celebrated the event with joyous festivities.

He had frequently evaded the acceptance of the office of president of a province ; but he deemed it his duty to accept the presidency of Rio Grande do Sul in 1839 when that province was desolated by rebellion. Not being able to agree with the military commander of the district, General Manuel Jorge Rodrigues, afterwards Baron of Taquary, both were dismissed, and Saturnino returned to his place in the custom-house.

In 1841 he was again appointed president of that province and held his office till the end of the following year, when he surrendered it to the Baron (now Duke) of Caxias, in whose hands the government wisely united the two offices of president and military commandant.

In the administration of the province of Rio Grande, Saturnino, as far as he could, dealt severely with the parties engaged in the contraband trade of furnishing arms to the rebels.

On retiring from the province his name was connected with works of public utility at Porto Alegre and Rio Grande ; and the papers were filled with addresses from the municipal chambers and other authorities, manifesting their appreciative gratitude for his excellent administration and valuable services rendered to the province.

On his return to his office in the custom-house, he presented himself as the liberal candidate for senator in 1844, but was defeated in consequence of the strenuous efforts made by the ministry and the conservative party to prevent his election.

The same year the conservative ministry resigned, and the liberals, obtaining office, dissolved the chamber of deputies. At the ensuing elections Saturnino was elected deputy from the city and province of Rio de Janeiro, and was an influential member of the new chamber.

On May 22, 1847, he entered the cabinet organized by Manoel Alves Branco, afterwards Viscount of Caravellas, and was placed at the head of the department of Foreign Affairs, being intrusted temporarily with the portfolio of finance and afterwards with that of justice. He left office on January 22, 1848. During the session he was one of the

principal and most eloquent supporters of the government in the chamber of deputies, where it had a large and decided majority.

In 1848 he was chosen senator on the triple list presented to the Crown by the city and province of Rio de Janeiro.

But it was fated that he should not take his seat in the Senate.

He was taken sick in March, and, having received medical treatment, he was expected to recover; but he was so profoundly affected by the news of the French revolution in February, 1858, that he became worse and died shortly afterwards.

Saturnino de Souza e Oliveira was so poor at the time of his death that his funeral expenses had to be paid by his friends.

But the day of his burial was one of public mourning. All the merchant ships in the harbor were dropped in flags at halfmast, and the merchants refrained from transacting business with the Customhouse.

Saturnino was dignitary of the Imperial Order of the Crusader, or, in the language of the eloquent Porto Alegre, now Baron of Santo Angelo, the order of the sons of Themistocles.

Saturnino de Souza e Oliveira was a just and energetic man, possessing a powerful and cultivated mind and a wide and generous heart.

As an administrator, he was zealous and upright; as a parliamentary debater, calm and dispassionate, but gifted with vigorous reasoning power. To all these qualities he united strict and uncontested integrity.

man, possessing a powerful and cultivated mind and a wide and generous heart.

As an administrator, he was zealous and upright ; as a parliamentary debater, calm and dispassionate, but gifted with vigorous reasoning power. To all these qualities he united strict and uncontested integrity.



XXX OF NOVEMBER

D. FRANCISCO ROLIM DE MOURA

D. Francisco de Moura who distinguished himself in Europe, Asia and America was born in Pernambuco in 1580. He was the legitimate son of D. Felipe de Moura, a Portuguese, and of D. Genebra Cavalcanti, a native of Pernambuco.

He adopted a military career and was considered a distinguished general, being noted for his coolness and courage in the heat of battle.

He won renown in India, Flanders and Brazil in the wars in which Portugal was obliged to engage, in the beginning of the 17th century, in obedience to the behests of the Spanish conqueror, and in defence of her ancient domains.

In 1625 he assisted no little in liberating Bahia from the Dutch who had conquered it in 1624. On November 30 of this year he had preceded the Hispano-Portuguese fleet which arrived in the following March, carrying with him his appointment as governor-general, in which capacity he served after the capitulation of the Dutch garrison, until 1626.

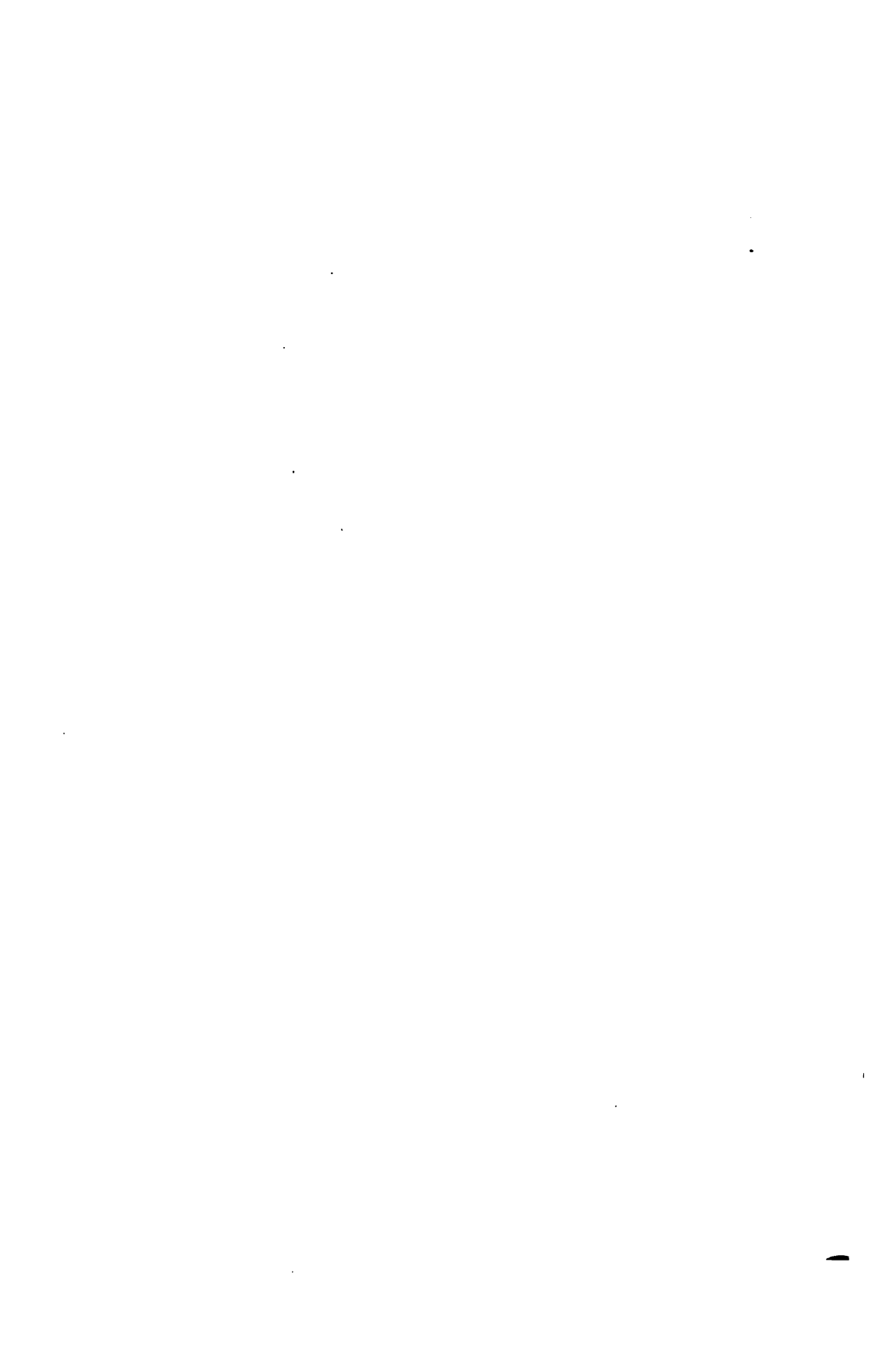
His services were rewarded with numerous and valuable recompenses from the monarch, among others the fee-simple of Graciosa island in the Açores archipelago.

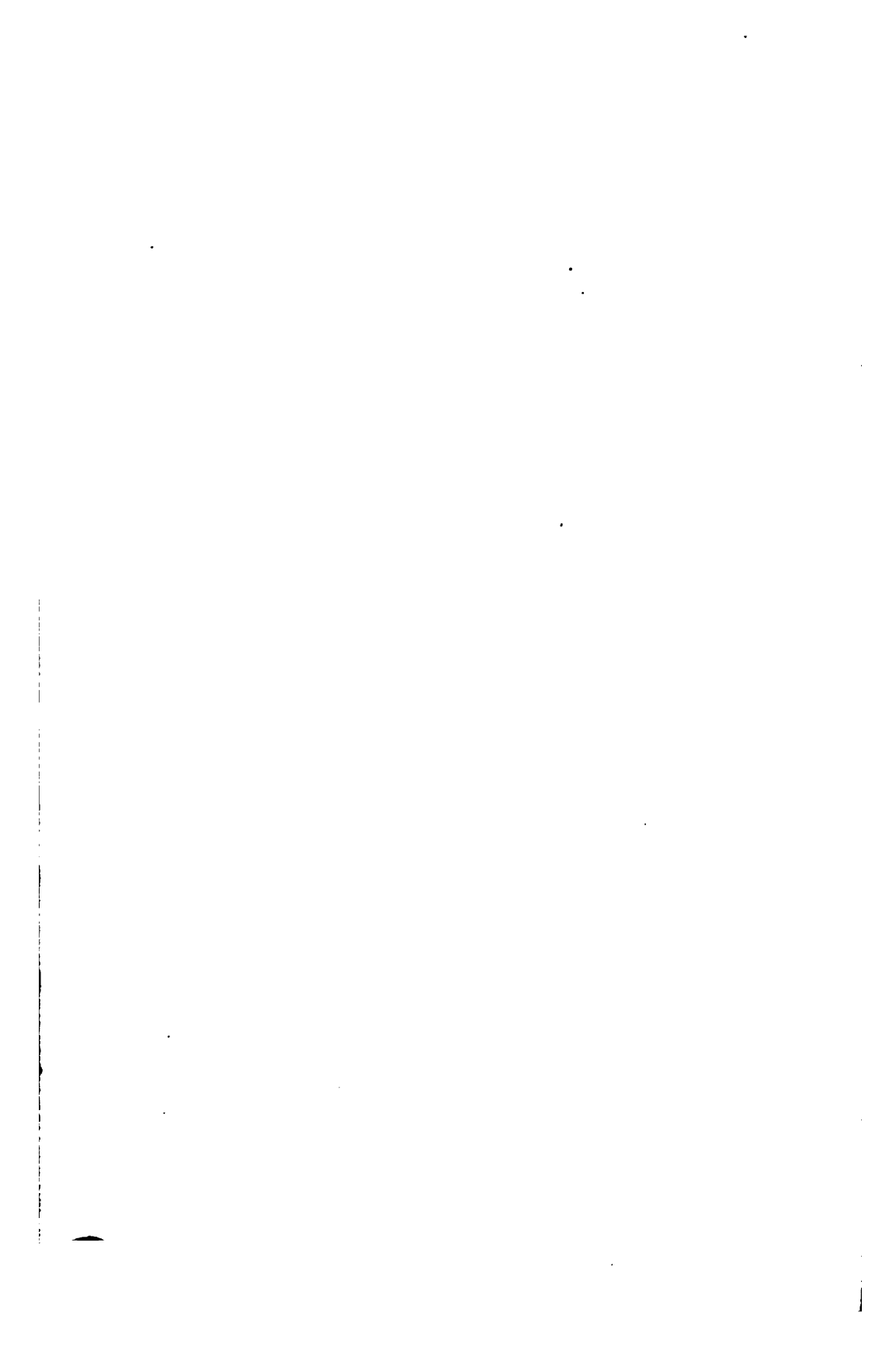
He was a member of the Portuguese council.

He died in Lisbon in the year 1657, aged 67, leaving no descendants.

In default of the dates of the principal events of his life, the name of this illustrious Brazilian is registered on the 30th of November.







I OF DECEMBER

MANOEL DE MACEDO

A priest and celebrated preacher, was born in Pernambuco in 1603, descended from a distinguished family. It is not known at what period he left Brazil and proceeded to Portugal, where he completed his literary education, and immediately began to assume a high position in the pulpit.

Portugal was under the dominion of Spain, and so brilliant a reputation had Father Manoel de Macedo that the Court of Madrid sought to attract him. The Duchess of Mantua appointed him her chaplain, and honored him with the greatest esteem.

Manoel de Macedo was in Lisbon when the Portuguese revolution broke out on the 1st of December, 1640, and D. John IV was proclaimed King; his relations with high personages and ministers of Spain, and the favors which

the government of Madrid had dispensed him, caused him to be suspected and prompted his imprisonment and banishment to India.

The best proof of the injustice of the imprisonment and banishment which he suffered is in the fact that D. John IV ordered the exiled priest to return to Portugal, when this kingdom had not yet concluded peace with Spain, and on the contrary was under apprehensions of Spanish invasion.

The splendid fame of the eloquent and profound sacred orator naturally united with the recognition of his innocence served to hasten his return from India.

But unfortunately the vessel in which Father Manoel de Macedo returned to Lisbon, put in at Angola, and there, in 1645, this distinguished and celebrated Brazilian died.

The sermons of Manoel de Macedo are much eulogized by authorities like the Count of Ericeira (D. Luiz), the Abbot Diogo Barbosa, and Friar Theodoro Monteiro.



II OF DECEMBER

JOSÉ MARIANI

José Mariani was born in May, 1890, in the Villa da Barra, province of Bahia, in the capital of which he studied the humanities. He graduated in law in the university of Coimbra, and came to follow in his native country the career of a magistrate.

Despatched in that capacity (*juiz de fóra*) to Maranhão, he strengthened his reputation as a most distinguished magistrate by his cultivated intelligence, and his severe and unsurpassed rectitude. The sentence of Dr. Mariani was always the lively expression of right and of the law.

He exercised in the same province the functions of Chief of Police; he rose there also to the Upper Court (*Tribunal da Relação, as Desembargador*). Some years afterwards he was transferred to the Upper Court of the city of Rio de

Janeiro, being at last chosen member of the Supreme Court of Justice.

Counsilor José Mariani at the pinnacle of the magistracy showed himself the same as he had been when a magistrate in Maranhão, except in the progressive enlargement of his knowledge, principally in juridical science, and the practise, which made him with facility seek for justice and right in the midst of the sophisms and artifices which law papers heap together.

The name of Mariani discouraged that intervention, demoralizing and repugnant, but active, importunate and audacious, which is called — *empenho* — (the undue employment of personal interest); he, the magistrate of sublime deafness, disconcerted the *empenho*, which undeceived, fled from the judge who never gave ear to it.

As a high proof of his well deserved reputation, Counsilor José Mariani was appointed a member of the commission which was to examine the civil code of the profound and learned jurisconsult Dr. Augusto Teixeira de Freitas; he, however, did not accept the charge, because he reputed it incompatible with the post of Minister of the Supreme Court of Justice.

Without interrupting the functions which he exercised of *Desembargador* of the Upper Court, he occupied provisionally in the capital of the Empire the post of Inspector-general of primary and secondary instruction of the municipality of Rio de Janeiro.

During the minority of the Emperor D. Pedro II, he twice relinquished his life of magistrate, being entrusted with the presidency of the province of Pará, and afterwards with that of S. Pedro do Rio Grande do Sul, before the rebellion which for nine years steeped it in blood. In both the presidencies his government was that of the law, nor

could it be otherwise: a liberal in principles, José Mariani relinquished the honours of a party politician, for, impartial and upright, he listened only to the right.

The province of Maranhão, which had adopted him proudly at the opening, and in the flower of his grand career as an exemplary magistrate, four times included him in the lists for Senator submitted to the choice of the Crown.

A judge of the highest integrity, of unblemished probity deservng and enjoying the fullest confidence from all, a magistrate who died virgin from the faintest suspicion of partiality or of lightest patronage, Councillor José Mariani was further a man of letters, a Latinist of great power, a gentle and witty talker in the society of good and illustrious friends, and the head of a family, who renewed at his virtuous heart the holy and pure life of the good patriarchs, who with tender love and with the most exalted virtues blessed their spouse, their children and the band of chosen ones who frequented their tent.

Councillor José Mariano, at 75 years of age, and still in all the vigour of his mind and his fine intelligence, died in the city of Rio de Janeiro on the 2nd of December, 1875.

His shroud was, thus it was meet, the judge's toga, for there never has been or will be a magistrate who has exceeded or can exceed him in probity, and in the just application of the law, and in the vestal worship of the flame of right.





III OF DECEMBER

FRIAR FRANCISCO DE MONT'ALVERNE



The fair and immense region of the south of America, which a happy fortune had revealed to the eyes of Cabral, opened up a vast and brilliant theatre to the triumphs of Catholicism. It was certainly not to the sword of its warriors that the Portuguese crown principally owed the conquest of a world, which yet belonged to heathenism: it was the to prodigies and the miracles of the cross, which making the light of truth to shine, and spreading on every hand the germs of civilization, broke the arrows of the Indian, and assured the power of the European. Mem de Sá and Dr. Salema appear only in the second place in the picture, in which tower grandly the figures of Nobrega and Anchieta.

The hosts of the third Governor-general of Brazil might

have been routed by the *Tamoyos* in conspiracy, had not the charm of the two Jesuits availed them, who caused the peace of the Word, of religion and of charity to spring forth; and the victory of Dr. Salema was the work of devastation and extermination, which always leaves roots to hatred, and demonstrates only the abuse of strength, which neither brought advantage to the Faith, nor established alliances.

The apostles of the new world bring to the midst of the *tabas* of the heathen, that sublime eloquence which had gone forth from the Last Supper with the first apostles; the grace of the Lord makes their words fruitful, and these work wonderful conversions.

While warlike colonists defend a conquest, which is still limited to the white beaches of a most lovely sea-shore, and devour, with an ambitious eye, the magnificent forests which mark the Herculean vegetation of the torrid zone, the Jesuits penetrate intrepid into the depth of the deserts, ascend the high mountains, upon whose summit the savage shows himself, as if he had been the King of Nature; and there armed with heavenly inspiration, they conquer with their word entire hordes, who are purified by baptism and enter upon the way to heaven.

It was the religious cry of the jesuit which encouraged the phalanx of Estacio de Sá, and which did not permit the covetous dream of Antartic France to be verified : it was the spirit of catholicism which taking advantage of the electric flame of the patriotic Portuguese revolution of 1640 got up this glorious army, which, in the the north of Brazil broke the Dutch yoke, and preseved in its integrity the region which was to be the great American Empire.

It was meet that everything thus should happen ; it was the land of the Holv Cross.

If, years afterwards, the ambition and the selfish calculations of the jesuit took the place of the dedication, the disinterestedness, and the glory of the missionary; already the word of God, already the doctrine of catholicism had been cast into the fertile soil of Brazil.

The word of God was the seed: the influence of the cross erected in Porto-Seguro made from the enriched virgin soil the seed sprout forth: its fruit was the divine inspiration, which since the 17th century raised the sacred tribune in Brazil to splendour and majesty.

From these convents, which rose apart in the midst of vast deserts, like oasis of peace and piety, or in the centre of noisy cities as asylums of wisdom and retreats of religious contemplation: from these convents and monasteries began to go forth, like celestial flames, famous orators who would have honoured the pulpit of the cultured countries of old Europe.

Already in the 17th century, Bezerra, Antonio de Sá, Euzebio de Mattos, Botelho do Rozario, Friar Antonio da Piedade, Friar Manoel do Desterro and so many others, had sent forth their eloquent voice in the temples of the new world. Already in the 18th century, Friar Antonio de Santa Maria, Caetano Villas Boas, Corrêa de Lacerda, João Alvares de Santa Maria and others, still had protested with their bold and powerful word against the decay of the sacred tribune in Europe, which had not yet the Lacordaires Venturas and others, to fill the void left by the Bossuets and Massillons.

But it was precisely at the end of this century, and in Rio de Janeiro, that the great men were born who formed this immortal pleiad of ministers and dispensers of the word of God, of ambassadors whom the sovereign Lord sends upon earth to manifest his will, and to guide human-

ity to the end for which he has created it, as Roquette says. It was then that were born Antonio Pereira de Souza Caldas in 1762; Friar Francisco de S. Carlos in 1763; Friar Francisco de Santa Thereza de Jesus S. Paio in 1778; Januario da Cunha Barboza in 1785; and a year previously, in 1784, Friar Francisco de Mont'Alverne,

The 18th century bore on to its successor these robust and admirable intelligences, these orators of true inspiration, who began with the great Caldas and came to finish in the not less great Friar Francisco de Mont'Alverne.

In the beginning of the 19th century the prince afterwards D. John VI arrives in Rio de Janeiro, and he himself, and the court which had followed him are surprised at finding the sacred tribune of Brazil at such an exalted height.

Let the illustrious Alverne himself here speak.

In Brazil, says he, everything is prodigy, everything is wonder. This sun which enriches our fields, and perpetuates our spring, scalds the imagination of her sons, and realizes these portents of intelligence, which make Brazilians an object of wonder and dread. The Portuguese descending in 1808 to the southern bank of the bay of Nictheroy, were taken back with surprise at finding in Rio de Janeiro a youth brilliant and eager of knowledge, which waited only for the means to raise themselves to the elevation which their talents promised them.

« The court saw with astonishment men eminent in the ecclesiastical sciences who, without having gone out of their own country, without the resources of the universities and the advantages which the lyceums and well-organized schools offer, did not fear to show themselves and to speak remarkably well, and even with certain superiority before doctors and men who had obtained parch-

ments, with which they testified the high degree of their instruction. We are yet very near to these events; we still possess a great number of persons who beheld these days so memorable and so rich with hopes. They have witnessed the refulgence which involved these convents so fertile in scientific knowledge. They will remember with pride this secular clergy so distinguished for their intelligence, and so fecund in virtues. It was Justiniano Mascarenhas Castello Branco, who without doubt would be worthy to be compared with the bishops of the first centuries of the church, if he had not been bishop in his own country.

« One of the first caores of the Prince Regente, arriving at Rio de Janeiro, was to raise the splendour and majesty of public worship. A clever politician, the prince knew that it is only to religion that it is given to sustain empires and fortify institutions. The foundation of the royal chapel of Rio de Janeiro, the immortal monument of the piety of D. John VI, was the arena where the Brazilian genius showed itself in all its pomp. Orators accustomed to the triumphs of the pulpit were rivalled by young preachers, who encouraged by their first victories burned to gain new crowns. Then was the epoch of great events, and the circumstances which were produced within and outside of the country offered ample materials for the eloquence of the pulpit, »

We may affirm with all the pride of truth, that no Transatlantic preacher, has exceeded the Brazilian orators. The richness of their diction was united with purity of style and force of argument: and so that a simple beauty might not be wanting, the sweetness and amenity of expression increased the charms and magic of the action. This thought of a French writer was thus verified: That

the language of Camoens uttered by a Brazilian, ought to realize all the prodigies and all the seductions of harmony.

D. John VI was accustomed to say, that he possessed in Rio de Janeiro a choice of preachers, which did not allow him to recall those whom he had left in Portugal. When some writer may wish someday to describe the most notable facts which marked that epoch, he may say parodying the old Chactas in the sublime episode of Atalá, on speaking of his journey to France in the reign of Louis XIV, that he had been present at the festivals of the court of Rio de Janeiro and the funeral orations of Friar Francisco de S. Paio.

It is also in this epoch, so elegantly described by Mont'Alverne, that we must go to find him gathering palms and triumphs, and soaring in extasies of inspiration to the immortality which gives true glory.

Friar Francisco de Mont'Alverne, whose secular name was Francisco José de Carvalho, was born on the 9th of August 1784 in the city of Rio de Janeiro; his parents were José Antonio da Silveira, a native of the parish of S. Roque in the Island of Pico, bishopric of Angra, and Anna Francisca da Conceição, a native of the parish of Guia, bishopric of Rio de Janeiro. His genius, his inclination called him to the life of the cloister : he assumed the habit as choral priest in the convent of Santo Antonio Rio de Janeiro on the 28th of June 1801 and made his profession on the 3rd of October 1802. To follow him in his monastic life and career would be to mark each year as a step given in the scale of the hierarchy of the convent. The young *religieux* had distinguished himself since the first day by his transcendant talent, by his incessant study, and by the austerity of his virtues. In his first essays the emulator of S. Carlos and S. Paio was immediately divined : he soon rendered himself remarkable by his wisdom, and in the

convent of S. Francisco in the city of S. Paulo, and in that of S. Antonio in Rio de Janeiro, and in the Seminary of S. José in short as professor of *prima* dogmatic theology, philosophy and rhetoric he surrounded himself with an ardent and hopeful youth, who spread the fame of his knowledge, of the prodigies of his eloquence, and of the holiness of his doctrines.

On the 17th of October, 1816 his reputation as an orator was so far established, that he was nominated Regius preacher; and placed in the midst of the geniuses of the sacred tribune, who then shone, he was of the same stature as they.

An uninterrupted series of these victories of the pulpit succeeded each other, in which he was illustrious for more than twenty years. Friar Francisco de Mont'Alverne had been born for the sacred tribune, he joined to the natural talents which he possessed in the most elevated degree the virtues which give prestige, and the knowledge which gives power. He possessed discrimination and penetration of mind, depth and elevation of thought, a lively and rich imagination, and sensibility, without which the orator can never speak to the heart.

Sacred literature was as familiar to him as profane; from nature he had received eloquence, which art had simply perfected; in philosophy he always showed himself as profound as a great master can be. His voice resounded in the amplitude of the sacred temples; his presence imbued veneration; his gestures were noble, and when he spoke he never needed to ask attention, he imposed it.

Like S. Chrysostom in his epoch, he deserved in that in which he flourished the title of the *goeden-mouthed*.

But let the care be left to himself to record in brief and

eloquent words his years of triumph, and his first day of misfortune.

« The country » writes Mont'Alverne the country has loudly declared that I was one of these glories of which it still boasts. Thrown into the great career of eloquence in 1816 as Regius preacher, eight years after S. Carlos e S. Paio, Monsignor Netto and Canon Januario da Cunha Barbosa had entered therein I had to struggle with these giants of oratory, who had gained so many laurels, and who were struggling to bear the victory over all their worthy rivals.

The country knows what were my successes in this unequal conflict; it appreciated my efforts and designed the place to which I had the right among my contemporaries; it belongs to posterity to sanction this judgment. Borne onward by the energy of my character, desiring to adorn myself with every crown I abandoned myself with equal ardour to eloquence, to philosophy, and to theology, the respective Chairs of which I occupied, sometimes simultaneously, in the principal convents of my order, and in the Seminary of S. José of this city.

« The result of so many fatigues was the extenuation of my brain, and the irreparable loss of my sight. At the end of 1836 terminated all my literary exercises, and I found myself incapacitated to undertake the most insignificant labour, It is not given to any man to estimate the agonies of my heart in this horrible disaster of my life. God has put the cup of tribulation to my lips; its lees perhaps are not yet drained..... The will of the Lord be done. »

Indeed, after more than 20 years of marvellous successes in the sacred tribune and in the professorship, he illustrious Mont' Alverne was while yet living shut up within a

tomb..... the tomb of blindness. Eighteen years he lay retired within the cloister, withdrawn in silence, and animating his life by resignation. Every hope for the recovery of his sight had died within him; never however deadened within his heart the light of faith.

The encouraging voice of the Emperor, one day of happy inspiration came to force him from this retreat.

None can have forgotten the solemn day of S. Pedro de Alcantara, 1854.

An immense concourse, formed by the clergy, the court and the most enlightened society of the capital, had hastened to the Imperial chapel to hear the word of the hoary sage.

The illustrious Franciscan appeared in the pulpit : the light which failed his eyes illuminated, with almost divine splendour, his wide and vast forehead, which betrayed the immensity of his intelligence ; his tremulous hands felt along the pulpit : one would say he sought the ancient laurels gathered on this spot:... then his form rose like a giant.... his face seemed lit by celestial flame...., his mouth opened, and eloquence overflowed in impetuous torrents.

On the day of S. Pedro de Alcantara Mont'Alverne sent forth his song of the Swan.

Aged, broken down by years, by the horrors of blindness and by repeated diseases, Friar Francisco de Mont'Alverne rested at last, and for ever, on the 3rd of December 1858.

He was one of the foremost among the learned men of the country, and as such was deservedly honoured with the most evident proofs of exalted consideration. He was honorary member of the Historical and Geographical Institute of Brazil and of the Imperial Academy of Fine Arts, corresponding member of the Historical Institute of France, member and grand patron of the Society *Ensaio Filoso-*

phica. In grand inaugural session of this same society on the 10th of December 1848 he was solemnly proclaimed the genuine representative of Philosophy of the human mind in Brazil, and received from the hand of the bishop D. Manoel do Monte, Count of Irajá, who presided at the session, a laurel crown which the Philosophical society presented to him.

And, more than all this, a just distinction was conferred on the learned and venerable priest; on the 4th of October, 1855, he was honoured with a personal visit from H. M. the Emperor and his August Spouse, who deigned to delay some time in the humble cell of the Franciscan, thus demonstrating the worth and estimation in which they held him.

Friar Francisco de Mont'Alverne left to his country his Oratorical Works, in four volumes; a collection of the most remarkable of his sermons, which attest the force of his reasoning, the depth of his erudition, the nobleness of his diction and the purity of his style. This work is a glory, as the name of its author is a monument, for Brazil.

He has further left us the lessons of his powerful eloquence and of his spiritualistic and wise philosophy, engraved, if not in books, at least in the brilliant and cultured intelligences of many pupils who do honour to the country.

Friar Francisco de Mont'Alverne died at 79 years of age; but the country would have wished him eternal, for he was one of her glorious boasts, and she felt herself proud when she contemplated him so great, so eloquent, so revered.

Friar Francisco de Mont'Alverne was a whole age of glory. The most noble remembrances are bound up with him. When they saw him aged and bent, going along led by the conducting hand of a friend, the old men pointed to him

with pride, as displaying the prodigies of their time; the people directed attention to him and said it is the scholar! and the studious youth of the academies, the professors who had been his pupils, the men of letters, in short, uncovered themselves instinctively before him, and said it is the master!





IV OF DECEMBER

MANOEL DE MORAES

Born in the captaincy of S. Vicente, afterwards called S. Paulo, on the 4th of December, 1586, Manoel de Moraes studied in the schools of the Jesuits, and entered the Company of Jesus while he was yet very young. Doubtless those priests had expected a great deal from his intelligence ; but they had not calculated upon his untractable and extravagant character, and concluded by expelling him from their midst for scandals of his procedure ; at least this was the fame which he left, or that which they gave him.

Manoel de Moraes left Brazil, and from Portugal proceeded to Holland, where he settled in Amsterdam. The reason why he acted thus are unknown ; it is certain however that in Amsterdam he continued to study, gained

the reputation of a literary man by his writings, and abjuring the Catholic Religion, he embraced Calvinism, and married a Dutch lady with whom he had fallen in love.

The news of these latter facts carried to Lisbon, caused indignation and the Court of the Holy Office in statute renounced Manoel de Moraes in the *auto de fé* of the 6th of April, 1642.

In spite of this Manoel de Moraes, not being able to overcome his home sickness for Brazil, left Amsterdam in 1645; passing, however, through Portugal, he fell into the power of the Inquisition, abjured Calvinism, and adopting once more the Catholic Religion, showed himself so repentant of his past failings, that in 1647 he was released after having come out with signs of fire from the *auto de fé* of this year in Lisbon.

The consolation of breathing the air of his native country before dying, was not to be his; since he died in Lisbon without having been able to return to see Brazil.

Manoel de Moraes wrote, and published in Holland, interesting memorials on Portugal and Brazil; but his work of greatest importance, which unfortunately has been lost, was that which he entitled *History of America*, which Laet eulogizes much, confessing that he had extracted thence precious information; and besides Laet other authors, and the abbot Diogo Barbozas, peak with exceeding praise of this work.

The date of the birth of Manoel de Moraes cannot be considered as ascertained, although Balthazar da Silva Lisbôa marks it in an article of his manuscript; it serves at least to register his name in this book.

V OF DECEMBER

MANOEL FELIZARDO DE SOUZA E MELLO



Native of Rio de Janeiro, where he was born in the parish of Campo Grande, actual municipality of Rio de Janeiro, on the 5th of December, 1805, Manoel Felizardo de Souza e Mello studied on the paternal hearth the rudiments of instruction and Latin, and completed his course of humanities in the episcopal seminary of S. José. In June 1822 he crossed the Atlantic, went to drink in the depths of Coimbra the knowledge to which he showed himself so much attached ; co-operated in the university to maintain the glorious reputation of the Brazilian students, gained prizes in every scholastic term in which this distinction was conferred, and taking the degree of bachelor in mathematics in 1826, returned to his native country, and was in

the following year gazetted Professor substitute of the Military academy of Rio de Janeiro, and soon afterwards lieutenant, with the rank of captain, in the corps of engineers.

Fortune smiled upon the young man of 22 years; and blessed be fortune when, in its blindness, it lights upon merit and enlightened intelligence.

True talent makes its refulgence widely felt: the abilities of Manoel Felizardo were known and made use of outside of the Academy; in the commission for the winding up of the first and unfortunate Bank of Brazil, in the examination of the working staff of the treasury, and of all the other fiscal departments of the city, experienced at once his elevated services and the extent of his faculties.

In 1832 nominated Inspector of the provincial treasury of Rio Grande do Sul, he superintended and directed its organization, and with so much ability and administrative tact, that in less than three years the receipts were doubled. Retiring from that province he devoted himself entirely to the professorship until the year 1837, in which he was called to the administration of the province of Ceará, where he exercised the functions of president until 1839, when he was removed to that of Maranhão, then steeped in blood by violent and brutal rebellion.

There the presidency was, for Manoel Felizardo, a martyrdom, a mission of despair, in which any other would have done enough not in succumbing, and in which he did a great deal resisting impassively putting in the field about five thousand soldiers, and thus facilitating the complete pacification of the province, which later on was realized by the Baron, afterwards Count, Marquis and Duke of Caxias.

In the epochs of violent struggle, party spirit is often wicked and implacable; in the harvest of the laurels of a triumph the conquerors love exclusivism from the honors of the victories. To seek out diligently and to expose the truth with clearness is difficult, if not almost impossible to those who live with men of the same age, to those who hear the persons concerned, to those who are parties and desire to be judges; however it may be, it is incontestible that in the presidency of Maranhão. Manoel Felizardo knew how not to allow himself to be beaten down and overcome by 15,000 rebels, obtained the restoration of the city of Caxias, and exposed his life in the taking of the town of Icatú. He rendered, therefore, real services, and for these was deservedly promoted to the rank of Major.

The province of Alagoas in 1840 to 1842, that of S. Paulo in 1843, that of Pernambuco, for some days, in 1848, had him for president, and in these the intolerance of parties less vehement allowed the zealous administrator a more fortunate opportunity of serving the cause of all in the good management of the provincial business.

Manoel Felizardo had not been forgotten in the administration of the provinces: twice elected deputy, he had distinguished himself in the Camara as a skillful debater and well-trained in administrative practice. A notable member of the conservative party, he underwent the consequences of the political reverse in 1844, which was taken advantage of by the military school until 1848, in which year, in the month of March, the cabinet organized by the Viscount of Macahé robbed it of its illustrious professor, who went to be minister of war. This ministry had an ephemeral existence, Manoel Felizardo returned to enter actively upon the duties of the professorship; interrupted these again to go and take a seat in the provincial

assembly of Rio de Janeiro, of which he was elected president in 1848, and in the same year, on the 29th of September, was oncemore called to the ministry. He occupied the portfolio of the Navy, and provisionally that of War, with which, in 1849, he was definitely charged. In this cabinet he contributed much towards the suppression of the *Praeira* revolt in Pernambuco, gave proofs of great activity and energy, preparing, disposing with rapidity, and utilizing all the means necessary for the war of the River Plate, which concluded without bloodshed in the Estado Oriental, the army of Oribe disbanding, and in the Argentine Confederation, the tyrant of Palermo being conquered in Monte Caseros. In 1852 he left the ministry, and nominated in the following year Director-general of the public lands, he was the creator of that department, and aided considerably in the organization of the regulations necessary for the execution of the law of the 18th of September, 1850.

Yet once more Minister of War in January 1859, he preserved the reins of power but a few months; in which he then for the last time made his administrative capacity felt, together with his profound knowledge of the business of the department which he, with elevated intelligence, directed.

In 1848 he had been elected by the province of Rio de Janeiro in the triple list for Senator, and chosen in December of the same year by His Majesty the Emperor, he went to sit in the Senate, whose members are chosen for life, in a chair which he made illustrious with his great knowledge and the eloquence of his words.

He was still vigorous and strong when he began to feel warnings of death in his heart, affected by one of those terrible diseases, which with a sinister course advance and

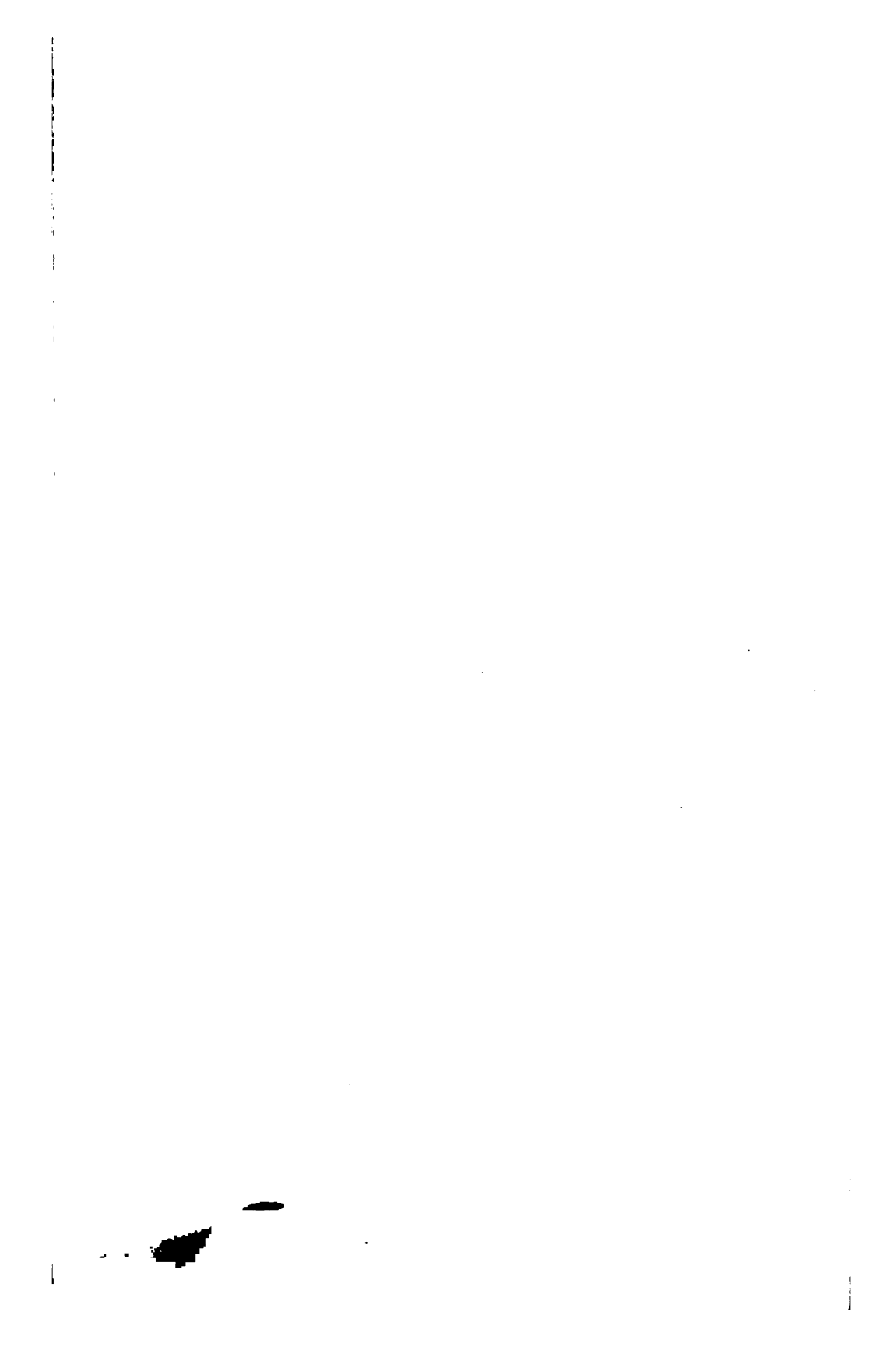
develop themselves, mocking the wisdom of the physician and the care of the victim, who perishes weary of a life tormented by his sufferings and darkened by despair.

Manoel Felizardo de Souza e Mello occupied with remarkable ability the highest positions of his country. In 1859 he was nominated Counsellor of State extraordinary, by decree of August, 1866, passing to the effective exercise of the same, upon which it was not given him to enter. His Majesty the Emperor conferred upon him, in 1841, the Commandery of the Order of Christ, and His Most Faithful Majesty the Grand Cross of the same Order.

Manoel Felizardo de Souza Mello died in the city of Rio de Janeiro, August 16, 1866.

He was as accomplished as he was upright. In political struggles a decided, constant and influential member of the Conservative party, he opposed with energy the contrary opinion, and was by the liberals opposed with equal ardor there were none, however, to deny his fine intelligence, his great accomplishments and much less his probity.





VI OF DECEMBER

JOÃO DE SEIXAS



Native of Rio de Janeiro, where he was born in 1681, João de Seixas entered the Carmelite Order, and, endowed with great intelligence, acquired vast information. In Portugal he enjoyed great credit, and in Rome he shone so much by his knowledge and by his virtues that the Holy Father, Clement XII, nominated him Bishop of Arcopoli.

The dates of his birth, death, labours and the rewards of his great and very distinguished merit are completely wanting; but Brazil cannot forget so illustrious a son: let the 6th of December, although arbitrarily, bring his remembrance.



VII OF DECEMBER

THE HEROINES OF TEJUCUPAPO

In June, 1645, the patriotic insurrection broke out in Pernambuco against the Dutch dominion, and a most brilliant series of conflicts and victories had abated the pride of the foreign conqueror.

The Pernambucans or *Independents*, as they were called, held Recife in siege, the capital of Dutch Brazil, and there, since the beginning of 1646, the want of provisions, and afterwards famine, had been experienced. The isle of Itamaracá, the precious granary of the Dutch, was entirely exhausted.

Admiral Lichtart finding himself in such close quarters sallied out from the port of Recife with some ships, and taking on board in Itamaracá the troops which he deemed sufficient for the enterprise which he had planned, put in at

Maria Farinha, where he delayed a whole day, pretending to disembark troops, so as to delude the inhabitants. Night having approached, and taking advantage of the darkness, he set sail to go and surprise *Tejucupapo*, and afterwards march upon *S. Lourenço da Matta*, which would give him abundance of victuals besides the glory of a most clever and audacious stroke.

In *Tejucupapo*, as if foreseeing the attack, was the brave major of militia, Agostinho Nunes, in a redoubt constructed by the inhabitants, and within which the families had taken refuge. A short road communicated between *Tejucupapo* and the redoubt, and in the woods which bordered upon the road lay in ambush Matheus Fernandes, an intrepid and patriotic youth, who had turned himself into general of an army of thirty young men, intrepid and patriotic like himself.

They had guessed the plan of Lichtart, or were apprehensively upon their guard; but what availed some dozens of brave men against the hundreds of Dutchmen, directed by Lichtart, who besides a clever warrior, was brave at arms?

Lichtart disembarked, and recognizing that his presence was noted, he hastened the advance and immediately opened fire...

The thirty youths in ambush were like three hundred; their fire, their balls fell upon the Dutch, proceeding from both sides of the road; but the small force of Major Agostinho Nunes retired fighting, and its chief had already fallen dead.

Lichtart advanced ever, and now near, threatened the redoubt where the families, that is the ladies and the children felt all the horror of their situation at the noise of the firing constantly coming nearer.

Then—glorious and heroic action of woman?.. they united. Instead of vain and sterile terrors, one of the matrons of *Tejucupapa* took in her hands the image of the Redeemer, as a standard, and called her companions to arms.

Mothers, wives, brides and maidens armed themselves with guns and lances, and while their fathers, their husbands and their children fought without the redoubt, they ran towards the trenches and awaited the enemy.

They arrive; and none less than Lichtart at the head of the Dutch, who gives the word to scale !....

But once, twice, thrice the assailants are driven back by the heroines of *Tejucupapo* !... more than one virgin breast, more than one maternal womb, which had given the country brave sons are torn in pieces; little matters it: the heroines faint not....

And from the dark forests the fire is fed continually, and the Dutch who dare to penetrate therein find in every bulky tree a barrier, and, without them knowing whence it comes, death sent with unerring balls.

The conflict lasted hours if we reckon from the beginning. In front of the redoubt there was sufficient time for three successive assaults valiantly repelled.

Lichtart, seeing the great loss which he had already suffered, and the heroic resistance of the redoubt, understood that even conquering there, he could no more advance upon S. Lourenço da Matta, and ordered the retreat, directing his dead to be removed to conceal the number of soldiers, relatively enormous, which he had lost.

The Dutch marched quickly, retiring beaten, and still decimated by the balls which broke from the woods....

The shout of victory sounds and re-echoes in *Tejucupapo*. They gather the bodies of Agostinho Nunes and of not a

few of his men, they gather those of some young men of the thirty sharp-shooters of the forests. There are some noble mothers, beauteous brides, and pure damsels less in the redoubt; but what glory !.... what a brilliant page in the history of the country !....

Lichtart, the brave Dutch admiral, repulsed and beaten by some ladies of Tejecupapo !!!

Unfortunately not a single one of the names of these stupendous heroines has been preserved by history.

But the grandness of the feat at least makes illustrious and perpetuates the memory of the most splendid and unsurpassable female courage.

On the 7th of December 1859 the Emperor D. Pedro II, on a visit to some of the northern provinces of the Empire, wished to see and saw Tejecupapo in remembrance of and reverence for such glorious and heroic prowess.

In the reprehensible want of the memory of the day of such a grand feat let the honouring and patriotic date of the Emperor D. Pedro II who knows how to be zealous for the glories of his country and to shine with them, serve at least for its commemoration.



VIII OF DECEMBER

AURELIANO CANDIDO TAVARES BASTOS

Aureliano Candido Tavares Bastos, the legitimate son of the actual *Desembargador* José Tavares Bastos, was born in February 1840.

Endowed with a marvellous comprehension and with a great love of study, he was among the first in the classes for preparatory studies, and distinguished himself in the juridical course of Olinda, in which he took the degree of Bachelor in 1861.

He almost passed from the benches of the academy to the Parliament; for immediately in the session of 1857 to 1860 he appeared, elected deputy for his province, revealing his splendid talent in the temporary *Camara*.

He began connected with the Conservative party; but

he did not see in party discipline a force of duty ; which compelled him to turn a deaf ear to conscience.

He had entered upon his administrative career, accepting the position of *official* of the Secretaryship of the Navy, in the Camara however he was a deputy and not an employee of the government, and in an opportune discussion delivered from the tribune a solid and important speech, which could not be agreeable to the Minister of the Navy.

The under-secretary was dismissed ; but the independent deputy recommended himself to the respect and esteem of his countrymen.

In the following legislature (dissolved in 1863) the league of a very enlightened fraction of the Conservatives with the Liberal party took place, and the young Tavares Bastos, the paladin of progress and of the most generous principles, generously concurred towards the new political situation.

In the following legislatures, 1864 to 1866, and from 1867 to the dissolution of the Camara of deputies in June of the following year, Tavares Bastos was incontestably one of the most remarkable orators.

Considerably well-informed, and very studious, his speeches were always rich in well-meditated ideas, and in varied knowledge, which pardoned the vehemence of the aggression, to which sometimes the ardor of youth and enthusiasm for the cause which he sustained carried him. For him to speak was the same as for a river to run impetuously. It would be said, that he repeated precipitously a speech learned by heart ; it was however thus that he spoke impromptu, at the same time frequently discussing subjects requiring practical precision, financial questions, matters indeed dependent upon positive knowledge.

In 1865 he served as secretary in the most delicate special mission fulfilled in the Estado Oriental by the accomplished Councillor and actual Senator, Sr. José Antonio Saraiva, from whom he always merited the greatest confidence and friendship.

The Camara being dissolved in July 1868, with the assent of Conservative politics to power, Tavares Bastos, writing in the *Diario do Povo*, and afterwards in the *Reforma*, organs of the liberal party, made active and energetic opposition to the cabinet of the 23d of July of that year.

Like other ex-deputies of the same liberal political creed he was not reelected to the next Legislature; he did not rest however, and in precious works, which he constantly gave to the press, and which perpetuate his name, he continued to render relevant services to the liberal school, fighting for the soundest principles.

In the parliamentary tribune, and in the press, Aureliano Tavares Bastos was the energetic and enlightened champion of the grandest ideas and of the progress of Brazil.

The emancipation of the slaves—religious liberty—the free navigation of the great rivers—the administrative decentralization of the provinces—the direct system of election—and other great principles, like these, had in Aurelianno Tavares Bastos the most redoubted paladin.

An admirer of the grandeur and extraordinary prosperity of the United States of North America, Aurelianno Tavares Bastos had studied, with a keen interest, the political, and economic institutions, and all the elements of civilization and of progress of the vigorous and resplendent confederation, and one of the most lively aspirations of his patriotic heart was the cultivation, politically and economically, of intimate relations, and the close and friendly alliance of the great power of North America with the great

power of the South of the same world, of that Republic, and of the Empire of Brazil; as a beautiful and animated perspective of immense and bountiful results, and of a monumental future.

The delicate organization of the illustrious son of Alagoas succumbed at length before the excess of study and toil to which he ardently gave himself up at his table as advocate, and still more in his cabinet, as writer and publicist.

His health considerably affected, Aurelianno Tavares Bastos started, with his young wife, in 1874, for Europe to seek in a temperate climate the re-establishment of his health; but unfortunately he bore with him the thirst of knowledge, and the fever of toil.

Visiting the most cultivated cities of Europe, he studied incessantly their institutions, their great improvements, the fountains indeed of civilisation and progress, and already, in the opulence of knowledge, he prepared himself to pay new and still greater tributes of patriotism to Brazil.

This it was not permitted him to do!

He died at Nice on the 3rd of December.

On the 8th of December, in the Church of S. Francisco de Paula, in the city of Rio de Janeiro, was celebrated the Seventh-day mass for the soul of the great thinker, and late illustrious Brazilian, Aureliano Tavares Bastos, and if there could be any consolation for the profound grief of the father, who had lost so loved and glorious a son, Desembargador José Tavares Bastos would have found it in the general manifestation of the most sorrowful feeling from the entire press and population.

Natives, and foreigners, the political men of different parties, all indeed, paid public tribute of grief and regret

for him who had so prematurely disappeared from among the living.

A few months afterwards the mortal remains of Aureliano Tavares Bastos came to repose for ever in the soil of his native country, and received in the capital of the Empire, all the honours, all the solemn proofs of love and of veneration beyond the tomb, which faithful friends, and the thankful people could give to the memory of the illustrious citizen.

Aureliano Tavares Bastos wrote and published the following studies and works :

Public Opinion and the Crown, a political pamphlet.

Ills of the Present and hopes of the Future, a political pamphlet,

Letters of the Solitary.

The Province.

The Valley of the Amazon.

Political Letter to Councillor Saraiva.

Studies on Electoral and Parliamentary Reform.



IX OF DECEMBER

NUNO MARQUES PEREIRA



Priest and writer, Nuno Marques Pereira was born in the town of Cayrú, in the captaincy of Bahia in the year 1652. He assumed the ecclesiastical habit, and became a man of great science and a famous theologian.

He wrote the *Narrative Compendium of the pilgrim in America*, in which there are many curious and interesting notices about Brazil, his native country.

Nuno Marques Pereira had simply the consolation of seeing his work published in Lisbon in 1718, dying in the same city some months afterwards, and according to an indication not otherwise verified of the manuscript bequeathed to the Historical Institute by Balthazar da Silva Lisboa, on the 9th of December of the same year.



X OF DECEMBER

DOMINGOS AFFONSO MAFRENSE

Portuguese by birth, but with the education and customs of the inhabitants of the interior of S. Paulo, Domingos Affonso Mafrense united some relatives and a certain number of Portuguese colonists, and leaving S. Paulo, penetrated into the backwoods, bearing to the North in the year 1674 or perhaps previously. On the way he met with the S. Paulo backwoodsman Domingos Jorge who at the head of a *bandeira* (troop for this purpose) advanced to give chase to the Indians.

The Portuguese and the *Paulista* (native of S. Paulo) united; they went on attacking the Indians, and having made a rich harvest of prisoners destined to slavery, Domingos Jorge returned with them to S. Paulo, separating from his companion where?... perhaps even they did not know, so extraordinary already was the distance they had penetrated.

Mafrense, who came to have the nickname of *Sertão*, (backwoods) arrived at the backwoods of Piauhy, and its

immense plains, and resolved to there establish himself with a cattle-breeding farm: he repeated his incursions, founded the first *fazenda* (farm), and conquering a most extensive country, proceeded to found other farms similar, while his relatives, and the most active colonists did the same, although in a much more modest proportion, and *he alone* possessed so many farms that by his death he bequeathed thirty to the Jesuit fathers, his executors, under the condition of employing the proceeds of the same in giving dowries to maidens, and in succouring widows and the poor with the remainder, increasing the number of breeding-farms, for the same purpose, without the least doubt.

The fulfillment of that condition lay upon the fathers of the Company: certain it is that in 1759, when the Jesuits were banished, thirty-three cattle breeding farms in Piauhy passed over to the State.

Domingos Afonso Mafrense, the *Sertão*, has two titles which do him much honor. He was the conqueror of Piauhy, and, in his pacific and useful conquest, neither persecuted nor killed the natives systematically, or from ambition. He made war upon them and put them to flight whenever it was necessary to do so, he enslaved Indians (as all did at that time) but only for the work of the farms, and planted that industry in Piauhy, which even to day is of great advantage to it and which nevertheless requires yet further to be developed.

Such were the services of Mafrense, that to him doubtless were owing the Letters-royal of the 10th of December 1698, allowing the concession of lands, *sesmarias*, of two square leagues on the Brazil road in the backwoods of Piauhy, being allowed to concede to the same individual a new *sesmaria*, the first having been made use of.

XI OF DECEMBER

HENRIQUE FRANCISCO MARTINS

Henrique Francisco Martins was born in 1832: his parents were Manoel Francisco Martins and D. Maria Theodora de Menezes.

With a decided vocation for the navy, after studying well the preparatory course, he followed up the curriculum of the Naval Academy, as resident pupil; he distinguished himself: in 1850 was promoted to midshipman and in the same year embarked for the River Plate, and in the war against the Dictator of the Argentine Confederation, D. João Manoel Rozas, gained a first class Silver medal for his remarkable services.

In December 1857 he was advanced to first Lieutenant. Two years afterwards he was designated to as one of the officers who should accompan H. M. the Emperor and his August Spouse in the journey which they made to some of the provinces in the north of the Empire ;

he deserved to be eulogized, and in 1860 received the decoration of Cavalier of the Imperial Order of the Rose.

In 1863 he proceeded to the River Plate, and there, in Montevideo, he took the provisional command of the gun boat *Parahyba* by nomination of the Vice-admiral the Viscount of Tamandaré, who, an admirable commander, well knew how to choose brave men for audacious enterprises.

Before *Paysandú* Henrique Martins took an energetic part in the bombardment of the tremendously fortified place: he received orders however to disembark, and to plant a battery of two Whitworth guns against the place, and carried out the commission with the greatest intelligence and bravery, in the midst of the most lively fire of the enemy.

Already hurling balls over Paysandú, he was visited in his battery by his companion and friend, the First-Lieut. Freitas.

— Freitas, said Henrique Martins to him; the garrison of these two wings honors the Brazilian name; not a man either recoils, or comes close to the trenches, when he sees the balls of the enemy.

And for an electrifying example, it was he more than any who exposed himself as the scorner of death!

And nevertheless a fatal presentiment was warning him of death.

— I have to die in this battery!... he had repeated more than once to his friends.

Nevertheless his bravery moved and electrified the Brazilian soldiers, and affrighted the enemy, who saw him exposed undauntedly, the target of a well directed fire.

The battery of Henrique Martino reduced to pieces and to ruins the fortifications of Paysandú!

Henrique Martins commanded with uncovered breast.

In the ardor of the strife, in the hell of the fire, the enemies pointed him out and cried — demon ! and the Brazilian soldiers, officers, and leaders admired and applauded him with enthusiasm, saying-hero !...

Marize Barros, another hero, passing through the glorious battery shook the hand of Henrique Martins and exclaimed :

— Magnificent !

— But I shall be killed here answered the brave soldier.

And his presentiment was realized.

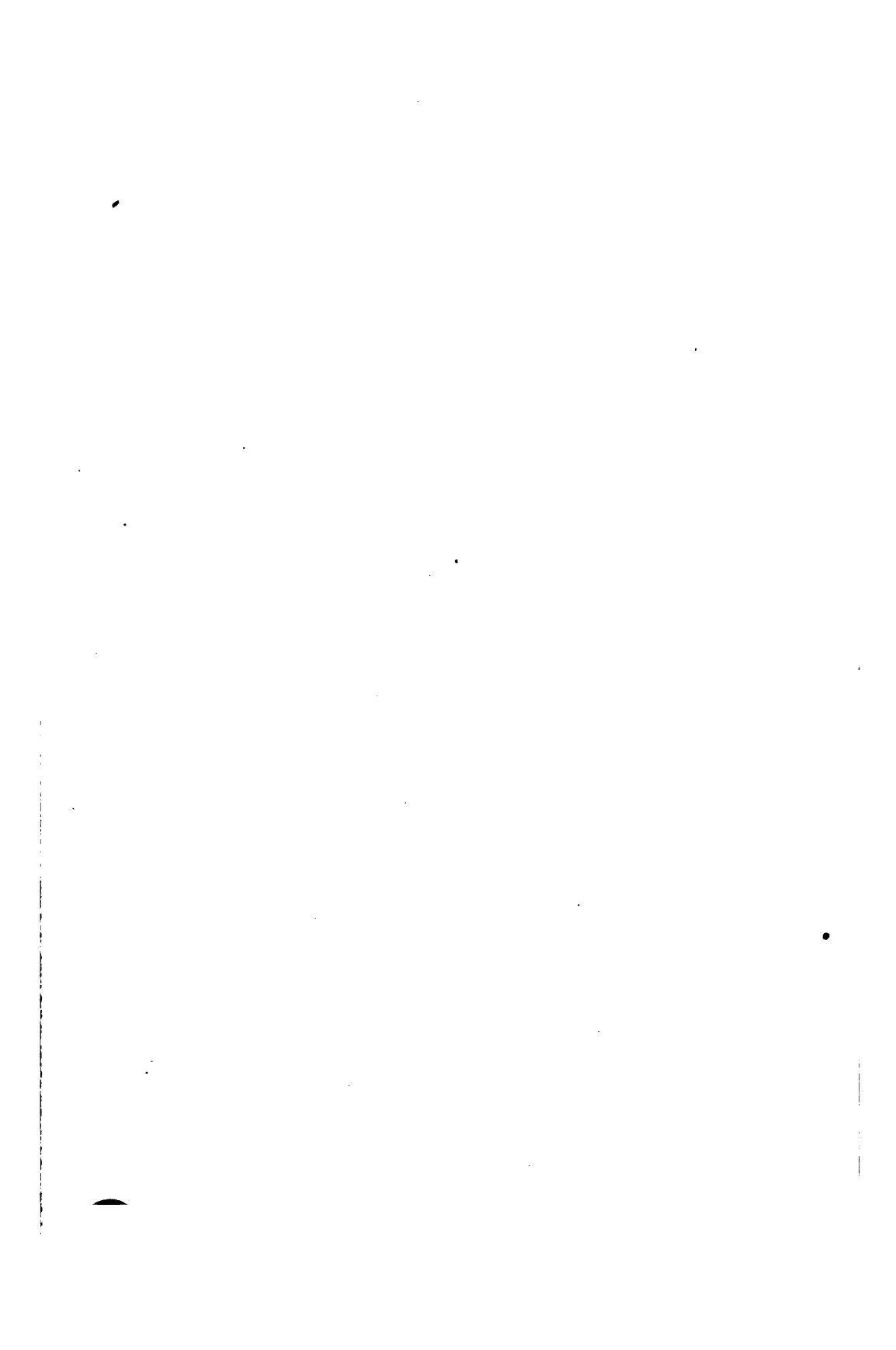
Soon after a hostile ball carried away the head of Henrique Martins.

The Brazilian navy lost in this heroic officer the bravery of Nelson, and the recognized intelligence of a most able chieftain of the future, capable of the greatest enterprises.

The ball which cut off that head, cut off in their bloom the most flattering hopes of the country.

The Imperial government honoring the memory of the hero, afterwards gave the name of *Henrique Martins* to one of their best steamers, so high towered the glory of the brave First-Lieutenant, Henrique Francisco Martins.





XII OF DECEMBER

JOSÉ FRANCISCO DE MESQUITA

MARQUIS OF BOM FIM

Legitimate son and the second blessed fruit of the nuptials of Francisco José de Mesquita and of D. Joanna Francisca de Mesquita, was born on the 11th of January 1790 in the village of Congonhas do Campo, in the parish of the, at that time, township, of Queluz, bishopric of Marianna, province of Minas-Geraes.

His parents were honoured proprietors, enjoyed esteem and consideration in the province, and were in the position to open before him a hopeful horizon in life, and so much the more so that as a child José Francisco de Mesquita

early manifested a love of work and an indefatigable activity; he however, as though carried away by the most decided vocation, left his father's roof at ten years of age, and came to stay with his uncle Captain Francisco Pereira de Mesquita, a resident in the city of Rio de Janeiro, a respectable merchant registered in the old Board of Commerce, and a capitalist of great credit and unblemished reputation.

The excellent uncle was like a second father to his nephew, made him perfect himself in the primary studies, and, aiding his natural disposition, allowed him to follow a commercial career, and in a short time had reason to be satisfied with his action; for, at the close of a few years, the young José Francisco de Mesquita enjoyed on the Exchange of Rio de Janeiro the secure guarantee of a prosperous future, and the most perennial source of wealth, the confidence of all.

The young Mesquita united the most valuable conditions of the merchant,—unsurpassed activity, the prudence of an experienced elder, instinctive tact, economy, and honour so far acknowledged that his simple word was equal on the Exchange to the best firms. His perfect and exclusive dedication to the commercial life and calling, completed this harmony of qualities rarely conjoined.

When the Portuguese royal family arrived at Rio de Janeiro, the young merchant was already known by his merit, and eight years later was not a stranger to the spontaneous subscription of the commercial body, which D. John VI destined to the primitive foundation of the actual Academy of Fine Arts, and in 1818 he aided in the creation of the Bank of Brazil, a bank of emission, and the first credit institution of this kind founded in Brazil. Beyond these he rendered other services and received in

recompense the commandery of the Order of Christ, a grace which in that time was a mark of very noteworthy distinction, and a proof of illustrious desert, when conferred outside the narrow circle of the noblemen and courtiers most protected by the king.

Never in the memory of José Francisco de Mesquita was blotted out either his protector, or his native soil: the name of his uncle was always remembered by him with the most lively gratitude up to his last days in 1872; the love of his province made him temporarily forget his great commercial interests to go and visit it regretfully in 1817 and 1821, then gaining there manifestations of esteem and a fraternal reception from the people of Minas.

In 1821 and 1822 *Commendador* Mesquita declared for the independence of his native country, put under contribution to the holy and glorious cause his numerous relations, his prestige, his capital, now considerable, and the Emperor D. Pedro I held these services in such high esteem that he appointed him his Honorary Master of the Robes, and conferred upon him the privileges of Knight (*Fidalgo Cavalleiro*) of the Imperial Household.

The *Caixa da Amortisação* (Sinking-Fund Department) being created, *Commendador* Mesquita was appointed a member of its direction (and only by his death did he cease to be so), and so devoted did he show himself in the fulfillment of his patriotic, onerous, and most useful task that the Emperor D. Pedro I bestowed upon him the decoration of the Imperial Order of the Cross. (*Cruzeiro*).

In the reign of the first Emperor, and in the period of the minority of D. Pedro II, *Commendador* Mesquita was ever, up to the last day of his life, constitutional monarchist, and friend of order; but he supported, by his very remarkable influence, on account of his commercial relations in

Minas Geraes principally, candidates for the election of deputies and senators without exclusive distinction of parties, ever giving honour to distinguished merit, although by his sympathies he leaned more towards the Conservative party.

In these times, as also in those which glided on to the sad eve of his decease, his house was frequented by political notabilities of all parties, who there found a neutral field and a tolerant and friendly breast.

In proportion as years rolled on the wealth considerably increased of the distinguished native of Minas, a merchant by vocation, so that in the last term of his life he was one of the most opulent capitalists, and the head of one of the most colossal commercial houses, of Rio de Janeiro.

And who ever studies, knows and appreciates correctly the conditions of the trade of this capital, will, without doubt, admire the prudence, the tact, and the mastership of this *Brazilian* merchant, who knew how to raise himself and make his influence felt by consummate ability and indefatigable diligence.

Commendador Mesquita had arrived at opulence, growing old in commerce; but he never depised the potent element of his great wealth : at the time of his death he was still one of the principal notabilities of the commercial Exchange of Rio de Janeiro. Amid this abundant harvest he died with his hand upon the plough which had given him fortune.

But raised by the lever of constant and honorable toil, and assisted by a friendly fortune, Commendador Mesquita knew how to exalt himself by well-doing, which his modesty could not succeed in concealing.

In the reign of D. Pedro II, of whom he was the most

devoted friend, his services to his country and to charity shone forth continually.

The Asylum of D. Pedro II, begun and caried forward by José Clemente Pereira, Governor (*provedor*) of the Santa Casa de Misericordia, found in Commendador Mesquita the pious contributor of very large sums.

In 1842 on the occasion of the revolt of the province of S. Paulo and Minas Geraes his purse was opened to assist the necessities of the State.

In the Christie question, the spoiled and predominant English minister, he hastened to join in the expenses of the national armament, which had been reputed necessary.

He made part of the Committee for the raising of the equestrian statue to D. Pedro I, the founder of the Empire. He was Treasurer of this Committee, which had taken to heart the payment of this tribute of national gratitude, and contributed notably towards the monument which was erected.

The title of Baron of Bom Fim, the nomination of Honorary Comptroller (*Veador*) of H. M. the Empress, with state honors, the Commandery of the Imperial Order of the Rose, a little later on the dignitaryship of the same Order, the elevation from Baron to Viscount, and afterwards from Viscount to Count of Bom Fim went on successively bearing witness of the important and continued services of the well deserving citizen, it being certain that each one of these graces was always preceded by acts of patriotism, or sentiments of humanity on the part of the recipient.

The war of Paraguay opened up a new opportunity for proofs of the civism of the Count of Bom-Fim, and he joined so far in aid of the expenses of the government, and almost at the same time contributed so largely to the works of

the Santa Casa da Misericórdia (Hospital), that in consideration of these and other services and to those of forty-two years in the Caixa da Amortisação, he was by decree of July 17th, 1872 raised from Count to Marquis of Bom-Fim.

To these honors and grandeurs of the earth he had still other titles of exalted worth. When a deadly epidemic or other public calamity scourged some provinces of the Empire, the devoted Brazilian never forgot that he was a rich capitalist, and was ever ready to open his purse. Honest and poor widows and unprotected orphans, frequently proved his charity unostentatiously displayed.

Constant in the service of religion and humanity he occupied various positions of honor and trust in connection with the D. Pedro II Asylum, the Santa Casa da Misericórdia (Hospital) in Rio de Janeiro, the Imperial Chapel, the Santa Rita Church, and the *Veneraval Ordem Terceira dos Minimos of S. Francisco de Paulo*, during his life deserving to see his portrait ornamenting the vast gallery of the benefactors of the Santa Casa and the *Ordem Terceira dos Minimos*.

When the civilized world was moved at seeing the desolation and ruins of the provinces of France, the victim of her late war with Germany, the Marquis of Bom-Fim was in Rio de Janeiro the treasurer of the committee which promoted succors for the French families who were exposed to misery and famine, and so much did he in this humanitarian undertaking, that M. Thiers, then head of the government in France, conferred upon the distinguished Brazilian the decoration of the Legion of Honor.

At the same time the Marquis of Bom Fim also subscribed towards the assistance which the capital of the Empire sent to Buenos Ayres, where yellow fever reigned terribly.

Disposing of great wealth, occupying a high position, having deservedly gained honors and graces from the last Portuguese reign up to that of D. Pedro II who raised him so high and treated him with the greatest esteem, the Marquis of Bom Fim never showed himself proud and haughty, and treated with affability all those who came to see him, whatever might be the social position or the fortune of each one.

Held in due consideration by his fellow-citizens, the Marquis of Bom Fim was an Alderman of the municipality, and always an elector of his parish, that of S. Rita.

He was also one of the founders of the Imperial Institute of Agriculture (*Fluminense*) and member (*bemfeitor*) of the *Imperial Sociedade Amante d'Instrucção*.

A marquis and a magnate of the Empire, even up to the eve of his death he frequented, with admirable assiduity in an octogenarian his counting-house, and the *Caixa da Amortisação*.

Attacked by a serious illness towards the close of the month of November, 1872, the Marquis of Bom Fim rendered his soul to its Creator during the night of the 11th of the December following, counting eighty-three years and eleven months of age.

At 5 o'clock on the 12th his mortal remains were conducted in a coach of the Imperial Household to the S. Francisco de Paula Cemetery, where they were lowered in modest burial, according as he had recommended in his last desires. More than two hundred carriages, in which went many of his numerous friends, accompanied the revered departed to his final resting-place.

The Marquis of Bom Fim left abiding proofs of his charity and religious spirit; important bequests being made to the Santa Casa da Misericórdia (Hospital) of Rio de Janeiro,

with the asylums and institutions thereto belonging, the Santa Casa (Hospital) of Minas Geraes, the *Ordens Terceiras* (Secular orders) of S. Francisco da Penitencia, of Carmo and of S. Francisco de Paula, the Lazaros Hospital the Blind and the Deaf and Dumb Institutions ; besides others to many poor people, widows and orphans of the municipality of Rio de Janeiro, and the province of Minas where he was born.



XIII OF DECEMBER

FRIAR JOAQUIM DO AMOR DIVINO CANECA

Native of Pernambuco, where he was born in the last part of the eighteenth century, Joaquim Caneca became a solitary monk, and embraced the Carmel Institute, after having studied humanities, gaining the reputation of great talent.

Increasing his knowledge by constant study, he enjoyed the fame of a very accomplished priest and even of a poet.

Balthazar da Silva Lisboa, in an article of his manuscripts given to the Historical Institute, says, that Friar Joaquim do Amor Divino Caneca had written the *Bibliotheca Pernambucana*, which was not printed and doubtless was lost, and that he had sent to printed in Lisbon, and caused to be re-printed in 1823, in the National Printing Office of Rio de Janeiro, a dissertation on *What ought to be understood by*

the country (patria) of the citizen and his duties towards the same.

If Friar Joaquim do Amor Divino Caneca was really a poet of merit, the written testimonies of his inspiration have disappeared : what of his poetry is repeated from memory is too light, and more erotic than ought to come from a Friar.

But Caneca had, beating strongly, under his monk's habit a heart excessively liberal.

On the 13th of December 1823, in the Council known as the great Council of Pernambuco, Caneca pronounced in favour of the ideas and measures of the revolt of 1824, which proclaimed the *Federation of the Equator*, of which he was doubtless the accomplice and adviser ; he wrote in the newspaper *Tiphlis*, a revolutionary organ ; but, an ardent liberal in principles, he distinguished himself as moderate in the advice of measures, and was, for his natural kindness, and his virtues esteemed and respected generally.

The revolt was crushed, and the reaction of the authorities was unwisely exaggerated after the victory.

The military commission of Pernambuco passed sentence of death on Friar Joaquim do Amor Divino Caneca, who left a written defence : the announcement of the horrible penalty caused so grievous an impression, that, on the eve of his execution, the chapter, *sede vacante*, solemnly formed and with the cross raised, as also the religious societies, went to ask the government of the province to suspend the melancholy and tremendous act, while they besought and awaited pardon from the Emperor.

They gained nothing.

On the following day, the day of the execution, Caneca slept so quietly and profoundly that it was necessary for

his confessor and assistant, P. M. Friar Carlos de S. José, to awake him.

It was the 13th of January 1825: the scaffold was raised but no hangsmen could be found to hang the friar. All the executioners disobeyed and resisted; the victim however did not escape.

Friar Joaquim do Amor Divino Caneca died in Pernambuco being shot, on the same day the 13th of January, 1825.

The revolutionary friar was thus a martyr.



XIV OF DECEMBER

JAGUARARY SIMÃO SOARES



In 1630 the Dutch had invaded the captaincy of Pernambuco, and taken the city of Olinda, and the growing village, afterwards city, of Recife; but, in spite of their great strength and considerable resources, they were not able to extend their conquest, and remained limited to those two points till 1632, in which year, Calabar deserting on the 27th of April from the Pernambucan ranks, carried to them the wand of victory, as has been told in the biographical record of this Brazilian, on the date of his unfortunate desertion.

After guiding the Dutch in other undertakings and conquests Calabar led them to Rio Grande do Norte, and made them take the fort of Reis Magos on the 12th of December

1633, there to encounter on that day his lively and magnanimous contrast in the Indian *Jaguarary* who had received in baptism the name of Simão Soares.

In 1625 the Dutch fleet, which had arrived late in succour of the expedition which, in the preceding year, had succeeded in taking the city of Bahia, when on the 1st of May, gloriously restored, had borne towards the North, and delaying there some days anchored in Traição Bay, the Dutch opened relations with some Indians, among whom were the wife and a son of *Jaguarary*, who on account of the love he bore towards them, and to take them, thence out of the power of the enemy of his country, started from Parahyba, where he was, and proceeded also to the site of Traição Bay.

The Dutch at last withdrew, taking some twenty Indians, and *Jaguarary*, who had remained, with his wife and son, was separated from both, prisoner, and placed in irons in the fort of Reis Magos in Rio Grande do Norte by the Portuguese.

Jaguarary belonged to the same place from which Poty had come. Antonio Felipe Camarão was uncle to this our hero, who embracing civilization had taken, as has already been said, the name of Simão Soares in baptism, and had already rendered good services to the Portuguese colonizers of Brazil.

This stood him in no stead, nor did either his protests of innocence, or the want any proof of his connexion with the Dutch.

Jaguarary remained a prisoner eight years in the fort of Reis Magos, and only on the 12th of December, 1633, was he released, and found himself the victim of the Portuguese, in front of Calabar the deserter of his country's camp.

Either put at complete liberty immediately the Dutch took the fort, or on the 14th of this month, as some assert, or freed by them and rid of his chains was thrown over the wall into the sea when the aid of a plank, which buoyed him up, facilitated his escape towards the South, as Duarte de Albuquerque wrote in his *Memorials*; it is certain that Jaguarary was able to proceed onward for a league, and afterwards arrive at an Indian village.

The information of Duarte de Albuquerque cannot be accepted: the Dutch calculated upon the resentment and odium of Jaguarary martyred by the Portuguese for eight years, could not have treated him with cruelty so great and so absurd.

Jaguarary, or Simão Soares, was set at liberty and allowed to withdraw freely.

Arriving at the *taba* of his savage brethren he made himself known, showed them the marks, still fresh, of the irons, called to mind his long services, and particularly those which he had rendered against the French in the conquest of Maranhão, where he had with his people battled under Jeronymo de Albuquerque.

The Indians, stirred up and irritated, offered themselves to follow him and take vengeance; Jaguarary, however, unanimously reminded them of *God and the King*, and convinced them of the duty which lay upon all of them to combat the foreigner who had invaded the shores of the country.

The Indians did not sufficiently comprehend what God was and much less were they interested for the King; but Jaguarary was loved by those who knew his bravery and not a few accompanied him; when his strength recovered this man the example of loyalty went to join the corps

commanded by his nephew D. Antonio Felipe de Camarão.

Jaguarary, withdrawn from the Portuguese but firm in his post among the Indians served constantly in the war until in 1637 the Pernambucan army carried out the great and melancholy retreat to beyond the S. Francisco and Sergipe halting at the tower of Garcia d'Avila in Bahia.

The king Philip IV (III of Portugal) informed of the loyalty of Jaguarary Simão Soares, granted him an allowance of seven hundred and fifty *reales* with the provision that on his death it should pass to his wife and son.

The date of the death of this intrepid Indian, so notably loyal to the cause of catholic and Portuguese Brazil is not known.

XV OF DECEMBER

FRANCISCO DE PAULA BRITO



A man of a generous heart, of a happy and brilliant intellect, to whom knowledge only was wanting to take a splendid position, a distinguished laborious and clever workman, Francisco de Paula Brito, the legitimate son of the carpenter Antonio Duarte and D. Maria Joaquina da Conceição, was born in the city of Rio de Janeiro on the 2d of December, 1809.

In 1815 his parents withdrew to Suruhy, where he learned to read with an older sister and in 1824 returned to the capital with his maternal grandfather, Chief-Sergeant Martinho Pereira de Brito, from whom he took his last surname.

Martinho Pereira commander of a regiment of *pardos* (coloured men) died at a hundred years of age in 1830.

Paula Brito had entered the National printing-office; he afterwards passed to the workshops of the *Jornal do Commercio* very modestly founded by Seignot Plancher.

He already was noted as a compositor, and writer of verses, he gained renown as a man of talent; he had declared himself a liberal in politics, when the events of April 1831, and the abdication of D. Pedro I occurred.

Evaristo Ferreira da Veiga made use of the young compositor, and got him to improvise and read verses in the Campo de Sant'Anna, teaching order, and the union of the *troops* with the *people*,

In the same year Paula Brito bought with some sacrifice a book-binding shop, added thereto a small printing-office, and began his most laborious life. Poor, and ceaselessly working, he exerted himself to study his own language, and learnt French pretty well; but interested in the then stormy politics, he connected himself with the extremists, made opposition to the Regency government, separated from Evaristo, wrote periodicals, among them *Simplicio's wife*, all in rhymed verses, and suffered much in the fate of his establishment on this account.

When in December 1833 numerous groups of people, doubtless urged on imprudently by government agents, attacked by night and destroyed, in a great measure, the printing-offices where opposition newspapers were printed, one of these sinister bands went to threaten the printing-office of Paula Brito, who courageous and indignant hastened to open the door, and showing himself to the unpunished and protected disturbers of the peace, cried out with vehemence:

« Invade, and destroy »!....

The band recoiled, murmuring threats, but they knew at least how to spare the establishment of the patriot.

Little by little the political ardour of Paula Brito grew cooler : from an extremist and *Andradista* as he was, he became after 1837 an ally of the Conservative party ; but also from that time the most tolerant of political partisans ; so much so that it would be difficult to say in which of the two parties he counted the greatest number of friends.

Paula Brito's shop in the Praça da Constituição was declared by him neutral ground, and became one of the most frequented points of most pleasant constant and daily meeting in the city of Rio de Janeiro.

Meanwhile his establishment growing larger, he founded other printing-offices in the city, and in the city of Nictheroy ; he erred perhaps in multiplying them. Probably he erred still more in creating a great printing-company with an interest to shareholders, at the head of which he spent years, devotion, incredible effort, unsurpassed toil, and gained only troubles and ruin.

Through all this long last period audacious and afflicted of his life he never belied his courage ; he fell at last from the impossibility of resisting the impossible. The honourable generosity of his probity with which many consoled him who had lost in his immense loss, could not soften his concealed, but profound grief.

He died on the 15th of December 1861.

During his life Francisco de Paula Brito wrote among other periodicals *Simplicio's wife* and the *Marmota*, dramas, comic scenes and an infinity of verses which would fill some volumes. He translated dramas from the French for the famous João Caetano dos Santos, composed *Books of Fortune* for the nights of S. Antonio and S. João : wrote a great deal and too much. After his death a book was published under the title of « Verses of Francisco de Paula Brito » in which is to be read his biography written by

the distinguished Dr. Manoel Duarte de Azevedo already favourably known by other works of real merit.

Paula Brito was a versifier ; he never however came to be a poet. He had neither imagination, nor instruction sufficient to be so. In his dramas, in his comic scenes, he never went beyond the common. In his translations for the theatre he was not able to obtain success. In the literature of the country he will have but an obscure place.

Fortunately he has abundant titles, which recommend his memory to the gratitude of the country, of which incontestably he deserved well.

Francisco de Paula Brito was one of the men who most contributed to the perfect development of the art of printing in Rio de Janeiro.

With his indefatigable activity, and having established connexions or correspondents in almost all the provinces of Brazil, by means of these he scattered abroad numerous publications proceeding from his workshops, making himself, in this way, a true element of civilization.

As a publisher he knew how to animate youth of talent, and, at times, to his own detriment, published the first fruits of intelligences who were essaying their first flights.

Antonio Gonçalves Teixeira e Souza, and Bruno Seabra, recognized poets, and others besides, lived for years struggling with poverty and adverse fortune, and in these for them stormy times, Paula de Brito helped and protected them.

All the literary men of Brazil were his friends.

His death was generally lamented and though an artisan simple and poor, his funeral retinue was one of the most numerous which the city of Rio de Janeiro has seen.

XVI OF DECEMBER

FRANCISCO DE PAULA MENEZES

In the parish of S. Lourenço, town of Praia Grande, afterwards city of Nictheroy, province of Rio de Janeiro, was born on the 25th of August, 1811, Francisco de Paula Menezes, who from his tenderest years showed a great deal of shrewdness and talent.

His father José Antunes de Menezes persuaded him to apply himself to the Fine Arts, making him follow up the course of the respective Academy in Rio de Janeiro; he however protested and besought so much, that he overcame the paternal wish.

He studied humanities with distinction; entered the Medico-surgical Academy of Rio de Janeiro and in 1834 concluded his studies, taking on the *16th of December*, 1838, the doctor's degree in the School of Medicine into which it had been turned, by the great reform which that academy underwent.

While still a student, Paulo Menezes had been sent on a commission by the government to the town of Santo Antonio de Sã, ravaged by terrible paludal fevers, and there he rendered good services in combating the pestilence.

After taking his degree of doctor he twice entered into competition to gain a Professor's chair in the School of which he was a son. His efforts were fruitless; but without any dishonour for him, on the other hand with general recognition of his brilliant intelligence, although not superior to his more fortunate competitors.

In 1844 he was nominated by the Imperial government professor of rhetoric of the municipality of Rio de Janeiro, and in 1848 professor of the same chair in the Imperial College of D. Pedro II, where for some months he taught philosophy also.

In the Brazilian Geographical and Historical Institute he exercised for some years the post of second Secretary. In the Imperial Academy of Medicine he was for some time editor of the respective Annals. He was connected with different literary magazines as an active *collaborateur*, and published the *Revista Litteraria*, which had but a short existence, of which however he was the principal and almost the only writer.

There was in his time no literary society in which he did not figure in a distinguished manner.

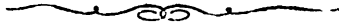
He died in 1857 at forty-six years of age, and lamenting his early death which he foresaw some days before closing his eyes.

Numerous printed speeches still remain of Paulo Menezes and different manuscripts; among them a tragedy in hendecasyllabic verse, entitled *Lucia de Miranda*, a drama and a comedy, *S. John's Night in the Country*, which are no longer to be met with.

The *Pictures from Brazilian Literature* were notable, also in manuscript, and to which the last part was wanting.

Poor and overworked by the professorship and by his medical practice Dr. Francisco de Paula Menezes could not show himself a profoundly learned literary man in his writings ; he shone forth however by admirable talent, in the words of the most eloquent Councillor and Doctor, Felix Martins, frequently *beamed with a fire-fly's light* in his eloquence.

Dr. Paulo Menezes had in a very high degree the gift of speech, a lively imagination, and great felicity in the impetus of improvised utterances.





XVII OF DECEMBER

ANTONIO PIRES DA SILVA PONTES LEME



Antonio Pires da Silva Pontes Leme, the son of José da Silva Pontes, was born in the parish of Nossa Senhora do Rosario, division of Marianna, in Minas Geraes, in the middle of the last century.

Nothing is known of his infancy, of the place where he began to study, of the year in which he left Brazil; he is met with however in the University of Coimbra, from his matriculation in the first year of the mathematical course in 1772 until he became doctor on the 24th of December, 1777, the fellow-pupil of Dr. Lacerda of S. Paulo, and receiving a doctor's degree with him on the same day.

Thence until 1790 both followed the same fortune. He is nominated like Dr. Lacerda astronomer of the third party of the definers of the limits of Brazil. He starts

from Lisbon on the 8th of January, 1780 ; arrives at Pará on the 26th of February, and at Barcellos on the Rio Negro on the 17th of October. With the engineer, Ricardo Franco de Almeida Serra he explores the Rio Branco and its fountain-heads, a task which occupies him for four months.

On the 1st of September, 1781, he embarks in Barcellos, and only at the end of six months of dangerous and afflicting journey, does he arrive at the capital of Matto-Grosso.

With the engineer Serra he explores all the ground up to the springs of the Paraguay, and afterwards the Cavalvasco plains as far as Negra Bay. He returns and arrives at Cuyabá, whence he goes to survey the Rio Verde and the Capivary, the western affluents of the Guaporé, proceeding later on to the springs of the Sararé, Juruena, Guaporé and Jaupú.

His *Diary* was printed together with that of Dr. Lacerda in S. Paulo in 1841.

Returning to Portugal he gave himself up with ardor to the preparation of a *Geographical Chart of Brazil* on a large scale and with spherical projection.

From that time forward his fortune became diverse from, and more fortunate than that of his countryman and almost brother, Dr. Lacerda.

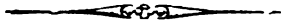
Nominated professor of the Naval Academy of Lisbon, member of the Royal Academy of Sciences, he received the post of frigate-captain, and the decoration of the Order of Aviz, and in 1798 published his translation of the work of George Attwood, on the *Construction and Analysis of the Geometrical propositions and the practical experiments which serve as the basis to Naval Architecture*.

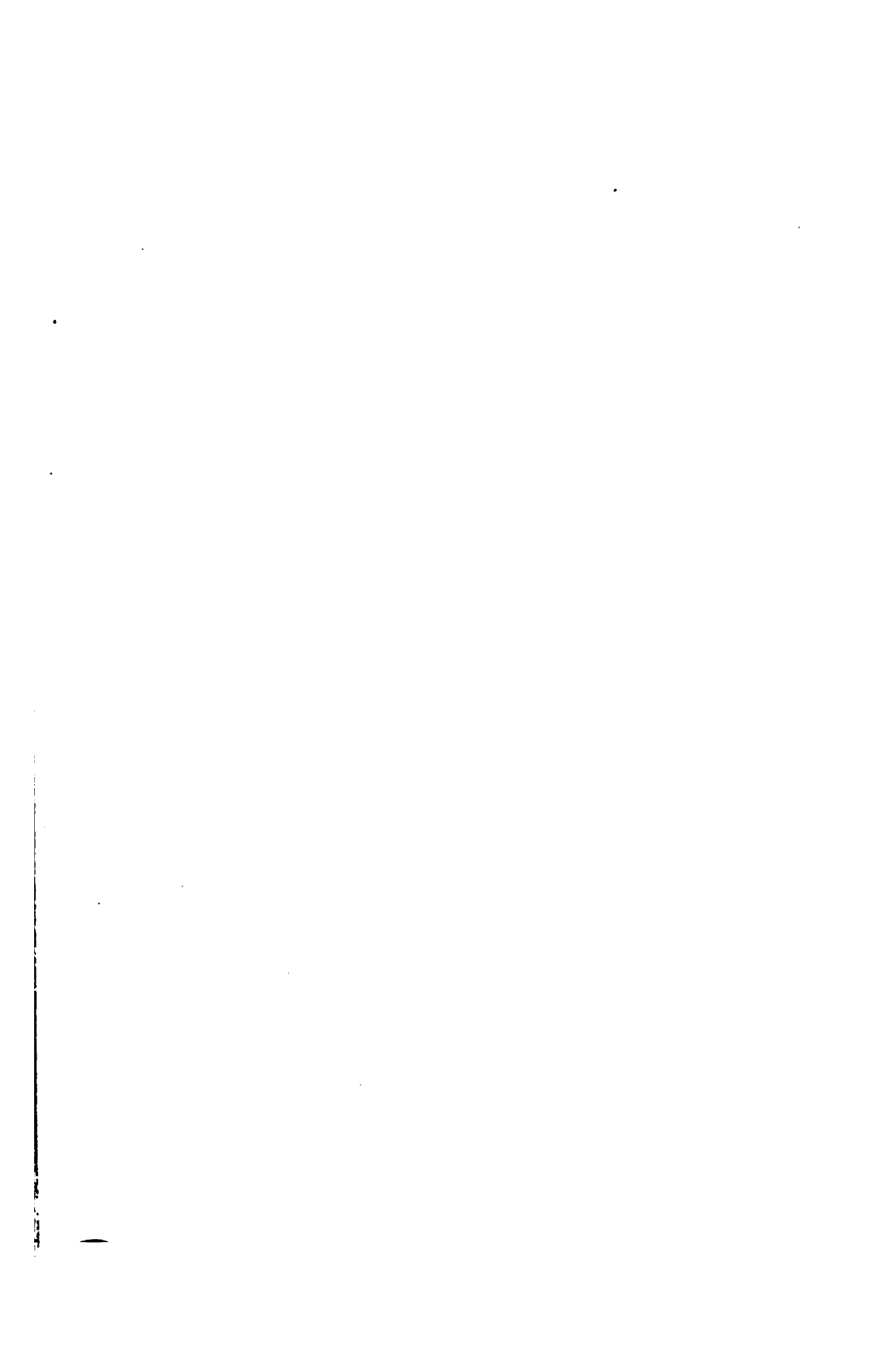
By the influence of D. Rodrigo de Souza Continho, afterwards Count of Linhares, who had ascended to the ministry, he was nominated Governor of the Captaincy of

Espirito Santo in Brazil in 1793; but it was only on the 29th of March, 1800, that he took possession of this post, in the fulfillment of which he rendered good services; and among these is to be remembered the zeal with which he cared for the civilization of the Indians of the Rio Doce, creating there the garrison which was called *Linhares*, doubtless in honor of the family of the minister, his protector, and illustrious friend of the Brazilians.

On the 17th of December, 1804, Dr. Antonio Pires da Silva Pontes Leme delivered over the government of the captaincy of Espirito Santo to his successor, and this was the last date known of his life.

Dr. Antonio Pires died in Brazil before the year 1807, according as we read in his biography, written by the Viscount of Porto Seguro and published, like that of Dr. Lacerda, in the Review of the Brazilian Historical Institute, Vol. XXXVI, the biography whence the present article is extracted.





XVIII OF DECEMBER

FRANCISCO MANOEL DA SILVA



In the first part of the nineteenth century the art of music flourished in Brazil ; it was exalted into a brilliant and conscientious worship, encouraged by the Prince Regent, afterwards king D. John VI, who applauded and rewarded it, in the songs and sweet harmonies in adoration of God.

Then Minas Geraes, rich in clever musicians, vocalists and instrumentalists, had taken the denomination of the *Italy of Brazil*, and in Rio de Janeiro Father José Mauricio Nunes Garcia glistened with all the splendor of true musical genius.

On the 21st of February, 1795, Francisco Manoel da Silva, the son of Joaquim Marianno da Silva and D. Joaquim Rosa da Silva, was born in the city of Rio de Janeiro,

and immediately from his tender years, with a decided vocation manifested for the divine art, he was placed under the lessons of the great master, Father José Mauricio.

Suckled by the classic admirer of Hadyn, Francisco Manoel was already looked upon hopefully, when later on he heard and profited by the precepts of Neukonm, the celebrated author of the concert executed by three thousand artists on the inauguration of the statue of Guttemberg.

Neukonm had repeated the lessons of Father José Mauricio in the comprehension and in the grand object and purpose of the musical art.

Francisco Manoel, still very young, composed a *Te-Deum* which electrified the Prince Royal D. Pedro, from whom the inspired artist received the promise to send him to Italy to perfect his musical studies.

Marcos Portugal, a remarkable composer of music, a rival conquered, as was proved by Father José Mauricio, was leader of the orchestra of the Royal Chamber. To this orchestra Francisco Manoel belonged. He created difficulties for this young Brazilian musician, and so as to take his time from composing, he made him pass from the violincello which he played, to the study of the violin.

Francisco Manoel obeyed, waited, had no protection, saw D. João VI retire from Brazil, the revolutionary period commence, the art of music decay in the first Empire, D. Pedro I abdicate, and from deception to deception, labored, studied, wept over the tomb of Father José Mauricio, *did for himself*, raised himself in his art and from 1833 until the day of his death became the toiling and noble heir of the glories of the past, the first representative of the musical art in Brazil, and the revered protector of his brother artists.

In 1833 he founded the Society of Musical Beneficence.

In 1838 he published, dedicated to the Emperor, a compendium of music for the Imperial College of D. Pedro II.

Musical composer of the Imperial Chamber in 1841, author of the national hymn of Brazil, in 1842 successor of Marcos Portugal in the place of Master of the Imperial Chapel, the real and principal founder of the Conservatory of Music of Brazil, Francisco Manoel da Silva was still the soul of the Philharmonic society, which preserved in Rio de Janeiro like a zealous vestal the pure culture of the art of music in the capital of the Empire.

A great master, a zealous friend of musicians, the founder of the beneficent institution which succors them in sickness and wretchedness; the initiator and chief of the Conservatory of Music, Francisco Manoel da Silva was a great musician and well-deserving of his country.

He distinguished himself as a most fertile composer. In this unsurpassed fertility, which often through extreme kindness and consideration was subjected to the appeals of friends and brethren in art, he has left compositions which do no honor to his genius.

The bad popular taste and the influence of the Italian theatre, drew from his most fecund imagination, the protector of the interest of others, litanies and masses which he himself disapproved; but, in compensation, left at liberty, without the oppression of the exigencies of musical artists who asked him for bread at the price of the bad taste of the public, who lacking devotion wished for Bellini and Donizetti in the church, Francisco Manoel has bequeathed *Te-Deum masses*, litanies, sacred music, indeed, that Hadyn, and Mozart would have applauded with enthusiasm.

No one knows the number of ballads, songs of a

national character, popularly called *modinhas*, which come from that inspired heart and soul.

His musical works of all kinds united, and principally the sacred ones, would form a great many large volumes.

And how and when, had he not been an artist of genius, would Francisco Manoel have written so much?....

The Imperial Chapel, the Conservatory of Music, the Society of Musical Beneficence, the Philharmonic for some years, the Italian theatre afterwards for some time, the great religious feasts and solemnities weighed him down ceaselessly; a most clever and highly reputed professor, he was eagerly pressed to teach singing and the piano by the principal families of the capital. To be a pupil of Francisco Manoel was a title of glory for the young ladies.

Francisco Manoel had always taken up all the hours of the day and a good part of the night; it seemed then that there would remain no time for him to compose. He, however, was prodigious in his powers of improvising and his activity. He composed returning home, while he waited for dinner; he composed taking advantage of the hour casually without employment; he composed in society and in the fervor of general conversation, and composing wrote with rapidity and security, which was wonderful.

Besides all these great gifts Francisco Manoel da Silva was equally to be recommended for his virtues. Charitable and beneficent, an excellent friend, an honorable man, he left his name covered with blessings.

Francisco Manoel da Silva died in the city of Rio de Janeiro on the 18th of December, 1865.

Francisco Manoel da Silva received from H. M. the Emperor the decoration of the Imperial Order of the Rose on the 5th of March, 1840, and was elevated to *Official* of the same order on the 9th of April, 1857.

XIX OF DECEMBER

JANUARIO DA CUNHA BARBOZA

Legitimate son of Leonardo José da Cunha Barboza, a native of Lisbon, and of D. Bernarda Maria de Jesus, a native of Rio de Janeiro, Januario da Cunha Barboza was born in this same city on the 10th of July, 1780.

When nine years old losing his mother and a little afterward his father, he remained under the charge of a maternal uncle, to whom he owed his education. In 1803 he took holy orders. In the following year he made two voyages to Lisbon, and returning to Rio de Janeiro in 1805, devoted himself to the ministry.

The Royal Chapel being founded in 1808 in Rio de Janeiro, Father Januario gained the nomination of Regius preacher, and received the decoration of the Order of Christ. In September of the same year he was admitted as

substitute to the chair of rational and moral philosophy, passing in 1814 to be the proprietor.

In 1821 he was one of the first to declare himself in favor of the cause of independence in Brazil, and with Joaquim Gonçalves Ledo published the *Reverbero Constitucional Fluminense*, a weekly periodical, whose first number appeared on the 15th of September of this year, in support of the rights and the regeneration of the country.

Through all the year 1822 until September, Father Januario rendered glorious services to the revolution of independence, and in this month proceeded to Minas Geraes in order to co-operate for the immediate acclamation of the Emperor D. Pedro I, who might find an obstacle in the Governor, the Portuguese nobleman D. Manoel da Camara, who however could not oppose himself to the fervid enthusiasm of the people of Minas. In Villa Rica, Marianna, Caethé and Sabará, Father Januario had a beneficent influence, promoting harmony and conciliation among the Brazilians, and calming passions excited; but on returning to Rio de Janeiro he was apprehended, taken a prisoner to the fort of Santa Cruz on the 7th of September, and on the 19th of December was banished without any allowance to support himself in a foreign land!..... Thus he arrived at Havre and afterwards at Paris in 1823.

The patriot had been, with other Brazilians, the victim of suspicions of imaginary revolutionary plots. His innocence, however, was immediately recognized in the trial which was set on foot, and in September, 1823, he hastened to return to Brazil.

On the 4th of April, 1824, he was gazetted as *Official* of the Imperial Order of the Cross (*Cruzeiro*), and on the 25th of September following canon of the Imperial Chapel.

Elected a member of the general legislative assembly

for the first legislature, for the provinces of Minas Geraes and Rio de Janeiro, he chose the latter, which was that of his cradle.

The legislative term of four years being concluded Canon Januario was charged with the direction of the *Diario do Governo* and of the National Printing-Office. In 1831 the provisional regency dispensed him from this commission; but soon afterwards, in the July following, he was again called upon to fulfill it, and until 1837 worked ardently in the political press on behalf of the government and on his own account; in this latter branch distinguishing himself in periodicals and satirical writings.

As a political man his life almost terminated in 1837; only in 1845 did he return to the Camara of Deputies, elected by the province of Rio de Janeiro. But he then occupied himself in preference with the reform of Public Instruction, when death came to seize him. An applauded liberal in 1821 and 1822; from 1828 forward he incurred the displeasure and the mistrust of the liberals, principally after he was charged with the *Diario do Governo*.

In July, 1831, he returned to the active and devoted service of the party who had held him under suspicions of desertion, and who, doing honor to his merit, elected him a deputy in 1845.

In the last ten years of his life, and those most full of labor, Canon Januario da Cunha Barboza was the luminous lighthouse of the civilization of Brazil, and he gleams over the whole extent of its patriotic harvest. He was nominated synodal examiner, chronicler of the Empire, and in 1844 director of the national and public library of Rio de Janeiro, perpetual Secretary of the *Sociedade Auxiliadora da Industria Nacional*; he founded the *Auxiliador*, a periodical which he left in four volumes. With

Marshal Raymundo José da Cunha Mattos, he had the glory to propose the foundation and to sketch out the bases of the Brazilian Historical and Geographical Institute, of which he was also perpetual secretary. He was charged with the editing and publication of the *Revista Frimensal*, which he published up to the seventh volume.

As secretary of the Institute and an esteemed literary man, he alimented and maintained an active correspondence with the principal literary and scientific societies of Europe and North America, with foreign scholars, and with a very great number of cultivators of the history and geography of the country in almost all the provinces of Brazil. He still found time, and did not feel tired, to go and encourage studious youth, taking the presidency of their modest societies, and although growing old, renewed his youth in the pulpit, whence he broke forth in torrents of eloquence.

He was a member of the Dramatic Conservatory of Brazil, corresponding member of fourteen foreign scientific and literary societies; he was Commander of the Orders *Cruzeiro* and of Christ, of the Imperial Order of the Rose, of the *Conceição* of Portugal, and of Francis I of Naples.

As a sacred orator it is sufficient to say that he was able to establish a brilliant reputation when Caldas, S. Carlos, S. Paio and Rodovalho shone in Rio de Janeiro.

As a political writer he had the glory of the *Reverbero* in the time of the independence, and he afterwards, from 1829 to 1836, multiplied periodicals and publications of all kinds, in some serious and profound in polemics, in others ardent and vigorous on behalf of the injured, in others finally satirical and even biting, as for example:

A Mutuca Picante, a periodical, and the *Garimpeiros*, a small poem.

In the professorship which he exercised, teaching philosophy for twenty-seven years, he was always considered a most learned, renowned and agreeable professor.

Beyond all this, Canon Januario was also a poet of merit: besides the *Garimpeiros*, a poem published in 1837, he had published in 1822 the small poem *Nictheroy, a Metamorphosis of Rio de Janeiro*, and a great number of verses, principally satirical, had proceeded from his pen.

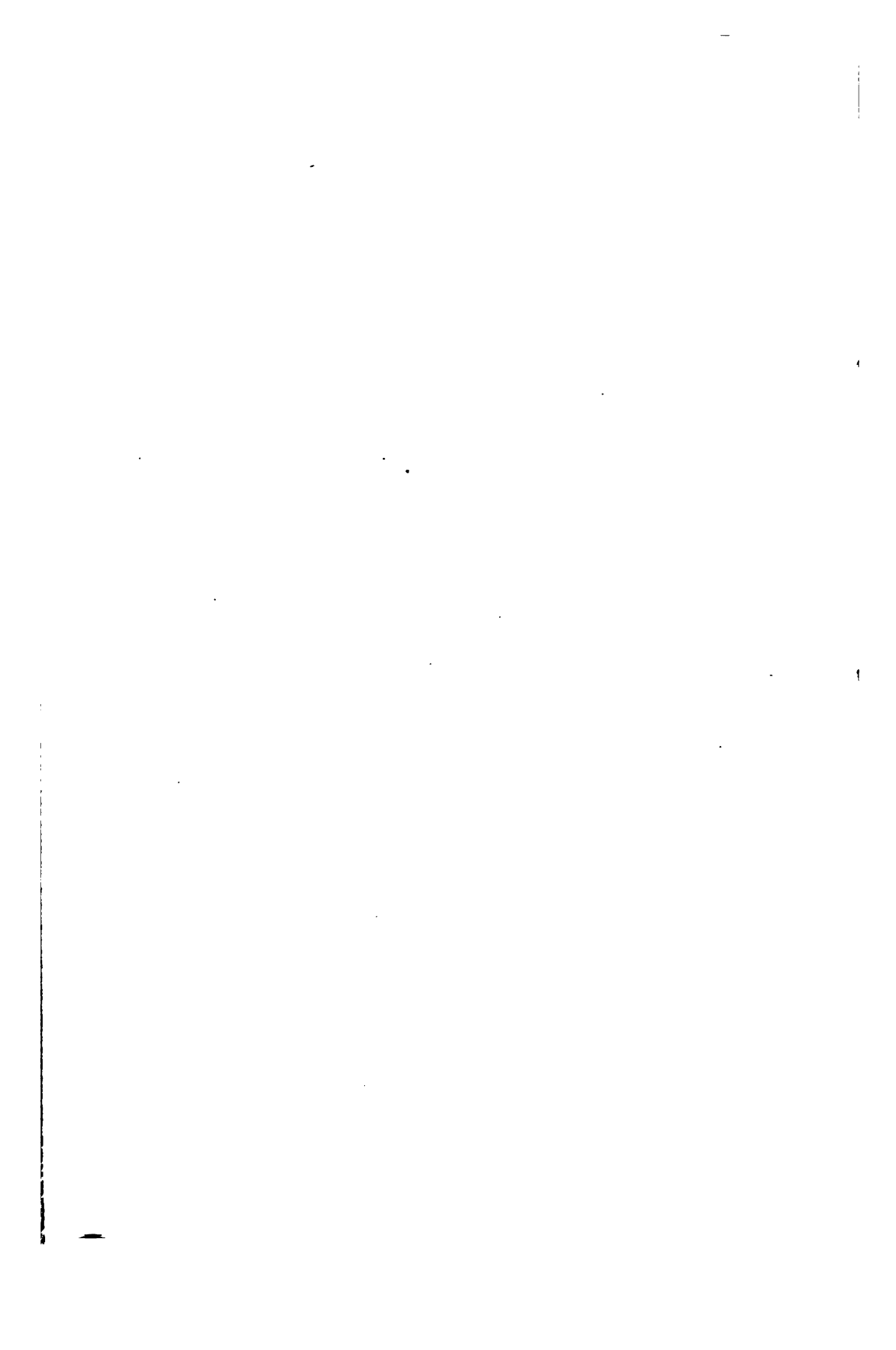
The *Rusga da Praia-Grande*, a comedy in three acts, the composition of Canon Januario, published in 1834, is further a political satire, which cost him a most violent answer in a comedy of the same kind.

Sermons, discourses, institute reports, and other writings he left published in abundance.

Canon Januario da Cunha Barboza died in the city of Rio de Janeiro on the 22d of February, 1846.

The Brazilian Historical and Geographical Institute, in public and solemn session of the 6th of April, 1848, in the Imperial Court, honored with the presence of the Emperor and of his August Consort, effected the inauguration of the busts of Canon Januario da Cunha Barboza and of Marshal Raymundo José da Cunha Mattos, which ornament the room where its sessions are held.





XX OF DECEMBER

GREGORIO DE MATTOS GUERRA



The legitimate son of Gregorio de Mattos and of D. Maria da Guerra, Gregorio de Mattos Guerra was born in Bahia on the 20th of December, 1633, a man whose poetic skill and original character were to render him equally celebrated and unhappy.

In the Jesuits' schools Gregorio de Mattos received, together with his older brothers Pedro and Euzebio de Mattos, the solid and useful bases of a literary education, and at fourteen years of age was sent by his father to the University of Coimbra, where he took the degree of Bachelor in Laws.

In the University he immediately distinguished himself as a poet; his muse, however, inspired only facetious,

satirical, and burlesque verses, with which he ridiculed the men, the customs, or the facts which fell under his displeasure.

Desembargador Belchior da Cunha Brochado wrote the following to a friend in Lisbon, referring to Gregorio de Mattos :

« There is here (in Coimbra) a Brazilian so refined in satire, that, with his images and tropes, it seems as though Momus is dancing to the songs of Apollo.»

Gregorio de Mattos bade farewell to Coimbra to abuse it in verses in which malignity is redeemed by grace, and opened a lawyer's office in Lisbon, afterwards serving in the post of criminal judge of one ward of the city, and judge in the affairs of Orphans and Absentees of a district, (*comarca*) and so notably well, that his sentences were quoted as models by the celebrated juris-consult Pegas.

The Prince Regent, afterwards King Pedro I, wishing to protect Gregorio de Mattos, who had served him in his undertaking against Alphonso VI, assured him that he would nominate him to the *Casa da Supplicação*; but exacted that he should go to Rio de Janeiro and open a judicial inquiry upon the government of Salvador Corrêa de Sá e Benevides, whose exemplary fidelity to King Alphonso he did not pardon.

The malignant poet, the biting satirist had the most generous heart, and, only in versifying was he capable of malice, sometimes, indeed, cruel: he was not willing to accept the commission, lost the good graces of D. Pedro, and returned to his own country, arriving at Bahia in 1679.

He there filled the offices of Treasurer-in-Chief of the See and vicar-general during the archbishopric of Gaspar Barata de Mendonça, who never came to Brazil; but with the arrival and installation of the Archbishop D. João da

Madre de Deus, he renounced those offices and gave himself up to the practice of the law.

If up till that time Gregorio de Mattos had never altogether forgotten his meddling, pitiless, and burlesque muse, thenceforward free from the embarrassment and reserve, which the positions he had held imposed upon him, in his independent life of advocate he unreined his natural, and terrible poetical genius, becoming as celebrated as he was feared, and unfortunately creating numerous enemies.

— Litigants, attornies, notaries and judges were victims of his epigrams ; Governors-general groaned as they were bitten by his satires, which made everybody laugh : the genius of Gregorio de Mattos was inexhaustible, and in his poetical compositions, often extravagant, vulgar in their style, and even with bold obscenities, the images burst forth so originally, so appropriately grotesque, that they were admired of necessity although their rashness was re-proved.

Not even the wife of Gregorio de Mattos escaped the assaults of his satirical muse !...

D. Maria dos Povos, a handsome widow, whom he had married in 1684, was the martyr of his eccentricities of character, and of the spicy epigrams of her second husband, the implacable and incorrigible poet, armed with ridicule and satire.

At length the governor, Antonio Luiz da Camara Gonçalves Coutinho, the victim of the most witty, burlesque and devil-possessed satires, showed himself so furious and threatening, and the poet found himself so surrounded and persecuted by enemies, that it was necessary for him to absent himself from the city of S. Salvador, retiring to a town of the *Reconcavo*.

Gregorio de Mattos, however, could not control his genius : returning to the city of Bahia immediately that D. João de Alencastre in 1694 took possession of the government of Brazil, he still and, now with sixty-one years of age, so disastrously made *Momus dance to the songs of Apollo*, that the said D. João de Alencastre ordered him to be arrested, and to proceed in banishment to Angola.

Exile and misery, old age and privations broke down the satirical poet. At the end of some months the governor of Angola, Pedro Jacques de Magalhães, took pity on the wretched old man and allowed him to return to Brazil in a vessel, bound to Pernambuco.

Gregorio de Mattos arrived at Pernambuco, and ill, in sad despondency of spirit, without resources, without strength to work, he had to *ask alms so as to get bread*.

Caetano de Mello e Castro then governor of the captaincy of Pernambuco, who had known Gregorio de Mattos Guerra when rich and highly considered in Lisbon, generously affected, gave him a pecuniary pension and hospitable shelter in a House of Charity.

There the mocking, sarcastic, malign poet, who from the chords of his lyre had never drawn a sacred harmony nor a sweet accord of love to one's neighbour, turned himself towards God, and in the face of death raised himself up, tuning inspired the hymn of virtue and religion, the flight of the soul, which purified by repentance spreads its wings to ascend to the skies.

Gregorio de Mattos Guerra died in Pernambuco in the year 1696, at seventy-three years of age, and was buried in the Capuchin asylum of Nossa Senhora da Penha.

XXI OF DECEMBER

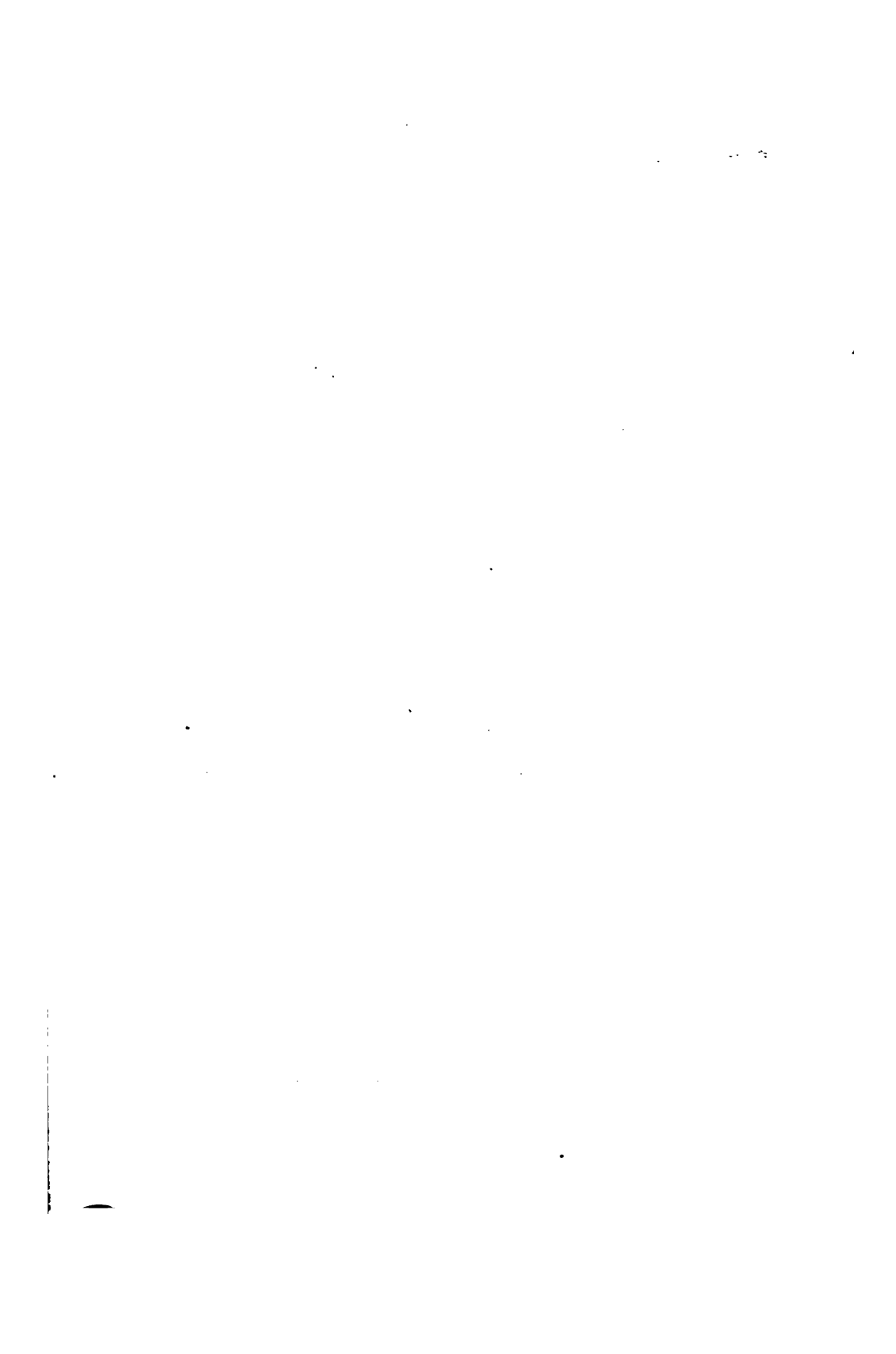
LUIZ BOTELHO DO ROZARIO

A native of Pernambuco, where he was born in 1695, Luiz Botelho do Rozario made there his first studies, and entering the Carmelite Order, afterwards proceeded to Portugal, and became a doctor in theology at the University of Coimbra.

He enjoyed the reputation of a great preacher, and much consideration among the Carmelites : he was member of the general chapter of his Order held in Ferrara in 1726, first resident « *definer* » of the studies, president of the of the Order of Carmo, special chronicler of the same, and chapter qualifier for the Holy Office.

He was a learned man, possessing great virtues, and a famous sacred orator.

In the absence of dates relative to his life, works, and death all of which are unknown, his name is registered in this article of the 21st of December.



XXII OF DECEMBER

JACINTHA DE S. JOSÉ

Upon the day in which the church celebrates the festival of Santa Thereza de Jesus, the reformer of the Carmelite order, the 15th of October, 1716, Jacintha, the legitimate daughter of the Portuguese José Rodrigues Ayres and of Maria de Lemos Pereira, of Rio de Janeiro, was born in this city.

Her parents were very religious, and venerated for their charity, and reared their children Sebastião and Antonio, Jacintha and Francisca in the love of God and their neighbour, but Jacintha distinguished herself above all the four by her amiable presence, her goodness of heart, her sweetness of temper, her remarkable discretion, and humility from the years of her early infancy.

In the age of laughter, of angelic innocence, and of gir-

lish sports, she found pleasure and rapture alone in prayer, and very early revealed the most fervid vocation for the religious life and abandonment of the world: prolonged extasies coincided with these feelings, in which she saw and worshipped the *Child Jesus*, and often *Santa Thereza*.

Very weak in health, she suffered grave infirmities from the twelfth year of her age, experienced great torments, for which the extasies and prayers were her consolation.

In his *Annals* of Rio de Janeiro, Balthazar da Silva Lisboa refers at length to the persecution of the evil spirits which troubled Jacintha, from which the intervention of Santa Thereza and the divine protection saved her.

Rodrigues Ayres, who opposed the vocation of his daughter, died, and later on Maria Lemos, her mother, contracted second nuptials, a fact which favoured her religious desire.

Jacintha already had in her sister Francisca a fervid companion in devotion and austere penitence. Besides constant prayers and pious exercises at home, they were accustomed to frequent assiduously the chapel of Nossa Senhora do Desterro, which was on the slope of the hill afterwards called Santa Thereza, and to arrive there passed through a part of the *Matacavallos* road, (afterwards street, and now *Rua do Riachuelho*,) and seeing there, and several times noticing the *Chacara* garden-grounds known as the Bica chacara, so near the chapel, and at the foot of the hill, they went one day to examine it impelled by the desire to possess it.

There was a small ruined house partly fallen in, and the grounds were without culture as though abandoned. Ja-

cintha finding near a fountain a root of basil, took from it a few slips, and planted them around the fountain.

Some days after this, Manoel Pereira Ramos, Jacintha's admirer, bought for her the *Bica* chacara in March 1742, and on the 27th of the same month, early in the morning, the two sisters Jacintha and Francisca, having received the blessing of their mother and step father, and carrying with them the image of the *Child Jesus*, withdrew to the ruined house of the *Bica* chacara, and retired for ever from the world.

Jacintha, older than Francisca, was then twenty-six years and five months of age: the two young maidens delivered themselves up to the protection of Jesus, Mary and Joseph, and and relinquishing their surnames, one called herself Jacintha de S. José, the other Francisca de Jesus e Maria. As soon as they arrived at their retreat, their first care was to arrange, although very rudely, an altar for the image of the *Child-God*. They sold what jewellery they possessed, and employed the money in the immediate and rapid construction of a chapel; the two sisters going, on the cool evenings and moonlight nights, in company with the priest, José Gonçalves, the son of their step-father, to carry stones for the work, which was hastened still more by the unsought monthly allowance, which the governor Gomes Freire de Andrade made, stirred up and transported at the sight of so much piety, self-denial and virtue.

Such was the origin of the Capella do Menino Deus, (Chapel of the Child-God) which, restored, is yet preserved, and ought zealously to be preserved in the city of Rio de Janeiro.

The two first flowers of the Brazilian Carmel perfumed the city of S. Sebastião with their purity, with their reli-

gious exercises and great virtues, the extasies being repeated, and the celestial visions of mother Jacintha.

On the 15th of March, 1748, Rosa de Jesus e Maria united herself with the two sisters, and afterwards other maidens.

Francisca de Jesus e Maria died radiant with faith on the 13th of July, 1748, and was laid ou by her sister.

Jacintha, now numerously accompanied, caused the austere rules of the order, as reformed by Santa Thereza, to be observed in her retreat, and thought of founding the first convent dedicated to the said Saint.

Gomes Freire, the Count of Bobadella, took it to heart to favour that desire: the bishop supported it in a conference which he had with him, and immediately permitted the retired maidens to wear the brown holland dress and the white baize cloak, observing the Institutions of Santa Thereza, they being considered from that time as *Carmelitas Descalças* (Unshod Carmelites).

The works of the convent commenced on the 24th of June 1750, and advanced briskly.

But the bishop very thoughtfully preferred the milder rules of Santa Clara, against the wish of Jacintha, and the brief of the Holy Father of the 5th of January 1850 came with this idea.

Jacintha de S. José, entirely devoted to the austere reforms of Santa Thereza, started for Lisbon on the 4th of November 1753, in the company of her brother, Father Sebastião Rodrigues Ayres.

In Lisbon the protection of the king crowned their desires, gaining for them the bull of the 22nd of December, 1755, from Pope Benedict XIV, who approved the required rule of Santa Thereza.

Mother Jacintha in Lisbon was the grieved witness of the great and terrible earthquake.

Ready to return to Brazil, Mother Jacintha went to take leave of D. José I, and the king, moved, said to her :

Go Mother Jacintha, go and sooth the regrets of your daughters, and recommend us to God.

Arrived at Brazil Mother Jacintha was a short time after struck by a terrible blow : the Count of Bobadella, her protector, died on the 1st of January 1763.

Before expiring he had murmured :

The house of Bobadella is made ; but my daughters are still without a house.

The house of Bobadella which was made, was the tomb, in which his body was placed, in the transept of the Gospel side of the Santa Thereza church then completed.

The inauguration of the convent, the profession of the nuns, and the approvation of the patrimony were still wanting....

And the foundress did not see this complement of the foundation.

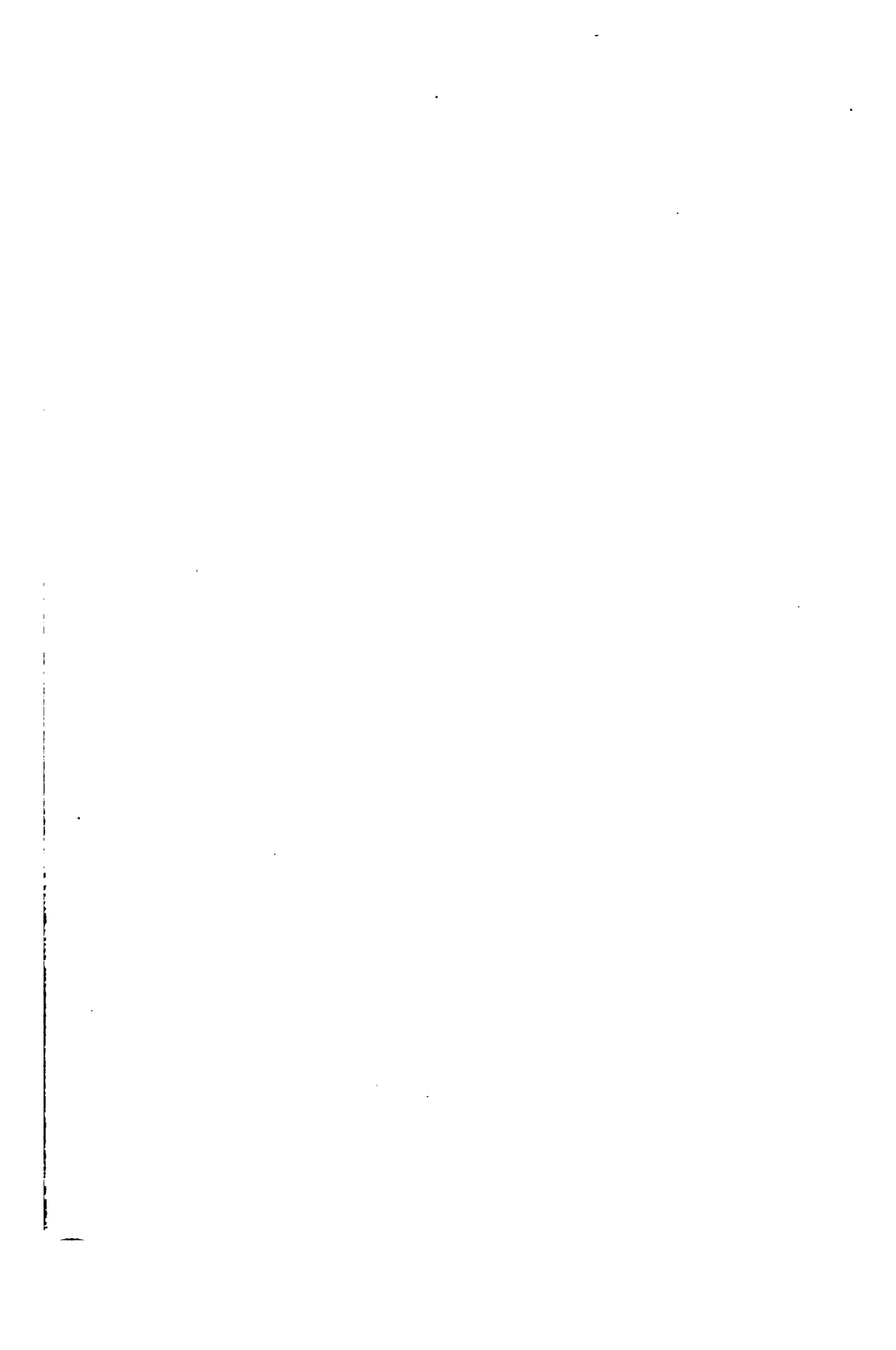
After obtaining so much, but before professing, Mother Jacintha died on the 2nd of October, 1768.

She died resigned, serenely angelical, smiling in her last agonies, and as if in a last ecstasy.

The inauguration of the canonical cloister and the profession of the virgins of the Brazilian Carmel was only realized on the 23rd of January, 1780.

But the foundress of the order in Brazil was Mother Jacintha de S. José.





XXIII OF DECEMBER

BISHOP D. MANOEL DO MONTE RODRIGUES DE ARAUJO

A man of science, of profound knowledge, and of most exalted virtues, Manoel do Monte Rodrigues de Araujo, the legitimate son of João Rodrigues de Araujo and D. Catharina Ferreira de Araujo, was born in Pernambuco on the 17th of March, 1798.

Immediately he had concluded his first studies in Recife, he was entrusted by his parents, who destined him to the priesthood, to the fathers of the Congregation of the Oratory; with these he studied rational and moral philosophy, and with the Carmelite monks, mathematics.

The republican revolution of 1817 having broken out in Recife, Manoel do Monte withdrew to the neighbouring city of Olinda, and followed up the course of the Episcopal Seminary with so much praise from his masters, that

scarcely had he concluded the last theological year, than he was appointed to fill the chair of Moral theology, during the absence of the professor who was the proprietor.

The diocese of Pernambuco being vacant, Manoel do Monte came to Rio de Janeiro to take presbyter's orders, and received the sacerdotal unction from the bishop, D. José Caetano da Silva Coutinho, on the 17th of February, 1822.

On his return to Pernambuco he entered into competition for the chair of moral theology, and obtained it in consequence of the brilliant proofs which he exhibited and his already recognized merit.

The two juridical courses of S. Paulo and Olinda being created, the latter had no sooner opened its register in 1828 than Father Monte, already now for some years professor of theology and rich in knowledge, hastened to enroll himself for the first year, and followed up the academical studies, like an eagle who rises on his powerful flights before new horizons.

The province of Pernambuco elected him deputy to the General Assembly in the fourth legislature. Obeying the mandate of his fellows the accomplished Father Monte proceeded to Rio de Janeiro. In the Camara, although inclined to liberal ideas, he showed himself governmental, and free from party bonds; although he did not figure as a parliamentary orator, and was of an extreme modesty, the greatness of his knowledge and the perfume of his virtues escaped no one, so that by decree of the 23d of February, 1839, he was chosen by the Regent, in the name of the Emperor, as bishop of Rio de Janeiro, this election being confirmed by the Holy Father, Gregory XVI, by bull of the 23d of December of the same year.

The province of Rio de Janeiro re-elected its venerable bishop as deputy to the General Assembly. D. Manoel do

Monte, however, was averse to political struggles, and was not again thought of in another election; for he shunned entirely a task, very honorable and patriotic doubtless, but altogether foreign to his inclinations, and leading him out of the way of his high episcopal mission as a prince of the church.

Exclusively devoted to the spiritual government of his diocese, the venerable bishop D. Manoel do Monte was not always fortunate in this grand, but arduous ministry.

Sometimes one defect alone compromises, and reduces the power of, the most precious qualities. *The only defect* of D. Manoel do Monte was the sublime exaggeration of his goodness and of his admirable humility.

Learned, charitable in the extreme, so modest that he lived in fear of his self supposed ignorance; humble, timid, good as an angel, with the innocence of a virgin to believe in the information of any priest who wished to deceive him, an example of every virtue, judging men always with indulgence, and with, as it were, childish credulity in the purity of the intentions of those who sought him, a holy man, Bishop D. Manoel do Monte compromised all his singular and venerable qualities by the want of energy and of severe and strong action.

He was the victim of the bad priests and of some of the employees of the administration in his diocese.

When a friend, priest, worthy of his high ministry, frankly told him that he allowed himself to credit the tricks of hypocrisy and, by exaggerated credulity in perfidious cunning, the holy bishop replied, *sometimes weeping*.

— How can I think that any one will take the trouble to climb the hill of Conceição only for the abominable purpose of deceiving me!...

At other times he said.

— So much wickedness is not to be presumed ! but I prefer to be deceived than to expose myself to judge ill unjustly of those who seek their bishop—

His virtue, his ethics shine forth in a few words one day uttered by him.

Ascending the *Ladeira* of the hill of Conceição to retire to his palace, L. Manoel do Monte saw, at a distance, dozens of poor seated on the steps, and filling up the principal entrance of the building: he smiled sweetly, and said to the priests who accompanied him, pointing to the multitude of the poor :

— There is the bishop's guard of honor.

And the bishop D. Manoel do Monte, who lived always in the most modest style, without any luxury, and always restricted to so limited a table that it was almost mean for himself, had his hands full of the bread of charity, and of gold to succour unhappy families, and his *guard of honor*.

Whatever his weaknesses may have been, his unfitting indulgence, his errors of angelic goodness in the government of the bishopric of Rio de Janeiro, it would be inexcusable ingratitude, it would be revolting, criminal injustice, not to render a tribute of admiration to the memory of this bishop, Manoel do Monte, whom few have equalled and none have exceeded in wisdom and in virtues without flaw.

If he was not a model bishop, he was a model priest. In his only defect as bishop he exalted himself, he purified his virtue as a priest, and as a man.

But the wise man did not carry, selfish or indolent, his wisdom to the tomb.

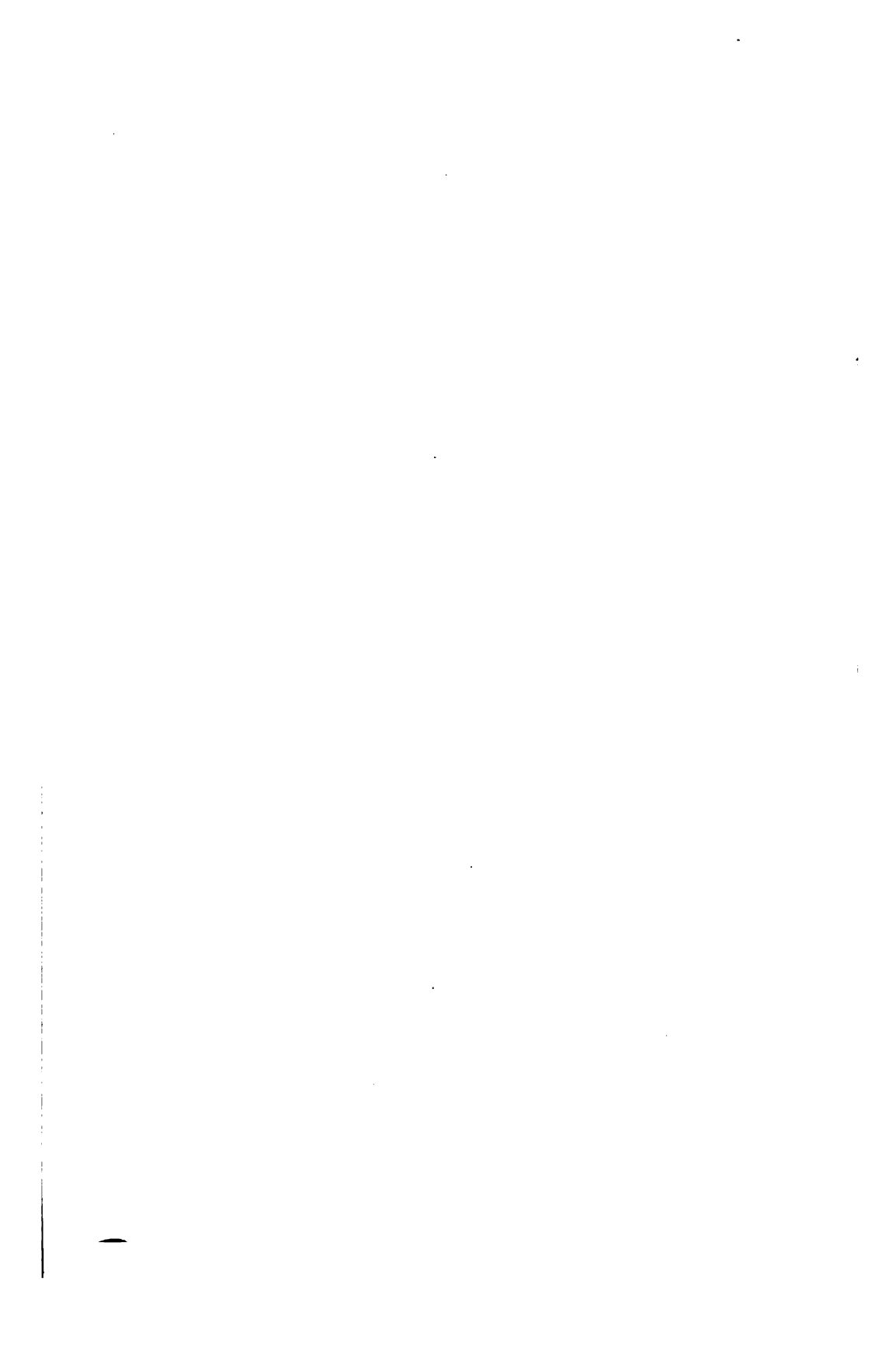
The wise man wrote and his works perpetuate his

name, for whose glory the sanctity of his life on earth alone was sufficient.

The bishop, D. Manoel do Monte, has left to his country and to ecclesiastical science, works which the most eminent theologians praise, quote, and applaud.

The venerable bishop, Count of Irajá, died on the 12th of July, 1863.





XXIV OF DECEMBER

FRANCISCO JOSÉ DE LACERDA E ALMEIDA



About the middle of the 18th century, Francisco José de Lacerda e Almeida, the son of José Antonio de Lacerda, was born in the city of S. Paulo.

It is not known where he commenced his studies nor when he passed from Brazil to Portugal. The Viscount of Porto Seguro, who has written the biography of this distinguished son of S. Paulo, from which this article is taken, states that he matriculated in mathematics at the University of Coimbra in 1772, and took the degree of doctor on the *24th of December, 1777*, the day on which we here inscribe his name.

Another Brazilian, Antonio Pires da Silva Pontes, a native of Minas Geraes, assumed the hood together with him.

They both left the university with an enlightened reputation, and the government having to attend to the demarkation of the limits of Brazil, according to the treaty of S. Ildefonso of the 1st of October of this same year 1777, they were nominated astronomers of the third party of definers, which was to take upon itself, under the direction of the governor of Matto Grosso, all that part of the frontier from the Jaurù to the Japurá.

With Dr. Antonio Pires, and other individuals nominated for the third and fourth party, Dr. Lacerda started from Lisbon on the 8th of January, 1780, arriving at Pará on the 25th of February.

On the 2d of August they proceeded to Barcellos, then the capital of the recently created captaincy of the Rio Negro, and while they were awaiting means of transport to their destination, the two Brazilian mathematicians proceeded to mark out many neighbouring districts.

Only Dr. Lacerda will be treated of in this article. He with one of the engineers undertook the survey from the Rio Negro up to above Marabitanas.

Returning to Barcellos at the close of January, 1781, it was only on the 1st of September that the transports were supplied him, which had been delayed so long a time.

Through the waters of the Amazon and the Madeira they made a long, painful, and perilous voyage, which Dr. Lacerda describes in his *Diary*, which was published in S. Paulo in 1841. The *Mura* tribe attacked them, and Dr. Lacerda was on the point of being killed: for an arrow passed close to his neck.

The persons sent on the expedition reached the capital of Matto Grosso on the 28th of February, 1782, a six months' journey!....

Dr. Lacerda was charged to explore the Lower Gua-

poré, and the rivers which empty themselves therein on the right bank.

In 1786, with Dr. Antonio Pires and two engineers, he proceeded to explore the river Paraguay and all the springs and lakes which fall into this river on the western side as far as Negra bay, arriving at Albuquerque on the 19th of July, and returning by the rivers S. Lourenço and Cuyabá to the town of that name.

Dr. Lacerda proceeded by land from this town to the capital of Matto Grosso, and thence returning to Cuyabá in 1788, he surveyed the rivers Taquari, Coxim, Camapuam, Sanguexuga, Pardo, Paraná, Tieté, and arrived at S. Paulo on the 10th of January, 1789.

He was ordered to return to Portugal. He arrived at Lisbon on the 21st of September, 1790. He presented to the Academy of Sciences, who admitted him as a member, the *Diary* of his last journey from Villa Bella to Santos, with a map of part of the course of the Paraguay, and some time afterward, another map, that of the Guaporé, from Villa Bella to its confluence in the Mamoré, accompanied by a small memorial regarding the Spanish missions on the affluents of the Guaporé which he had visited.

Desirous to render still greater services, some years afterwards Dr. Lacerda proposed to undertake some commission abroad. D. Rodrigues de Souza Coutinho, afterwards Count of Linhares, had then entered the ministry, who, taking advantage of the great capacity and experience of the Brazilian mathematician, charged him to realize the journey from Mozambique to Angola by land, and to give him more authority, and all the resources of the colony whence he was to commence the journey, nominated him subaltern governor of the Sena rivers.

Dr. Lacerda immediately started from Portugal. In Tête he prepared the expedition, and immediately put himself *en route*; arriving, however, at the lands of Cazembe, he fell seriously ill and died at the end of a few days.

Before expiring he delivered all his works finished to his lieutenant.

The expedition, having lost its soul, returned to Tête.

In the Archives of the Brazilian Historical and Geographical Institute, there exist some copies of the manuscripts and labors of Dr. Francisco José de Lacerda e Almeida in this undertaking, which he had so far advanced.

XXV OF DECEMBER

MARTIN AFFONSO DE MELLO TEBYREÇÁ

In 1532, Martin Affonso de Souza, a famous Portuguese captain, who commanding a remarkable expedition, had come to found the first regular colonies in Brazil, disembarked in S. Vicente, and doubtless would have had to dispute the dominion of the land with the Indians, where the first colonial settlement was laid down, if the man banished in 1502, or shipwrecked in 1512, João Ramalho, in short, had not come to assist him.

João Ramalho, a banished or shipwrecked Portuguese, had fraternised with the Indians, or rather had had the good fortune to be adopted by them, and had deserved the preference and the love of a daughter of the respected *Morubixaba* Tebyreçá; he had by her, and perhaps by other Indian women, some sons, and was on this account the

most ancient stem of the first family of these half-breeds, the indomitable, terrible and heroic mamelukes of S. Paulo.

Even so João Ramalho could have done little, if he had not been able to make Tebyreça the Morubixaba, the father of his wife, do a great deal.

Through João Ramalho, Tebyreça received and assisted the Portuguese, and was a good friend of Martin Affonso de Souza, whose two first names he took when years later the Jesuits baptized him.

The most valiant and respected chief of the *Guayanazes*, a branch of the tribe of the *Tamoyos*, Tebyreça was in S. Paulo the strongest auxiliary element of the conquest of the Portuguese.

His courage, and his prestige among the savages, were, more than once, as walls of iron, which his brethren of the forests could not overthrow in their warlike impetus against the civilized conquerors.

In 1553 the Jesuits passed from S. Vicente to beyond the Serra do Mar, and founded the College of S. Paulo, the cradle of the town, afterwards city of the same name. Tebyreçá, who then probably took in baptism the name of Martin Affonso de Mello, connected himself with them, and soon even more a friend of those priests than João Ramalho himself, it was, in 1554, principally the arm of this brave and strong warrior, and his power over the Indians of his *cabilda*, which saved the Jesuits and their college from the tremendous attack, which a great number of Portuguese colonists and mamelukes directed against them.

A last and supreme service, which came to cost him his life, did the already old but Herculean Indian, Martim Affonso de Mello, the Tebyreçá, render in 1562.

The *Tamoyos* who were masters of all the country from

a little beyond Cape Frio to S. Vicente, formed a powerful conspiracy of many chiefs and *cabildas* against the Portuguese, whose power in the south of Brazil consequently was in the greatest danger. Carrying destruction to many rural settlements, victors in more than one point, animated by the victories, and by the large number of combatants, they advanced threateningly against S. Paulo.

Tebyreçá old but still Herculean, divined, and denounced the project of the *Tamoyos* who were in conspiracy. The attack on S. Paulo took place : the struggle was horrible and bloody, the *Tamoyos* were driven back, one of their principal chiefs died in combat at the hands of the brave Guayanaz chief, on whom all, with one accord, conferred the honours of victory.

It was a great deal : Tebyreçá had fought against his own brother the Morubixaba Araray, had slain in the struggle his nephew the Indian Jaguanharo, the symbol of strength and audacity, had conquered and driven away his hostile brethren ; but immediately after this most brilliant victory, and when the assailants were flying in rout, the conqueror, the colossus fell.

Tebyreça was covered with wounds.

The horrible struggle took place on the 10th of July, 1562 : the hero of this day suffered almost five months, and perished, dying in consequence of his serious wounds on the 25th of December of the same year.

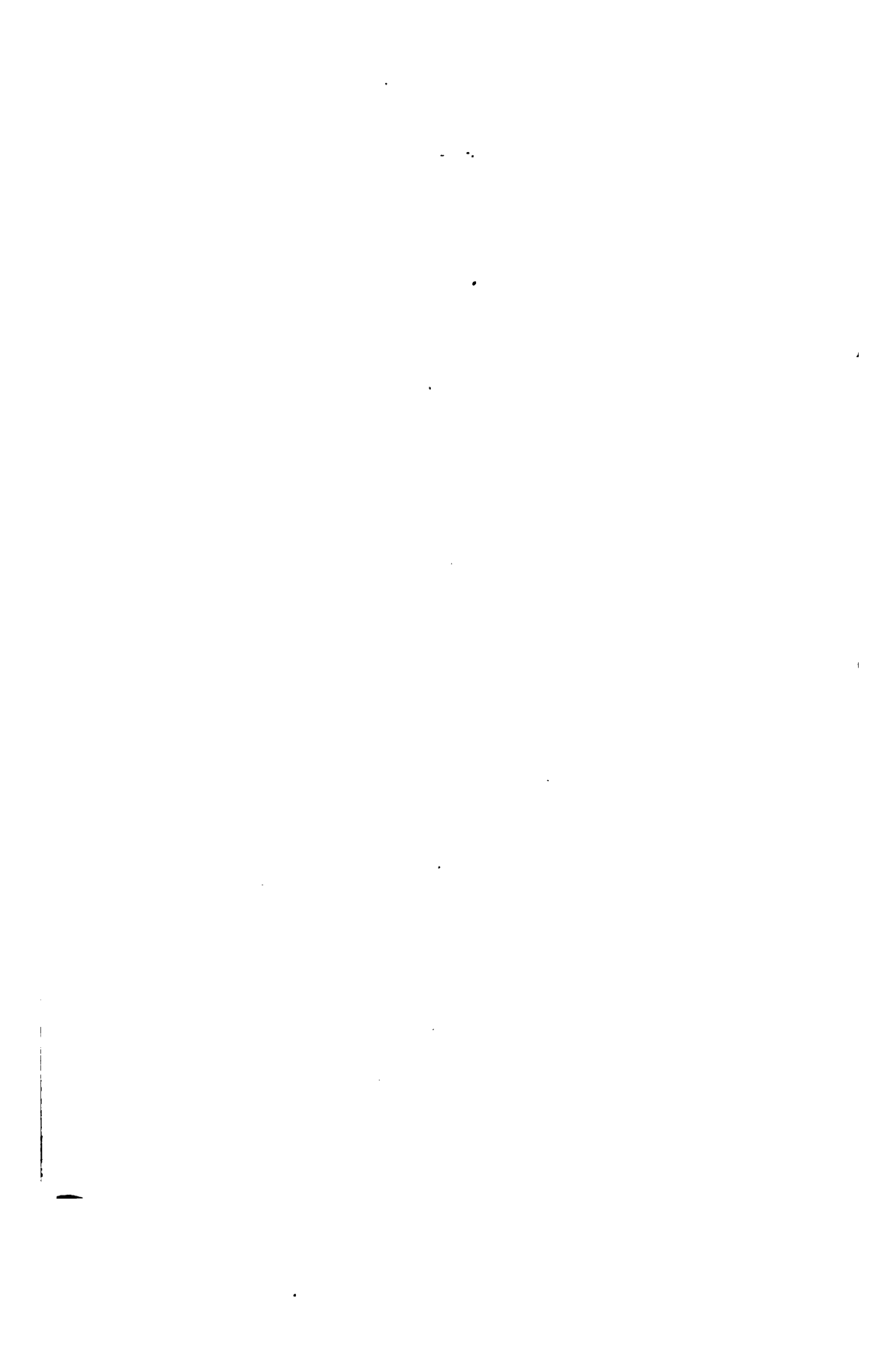
Two Indians of Brazil took in baptism the names of the Portuguese hero Martin Affonso de Souza.

One was *Martin Affonso de Mello*, the Tebyreça.

The other was Martin Affonso de Souza, the Ararigboya.

And both these Indians were heroes also.





XXVI OF DECEMBER

ANTONIO PEDRO DA COSTA FERREIRA

BARON OF PINDARÉ



The legitimate son of Lieut Colonel José Ascenso da Costa Ferreira and of D. Maria Thereza Ribeiro da Costa Ferreira, Antonio Pedro was born in the city, then still the town of Alcantara, in the province of Maranhão, on the *26th of December* 1778.

At fourteen years of age he was sent by his parents to Portugal, where he applied himself to preparatory studies in the Seminary of Coimbra, and afterwards enrolled himself in the University, graduated in canonical laws on the 2nd of June 1803, having advantageously followed the course of this science.

Returning to his province he devoted himself to agricultural industry, as that which most fell in with his independent character; but in 1808 the governor, Francisco de Manoel da Camara, nominated him fiscal agent of the *Junta* of the town of Alcantara; he afterwards in 1823 passed to exercise there the post of superintendent.

From 1822 Antonio Pedro da Costa Ferreira embraced with enthusiasm the cause of independence in Brazil, strongly disputed in Maranhão by the Portuguese garrison troops, and by a good number of Portuguese inhabitants: without fearing compromise and persecution he was an audacious promotor of the same, and already had the district prepared for the patriotic movement, when, on the 29th of July, 1823, the pennon, green and gold, brought by Lord Cochrane to the Bay of S. Marcos, precipitated the infallible discharge, causing to be proclaimed in the capital, and soon afterwards through all the province, the independence, and the Emperor D. Pedro I.

In 1825 Antonio Pedro da Costa Ferreira occupied the post of Secretary of the provincial government of Maranhão.

In 1826 he was elected a member of the general council of his province, and in this modest assembly he rendered relevant services, proposing the building of hospitals, the repairs and enlargement of the Bom Fim asylum, destined for patients afflicted with morpew, the creation of primary schools, and of a public library, which he endowed with three hundred and fifteen volumes.

Deputy in the General Assembly for his province, in the second legislature, he carried to the chamber the liberal ideas which he had always professed, and distinguished himself in the tribune by the frankness of his speech and the vivacity of his mind; highly accomplished, he possessed the

gift of natural originality, which characterized his oratory and gave him celebrity.

After the 7th of April 1831 he bound himself closely to the moderate — liberal party, and was the faithful companion of Evaristo, Vergueiro, Paulo e Souza, Feijó e Costa Carvalho (afterwards Marquis of Monte Alegre), besides Odorico Mendes, his friend.

On the 3rd of October 1831, the government of the Regency overcoming an already obstinate resistance, nominated him president of the province of Maranhão, and administering it, he organized with prudence and great intelligence some of its principal branches of service : created the provincial treasury, and regulated it making the income increase, and giving precepts for the respective book-keeping : he created the rural police in the different districts outside the capital, with the greatest advantage to the security of life and property ; he organized the police corps, and the Secretaryship of the government : he honoured the provincial calendar by declaring the 28th of July a holiday in Maranhão, in remembrance of the the triumph of 1823.

A violent revolt raging in Pará, he was untiring in assisting the legal authority of that province, sending soldiers and provisions ; and, with so much solicitude, that he gained the thanks of the general government and that of the province in fearful convulsion.

Like Odorico Mendes, Costa Ferreira had proved the ingratitude of the people of Maranhão, not being re-elected deputy to the third legislature ; they, however, at least in regard to him, knew how to wash away this stain, including his name in the triple list for senatorial election in 1834, and the well-deserving citizen was chosen senator by decree of the 20th of December of the same year.

From that time for twenty-five years he flourished in the Brazilian senate, where he frequently displayed in the tribune the oratorical gifts which had already recommended him in the temporary chamber, without ever or one single day, on one single occasion belying the liberal principles, which were the light of his life. None has shown himself more firm and unshaken than he.

In 1841 the emperor honoured him with the degree of *Official* of the Imperial Order of the Cruzeiro, and, later, with the title of Baron of Pindaré, with state honours.

In the senate he was the first who signed the bill declaring the majority of D. Pedro II. In the most difficult and arduous discussions Costa Ferreira was sivre to ascend the tribune, where, frank and daring, he never availed himself of reticence. He said what he thought, clearly and positively. He was not eloquent, neither was he a strong debater, he spoke as through he was conversing; he never declaimed, he spoke simply and naturally, but abounding in pungent and most witty epigrams. In the most heated and sometimes violent debate, he would rise, and raising his agreeable voice confound, and exasperate his adversaries with adequate jest, with a happy application of anecdotes, and with funny impromptus which made every one laugh, and sunk deep in ridicule the most illustrious orators of the opposition, but which, meanwhile, calmed the exaggerated excitement of the parliamentary combat.

Senator Candido Baptista de Oliveira, a learned man, and a man of the keenest faculties, said many times of the Baron of Pindaré: « when he dies, there will not soon be found one who will substitute him, with equal accomplishments, in the Senate. »

Outside the Upper Chamber the Baron of Pindaré was the same in his private relations as he there showed himself,

frank, amiable, honourable; a pleasant joker, a type of loyalty, and charitable according to the teaching of the divine law.

The Baron of Pindaré died in Rio de Janeiro on the 18th of July, 1860, at the age of eighty-two years.

And by the liberal ideas which he professed, in whose service he had done so much, at eighty-two years of age he was still as young as when he returned from Coimbra and showed himself in Maranhão in his twentyfifth year.

He was well-deserving for his services, and exemplary for firmness in defence of the principles which he had adopted.

He never passed beyond the limits of legitimacy in politics, but he also never recoiled one inch in the field of legal or parliamentary controversies, pleading for his party, principally in periods of the most bitter adversity.

In politics he showed up to his death all the ardour and enthusiasm of youth, even when he was already an octogenarian.

The Baron of Pindaré shines in the past with the brilliant light of the finest example left in the political arena for the present and future generations.



XXVII OF DECEMBER

JOÃO BAPTISTA VIEIRA GODINHO



During the times of the colonial government the progress and distinction of a Brazilian in any career dependent upon official action were undeniable proofs of the most incontestible merit. If there were some exceptions from this rule, they can only be explained by the lineage of the *protegés*, belonging to noble and rich families of the Metropolis.

These considerations serve for the calculation of the intelligence, capacity, and services of João Baptista Vieira Godinho, born in 1742 in the city of Marianna, province of Minas Geraes, being on the maternal side grandson of the Chief-Serjeant Gabriel Fernandes Aleixo, a notary of the *Provedoria* of the deceased and absent, the chapels, etc., of the *Camara* of Villa Rica.

Sent to Lisbon, Godinho enlisted in the Military Academy in 1760; in June, 1764, he was promoted to Second-Lieutenant of the Artillery Regiment of the city of Porto, and ten years afterwards passed to be Captain of the Fire Brigade, and professor of the artillery regiment which had then orders to organize. Assuring him in his patent, that of Chief-Serjeant and professor, immediately his commission should conclude, which for six years would detain him in India; but at the end of six years the Governor and Captain-General would not allow him to return to Lisbon, and the Minister of Foreign Affairs, Martinho de Mello e Castro, wrote to Captain Godinho, telling him to remain in India, for *there it was impossible*, and even in Portugal it was very difficult to meet with any one who, with merit equal to his, could substitute him.

Godinho continued to ascend to higher posts. He served as barrack-master-general in the campaign against Sar Dersai; already colonel in 1784 he started for the Moluccas as Governor and Captain-General of the islands of Timor and Solor, carrying *at his own cost* one hundred and six persons, including mechanics and sailors. He governed in a first-class manner; doubled the proportions of commerce; and in 1789 left so poor that to pay his passage to Gôa, he was obliged to sell a slave, whom he possessed. Queen Maria I, by decree of the 5th of October, 1792, doubled his salary, and thenceforward he always received twice the emoluments of the posts to which he succeeded.

Inspecting the artillery train, Godinho introduced into the service all the improvements already known in Prussia and France.

In 1779 he at last left India, and was sent, at his own request, to serve in the Bahia artillery regiment, where he received the patent of brigadier: there, in the ancient

capital of Brazil, he did for the artillery train, what he had done for that of Gôa, and established the machines and means necessary to turn to advantage the damaged powder which they were accustomed to throw into the sea as useless.

Godinho returned to Lisbon, where he was promoted to Field marshal : and meeting in this capital, at that time in straitened circumstances, the honoured Desembargador Pestana e Vasconcellos, who had bestowed upon him many favours before his departure for India, the marshal now sixty-two years old, married the eldest daughter of his friend, and a little while afterwards inherited the noble burden of the whole of his family.

Forcibly detained in Lisbon by Junot, who had invaded Portugal, and reduced almost to penury, it was only in 1808 that he could reach Bahia, on the *27th of December*, and there received in the same year the patent of Lieutenant-General in gradation, and the effective appointment in the following year, dying some months afterwards on the morning of the 12th of February 1811.

The lieutenant-general Godinho left voluminous manuscripts upon artillery and fortification ; all however mutilated ; a plan for the establishment of a charitable fund in behalf of the widows and orphans of military officers ; another for the spice trade ; a third for the introduction of snuff into China, and other works.

XXVIII OF DECEMBER

FRANCISCO DIOGO PEREIRA DE VASCONCELLOS

In Villa Rica, afterwards the city of Ouro Preto, capital of the province of Minas Geraes, Francisco Diogo Pereira de Vasconcellos, the legitimate son of Dr. Diogo Pereira Ribeiro de Vasconcellos and of D. Maria do Carmo Barradas, was born on the 28th of December, 1812.

He studied humanities with distinction in his own province, and in that of S. Paulo followed the course of the juridical academy, in which in 1835 he graduated bachelor in social and juridical science.

In the following year he entered on the career of the magistracy, being nominated municipal and orphans, judge of the district of Ouro Preto, passing afterwards to be the substitute judge (*direito*) of the district of Parahybuna, in 1839 being gazetted judge (*direito*) of the district of Rio das Mortes, always in the province of Minas-Geraes.

In 1840 he was elected member of the assembly of the same province, and re-elected in other legislatures, sometimes directed, as president, the works of the assembly.

From 1842 to 1844 he exercised the functions of Chief of Police for Minas Geraes.

In the same year, 1842, his province elected him deputy to the general legislative assembly in which he continued to have a seat as deputy *supplente* from 1845 to 1848, and re-elected as deputy from 1850 onward, until in November, 1857, he was chosen Senator by H. M. the Emperor in a sextuple list offered by the province of Minas Geraes.

Second vice-president of this province in 1843, he passed soon afterwards to first until 1844 ; again Chief of Police there until 1849, he began in the following year to exercise the same functions in the capital of the Empire until 1853, when he was nominated president of Minas Geraes, three years afterwards being transferred to the province of S. Paulo.

In September, 1856, after the most rigid and laborious parliamentary campaign, the victorious athlete, the Marquis of Paraná, the head of what was called the *Conciliation* cabinet, died, and this cabinet abandoned power on the 3d of May, 1857. On the following day the Marquis of Olinda, charged by the Emperor to organize a new cabinet, called Francisco de Vasconcellos to the portfolio of Justice, The policy of the 4th of May ministry, which was termed by its adversaries *geographical*, rejected the exclusive dominion of parties, and reanimated the liberals who had been out of office since September, 1848, having the Viscount of Souza Franco minister of the Exchequer, and Counsellor Jeronymo Francisco Coelho, minister of War, one the chief, the other a notable member of this party.

A new, warmly contested, and brilliant campaign was

then opened in both houses of Parliament, and in the Lower Chamber, Francisco Diogo, now esteemed as an orator of merit, displayed in the tribune remarkable gifts, which until then his modesty had not allowed him to reveal.

On the 12th of December 1858 the Cabinet of the 4th of May withdrew, and Senator Francisco Diogo de Vasconcellos in the interval of the legislative sessions practiced law in the city of Rio de Janeiro, with praise, well-merited by his accomplished intelligence and exemplary probity.

Already ill and broken down he accepted the presidency of his darling province, and in the exercise of it, his sufferings grew more aggravated, and death overtook him in the city of Ouro Preto, in March 1863.

Francisco Diogo Pereira de Vasconcellos, Commander of the order of Christ, and Official of the Imperial Order of the Rose, was a distinguished and illustrious man ; in the magistracy a type of justice and incorruptibility ; in politics an important member of the Conservative party, and from 1856 openly declared in alliance with the liberals ; stood prominent at all times (except in the periods of revolt and reaction in which the contagion of passions reached everybody) as a man tolerant, moderate, just, and magnanimous in character.

He shone in life less by his faculties than he might have done ; but two contrary things did him honor.

The first was his modesty which crushed by duty in 1857 and 1858 only, in the last years of his life alone allowed the refulgent rays of his spirit to shine forth.

The second was the name of Vasconcellos, a name which compelled a terrible and overpowering comparison.

Francisco Diogo was the brother of Diogo Pereira de Vasconcellos, the first statesman of Brazil, the Hercules

of the parliamentary tribune, the giant at whose feet almost all were diminutive.

Those who pointed out Francisco Diogo said :

« It is the brother of Vasconcellos. »

Vasconcellos the elder eclipsed Vasconcellos his younger brother.

The responsibility of a great and glorious name is enormous.

But Francisco Diogo Pereira de Vasconcellos bequeathed a gentle, enlightened and beautiful memory ; for he was an accomplished patriot, a constant and zealous servant of the Empire, and because after long years of services in the highest posts and most eminent social positions he died, bequeathing to his only and most darling daughter the name of her father immaculate, and for her whole fortune..... the greatest poverty.



XXIX OF DECEMBER

D. ROMUALDO ANTONIO DE SEIXAS

ARCHBISHOP OF BAHIA, MARQUIS OF SANTA CRUZ

In the town, now city of Camutá, province of Grão-Pará, was born on the 7th of February, 1787, Romualdo Antonio de Seixas, the legitimate son of Francisco Justiniano de Seixas and D. Angela de Souza Bittencourt.

At seven years of age he arrived at the capital of the province, recommended to his uncle, Father Romualdo de Souza Coelho, the secretary of the bishop of the diocese of Pará, D. Manoel de Almeida de Carvalho: the boy, sent to receive a literary education, studied in the Seminary of Pará, and at thirteen years of age completed the studies

of Latin, French, and rational and moral philosophy, with so much applause from the masters, and such ardour of application, and brilliancy of intelligence, that dedicating himself to the priesthood, his uncle sent him to Portugal, to frequent the classes of the celebrated congregation of S. Felipe Nery, where he profited much, and received lessons in physics from the illustrious Father Theodoro de Almeida.

At the end of two years he left the Congregation, stayed some months in Lisbon, perfecting himself in the study of eloquence and literature with the famous Dr. José Joaquim Ferreira de Moura.

At eighteen years of age he returned to his province, and being inaugurated at that time, with great solemnity and in presence of the Captain-general, the count of Arcos, the public class of philosophy, the young Romualdo after the speech of the competent professor had been heard, recited, with previous authorization, one of his own, analogous to the subject, gaining general eulogies, and the esteem of the Count of Arcos from that day, who afterwards in Rio de Janeiro always spoke of the student, and future priest, with the greatest praise of his auspicious talent.

The young Romualdo had scarcely received the first tonsure than he was immediately nominated Master of the ceremonies of the *Solio* (throne), and from the age of nineteen years he shone in the professorship of the Ecclesiastical Seminary of Pará: teaching successively Latin, rhetoric and poetry, philosophy, the French language and at length dogmatic theology.

Sub-deacon at twenty-one years of age, by an especial grace of his Prelate, he had permission to proclaim the Divine word, and made his first appearance, pronouncing

impromptu a panegyric upon S. Thomaz de Aquino, substituting in the sacred tribune the bishop himself, who was to preach, and had been taken ill on the eve of the solemn religious ceremony.

Still at twenty-one years of age, with the simple order of deacon, he was sent with another young ecclesiastic to Rio de Janeiro, in 1809, to compliment the Queen, the Prince Regent and the Portuguese Royal family in the new capital of the monarchy, and also to treat of grave and important business of the diocese.

They both had the best reception from the Prince Regent, fulfilled worthily their double mission, and returned honoured with the decoration of the Order of Christ, and with promotion to the chairs of Canons of the See of Pará then vacant.

Returning to his province, Canon Romualdo received the sacred order of presbyter in 1810, and celebrated his first mass in the parish church of Camutá, the town of his cradle, on the first of November of the same year.

Vicar *encomendado* (removable) in Camutá, he was soon after called upon to exercise the posts of *provisor* and vicar-general, during the absence of his uncle, Canon Souza Coelho, whom the bishop had sent to Rio de Janeiro, to represent him at the coronation of D. João VI, when a vacancy occurred in the See of Pará by the death of the bishop, and the nomination took place of his uncle, Canon Souza Coelho, to succeed him in the bishopric, and Romualdo Seixas was made capitulary vicar during the absence of the new bishop elect, returned to Rio de Janeiro, there awaited the bull of confirmation.

Souza Coelho also died, and upon Canon Romualdo devolved the pious task of weaving the praises of the illustrious departed, his uncle, his second father, his

virtuous and illustrious director, in the funeral obsequies of this Prelate. The eloquent and touching funeral oration was printed in Lisbon, and, submitted to the criticism of one of the most powerful preachers of that capital, received this concise and most elegant judgment. «Canon Romualdo begins where others finish. »

It was about this time that the two learned German naturalists Spix and Martins arrived at Pará, and there they valued so much the talents and merit of Canon Romualdo, that later, on their return to their country, they sent him the diploma of membership of the Royal Academy of Sciences of Munich.

In 1833 the Luzitanian troops still dominant in Pará compelled Canon Romualdo to accept the presidency of the new provisional Board: in this charge, imposed by force, and contrary to the national cause of Brazil, he knew how to be of use to his country, overcoming the raging resistance of the military chiefs, and saving the life of the young patriots of Pará, who were condemned to death for their proclaimed adherence to independence and Brazilian union. The illustrious and well deserving Canon Romualdo, risking his own life, proposed and caused to be adopted the measure: to send prisoners to Lisbon the patriots, already marked out for victims. The city of Nossa Senhora de Belem was illuminated at night, in applause of the wise provision saving those glorious sons of Pará, among whom was counted Bernardo de Souza Franco, later on, the Hercules of the Brazilian parliament.

The Lusitanian oppression was abated. Pará sparkled in enthusiasm, saluting the national standard of the Empire. In the first ordinary election this province contemplated in the number of its deputies, and in that of its general council, Canon Romualdo who, included in the list for

Senator, made them strike out his name thence, saying that he still wanted two years to the age which the constitution requires for Senators.

In 1826 Canon Romualdo took his seat in the Lower House, and on the 12th of October of the same year was nominated Archbishop of Bahia, the bulls of confirmation being forwarded on the 30th of May, 1827, by the Holy Father Geo XII.

While still a canon, in the pompous and solemn presentation of the Prince Imperial (D. Pedro II) just born, he had fulfilled with joyous eloquence the honorable task of orator of the sacred tribune. Bishop elect, he was the preacher chosen for the funeral rites of the first Empress of Brazil, and his discourse was printed and gained applause even with those who preserved a lively remembrance of that of S. Carlos at the exequies of Queen D. Maria I.

In 1828 the Archbishop of Bahia was president of the House of Deputies.

In the third legislature Bahia gave him a seat in the Lower House for the second time and later elected him to the fourth legislature.

In parliament he shone as an orator of profound learning and overpowering eloquence in subjects connected with religion. Without a narrow or disciplinary bond to any political party, he did not decline the most serious and ardent questions of the nine years of the wavering regency and of regents. He was one of the seventeen deputies who voted against the project for the banishment of D. Pedro I, the ex-emperor by voluntary abdication. He was the strenuous defender of José Bonifacio, when the question was brought up in the Camara of changing the tutorship of the Emperor in minority, and his august sisters.

In 1836 he declared himself in opposition to the Regent Feijó, and by his ideas and convictions was already a conservative in politics, when Bernardo de Vasconcellos met with him, already before a doctrinaire of the Conservative school, on the organization of the party which induced the Regent Feijó to renounce his high charge.

In 1838 the Archbishop of Bahia again occupied the chair of the Presidency of the chamber: at that time parties were in ardent and unbridled struggle; but the voice of the Brazilian Metropolitan was so much respected, that at his first counsel, at his most simple reminder, the most fiery and unmeasured orators immediately cooled and obeyed unprotestingly.

On the 18th of July, 1841, he presided as Metropolitan Primate of Brazil at the brilliant solemnity of the consecration of H. M. the Emperor D. Pedro II.

In 1839, not having been able to leave Bahia to appear in the legislative session, the decree of the Regent went there to surprise him, nominating him minister of the Empire of the newly-organized cabinet; but resisting all entreaties he did not think it well to accept so high and honourable a position.

The year 1841 was the last in which the Archbishop had a seat in the Legislative body.

In the province of Bahia the venerable archbishop belonged for a great many years, since the first legislature, to the provincial Assembly, and there he rendered important services.

In 1825 Pará struggling with a horrible and barbarous revolt, the learned Archbishop addressed an affecting and patriotic pastoral to the people of Pará persuading them to return to obedience of the laws, laying down their arms.

In 1837 the republican revolution breaking out in Bahia, which ruled there some months, the Archhishop withdrew to the Reconcavo, and there published two pastorals, which produced a considerable effect, animating and upraising the people, who hastened in defence of institutions, the union of the Empire, and order.

In the government of the archbishopric, D. Romualdo de Seixas left an example and lesson of moderation tempered by energy, of patriotic, and admirable harmony between the power of the State and the spiritual power without sacrifice of any kind.

He never disobeyed the Imperial Government, and when he had to watch over the rights of the Church, he did not protest; he wrote representing, discussing, enlightening, and always arrived at an agreement without it being preceded by a conflict.

He distinguished himself by his endeavours on behalf of the knowledge und morality of the clergy; he obtained everything however without ostentation of energetic force, and always with the greatest tact and prudence, and with the reserve necessary, so as not to expose the less zealous priest to the censures and laughter of the less sensible part of the public, who sometimes attack the sacred ministry for the errors and abuses of some reprehensible ministers.

As wise as he was modest, of most easy and agreeable access, a devoted lover of his country, and enthusiast of talented youth, a master who sought advice, the venerable and most enlightened Archbishop D. Romualdo was a splendid beacon of civilization, an encourager of young literary aspirers and poets, a paternal guide, a chief who showed himself a friend of the clergy whom he governed, and a manifested breast open to the poor in evangelical and as far as possible hidden charity.

In the parliamentary tribune shone the reflex of the admirable rays of his overpowering eloquence in the sacred tribune.

He was an orator complete in the light of science, in glowing enthusiasm, and in imposing convictions.

A giant by his intelligence and vast knowledge, he shone as the sun in the firmament of the church of Brazil.

The honors of the earth, the splendor of which dazzled him, overpowering his modesty, lay upon him in profusion. Learned men of the old world, the most eloquent sacred orators of Brazil, all the statesmen of the Empire, poets, literary men, historians of the country, paid tributes of respect and admiration to the venerable Archbishop.

The Royal Academy of Sciences of Munich, the African Institute in Paris, the Brazilian Geographical Institute, and ten other scientific and literary societies, or even more, conferred upon him diplomas of honorary or corresponding membership.

The Emperor D. Pedro I nominated him preacher of the Imperial Chapel, and Grand Dignitary of the Imperial Order of the Rose: D. Pedro II conferred upon him the Grand Cross of the Order of Christ, with the well deserved, and well chosen title, of Count, and afterwards Marquis, of Santa Cruz.

The Archbishop of Bahia, Marquis of Santa Cruz, died in the capital of his archbishopric, on the 29th of December 1860.

The city of Bahia in profound mourning, told how much this mighty man was worth in the esteem and veneration of all its people, mourning still deeper in the heart than in the public and general manifestation, in which it was accompanied by the whole of Brazil.

The Archbishop of Bahia, Marquis of Santa Cruz, has left to his country the treasure of some of his works in six volumes, which are precious; but they only give an incomplete idea of the great merit, and of the profound and vast wisdom which recommended him to the admiration of his contemporaries.





XXX OF DECEMBER

LUIZ ALVES LEITE DE OLIVEIRA BELLO



A native of the city of Porto Alegre, the capital of the province of S. Pedro do Rio Grande do Sul, where he was born in 1817, Luiz Alves Leite de Oliveira Bello, the legitimate son of Brigadier Wenceslão de Oliveira Bello and of D. Anna Bello, belonged to one of the most highly-considered families of the province.

Losing his mother very early, and in consequence of the military service which frequently compelled his father to absent himself, he remained under the care of his maternal grandfather, Major André Alves Ribeiro Vianna, who loved him tenderly on his own account, and on account of the daughter whom death had taken from him; he was the idol and inseparable companion of the kind old man, his second Providence upon earth.

His first studies were made in Porto Alegre, and he went to conclude what were still wanting in S. Paulo, where he graduated in the juridical science.

Destining himself for the career of the magistracy, he made his first appearance as public prosecutor of the town of Itaborahy, in the province of Rio de Janeiro, leaving there tender recollections and not a single enemy, having fulfilled his charge with intelligence and exemplary honesty. He exercised also in Porto Alegre the functions of criminal judge, and from this place retired upon a pension with the honors of Desembargador.

A legitimate influence in his own province, Desembargador Luiz Alves Leite de Oliveira Bello was there one of the two principal leaders of the conservative party, and different times elected deputy to the General Assembly, he gained always much consideration from his colleagues in the Lower House. He was there an esteemed orator; and in the tribune he respected such a nice propriety, and broke lances with such refined courtesy, that always at the and of combat his adversary could nobly shake hands with him.

As Vice-president of Rio Grande do Sul, the glory of administering his natal province several times devolved upon him. Distinguishing himself principally in 1851, when the actual Duke of Caxias, his relative on the paternal side, passed to the front of the Brazilian army on the fields of the River Plate to make the campaign against Oribe and the Dictator of Buenos Ayres.

A gentleman of a fine education, a man of serious character, of pure customs and severe probity, Desembargador Luiz Alves Leite de Oliveira Bello was an excellent husband and a watchful father. He died in the vigor of years,

wept for by all who knew him, and who gave joint testimony to his gentle dealing and his civic and private virtues.

His death was a most lamentable disaster. He was going hunting for amusement in one of the *estaneias* of the province of his cradle, when by his own want of care, or by a sad fatality, the gun went off unexpectedly, killing him dead on the 30th of December, 1865.

The country lost in Desembargador Luiz Alves Leite a distinguished and devoted citizen, and the conservative party its principal and most esteemed leader in the province of Rio Grande do Sul.

He was a man of a great political future, who died at the midday of his already illustrious life.



XXXI OF DECEMBER

ALEXANDRE DE GUSMÃO

Brother of Bartholomeu Lourenço, of whom we treated in the article of the 5th of August, and ten years younger than he, Alexandre de Gusmão was born in Santos in 1695, and studied also up to fifteen years of age in the Jesuits' schools. Sent by his father to Portugal, he graduated in civil law in the University of Coimbra, having been fortunately directed by Bartholomeu Lourenço, known then already by antonomasia, the *Flyer*.

The fame of his talent and great intelligence, enriched by assiduous and severe studies, and the influence and favor which his brother enjoyed, gained him the appointment of Secretary of the Portuguese embassy, which was starting for France, of which the Count of Ribeira Grande was the head.

The embassy was of a sumptuous character, ostentatious of friendship, and its *personnel* was very carefully chosen. The war of the succession in Spain was finished; the general peace was made, and by the treaties and conventions of 1712, 1713 and 1714, the political questions were resolved. But Portugal wished to establish good relations with France and honor its old king Louis XIV, who moreover died a short time after the arrival of the Portuguese ambassador in Paris in 1715.

Alexandre de Gusmão took advantage of his stay in France to take, in the competent Faculty, the degree of Doctor in civil, Roman, and ecclesiastical law, and to enlarge his knowledge, principally in diplomatic subjects.

In 1720, on his return to Portugal with the embassy, he was employed as Secretary of the Affairs of the Kingdom, and began the series of his long and important services.

In 1721 he proceeded to Rome, the *attaché* of the private mission of his brother Bartholomeu Lourenço de Gusmão, whom he shortly substituted, staying to struggle with embarrassments and delays of all kinds until 1730, when he returned to Portugal, having obtained the honors of patriarch for the Archbishop of Lisbon, and the title of *Most Faithful* for the King.

D. João V nominated Alexandre de Gusmão to the position of *escrivão de puridade*, an office not denominated, but equivalent to minister of an important department, for he transmitted the orders of the King upon almost all the branches of administration of the State.

Besides this position, Alexandre de Gusmão was charged with the decifration, and substituted the ancient sign for the new one which he created. Up to 1750 he was the in-

spiring intelligence of the most important external negotiations : among others the presentation of the bishops by the most faithful king was due to his efforts and ability. Incontestable documents prove that he was the most consummate diplomatist of his time in Portugal and at least equal to D. Luiz da Cunha who, moreover, had at an exalted reputation in the same.

In the administration of internal affairs documental proofs abound of what Alexandre Gusmão was as *escrivão da puridade*, a minister upright, energetic, liberal, and exceedingly able.

Councillor Pereira da Silva in his work (in this and in other articles closely followed), *The Illustrious Men of Brazil*, treating of this celebrated and learned Brazilian, copies different *avisos* of the *escrivão de puridade*, Alexandre de Gusmão, which will be sufficient to highly exalt and honor his name.

The famous *Madrid treaty* of the 13th of January, 1750, so badly comprehended moreover by the Portuguese, was the last work and the golden key of the diplomatic life of Alexander Gusmão. This treaty, by which the limits of Brazil with the Spanish possessions in South America were fixed, although it left to Spain the Colony of Sacramento, was very advantageous, and worthy of the eminent Brazilian who prepared it, explained it in a memorial offered to D. José I, and further defended it in a splendid contribution which he published in Lisbon under the title of *Impugnação*.

In 1742 nominated Minister of the Naval Foreign Council, Alexandre de Gusmão rendered good services to the administration and colonization of Brazil, his own country.

But D. João V, had died in 1750, and in the reign of D. José I, Alexandre de Gusmão, put aside, and fallen

out of favor, still further felt his heart wounded by the loss of two sons which he had from his nuptials, losing them horribly in a fire which consumed his house and everything which he possessed.

He survived but a short time so terrible a blow : being buried in the Convent of Nossa Senhora dos Remedios, of the Barefoot Carmelites.

Diplomatist, statesman, and administrator of the first order, a man of vast intelligence and of great and varied knowledge, Alexandre de Gusmão was one of the fifty members of the Royal Academy of Portuguese History, and of different foreign academies, and gained by his academical speeches, poetical compositions, and memorials on interesting subjects a remarkable literary reputation.

INDEX

THIRD VOLUME

September

I	D. Maria Ursula de Abreu e Lancastro.....	1
II	Thomaz Antonio Gonzaga.....	5
III	Angelo dos Reis.....	9
IV	Bento de Figueiredo Tenreiro Aranha.....	11
V	Honorio Hermeto Carneiro Leão, marquis of Paraná..	15
VI	Joaquim José Rodrigues Torres, viscount of Itaborahy..	27
VII	Francisco de Mello Franco.....	37
VIII	Pedro Miguel Luiz Teixeira.....	43
IX	Angela do Amaral Rangel.....	45
X	Francisco Gonçalves Martins, viscount of S. Lourenço..	49
XI	Cassiano Spiridião Mello e Mattos.....	55
XII	Manoel Antonio Alvares d'Azevedo.....	61
XIII	Nicoláo Pereira de Campos Vergueiro.....	67
XIV	Antonio Eliziario de Miranda e Brito.....	73
XV	D. Friar Bernardo de Nossa Senhora.....	77
XVI	Friar José da Costa Azevedo.....	79
XVII	Aureliano de Souza e Oliveira Coutinho.....	83
XVIII	José da Costa Carvalho, marquis of Monte Alegre.....	95
XIX	Antonio Peregrino Maciel Monteiro, baron of Itamaracá.	101

II

XX	Alexandre Rodrigues Ferreira.....	105
XXI	José Candido de Moraes e Silva.....	109
XXII	Amador Bueno da Ribeira.....	115
XXIII	Bento do Amaral.....	119
XXIV	Friar Antonio de Santa Maria.....	123
XXV	Luiz de Vasconcellos e Souza.....	125
XXVI	D. Antonio Felipe Camarão.....	129
XXVII	Damião Barboza de Araujo.....	135
XXVIII	Antonio Pereira.....	139
XXIX	D. Antonio Joaquim de Mello.....	141
XXX	Bernardo Vieira Ravasco.....	147

October

I	Friar Fabiano de Christo.....	151
II	Antonio Manoel de Mello.....	155
III	José de Abreu, baron of Serro Largo.....	161
IV	Francisco Gé Acaiaba de Montesuma, viscount of Jequitinhonha.....	169
V	Diogo Alvares—The Caramurú.....	177
VI	Pero Lopes de Souza.....	183
VII	Alexandre Maria de Mariz Sarmiento.....	187
VIII	Paulino José Soares de Souza, viscount of Uruguay.....	191
IX	Don Agostinho Bezerra.....	197
X	Pero de Campos Tourinho.....	199
XI	Urbano Sabino Pessoa de Mello.....	203
XII	D. Pedro de Alcantara Bourbon, first emperor of Brazil..	207
XIII	João Mello.....	245
XIV	Joaquim Gomes de Souza.....	247
XV	Miguel de Frias Vasconcellos.....	251
XVI	Felisberto Caldeira Brant Pontes, marquis of Barbacena..	259
XVII	Theophilo Benedicto Ottoni.....	275
XVIII	João Alvares Carneiro.....	285
XIX	Lourenço da Silva Araujo e Amazonas.....	291
XX	José de Souza Azevedo Pizarro e Araujo.....	293
XXI	José Joaquim de Andrade Neves, baron of Triumpho.....	297

XXII	José Martiniano d'Alencar.....	305
XXIII	Manoel Ferreira Lagos.....	311
XXIV	Miguel de Souza Mello e Alvim.....	315
XXV	Manoel de Freitas Magalhães.....	323
XXVI	Matheus Saraiva.....	327
XXVII	João Hopman.....	329
XXVIII	Conrado Jacob de Niemeyer.....	333
XXIX	Friar Antonio da Piedade.....	341
XXX	Gonçalo Soares da França.....	343
XXXI	Joaquim Gonçalves Ledo.....	345

November

I	João Paulo dos Santos Barreto.....	353
II	Paulo José de Mello Azevedo e Brito.....	359
III	José Antonio Lisboa.....	363
IV	Manoel de Mello Franco.....	367
V	Joaquim Candido Soares de Meirelles.....	373
VI	Francisco de Almeida.....	379
VII	José Vieira do Couto.....	381
VIII	José Leandro de Carvalho.....	383
IX	Domingos Caldas Barboza.....	387
X	Antonio Carlos Ribeiro de Andrada Machado e Silva.....	391
XI	Genuino Olympio Sampaio.....	401
XII	Manoel Rodrigues da Costa.....	407
XIII	Antonio Luiz Pereira da Cunha, marquis of Inhambupe..	411
XIV	Manoel de Macedo Pereira de Vasconcellos.....	417
XV	Friar João da Apresentação.....	419
XVI	Simão Pereira de Sá.....	421
XVII	Manoel Antonio de Almeida.....	423
XVIII	D. Cecilia Barboza.....	427
XIX	Joaquim de Oliveira Alvares.....	431
XX	Francisco Villela Barboza, marquis of Paranaguá.....	441
XXI	Emilio Joaquim da Silva Maia.....	449
XXII	José Saturnino da Costa Pereira.....	455
XXIII	Manoel Arruda da Camara.....	461

XXIV	José Monteiro de Noronha.....	465
XXV	João de Brito e Lima.....	469
XXVI	Ladisláo dos Santos Tatiára.....	471
XXVII	José Pinto de Azeredo	477
XXVIII	José Eloy Pessoa.....	481
XXIX	Saturnino de Souza e Oliveira Coutinho.....	485
XXX	D. Francisco Rólim de Moura.....	491

December

I	Manoel de Macedo.....	497
II	José Mariani.....	499
III	Friar Francisco de Mont'Alverne.....	503
IV	Manoel de Moraes.....	515
V	Manoel Felizardo de Souza e Mello.....	517
VI	João de Seixas.....	523
VII	The hroines de Tejucupapo.....	525
VIII	Aureliano Candido Tavares Bastos.....	529
IX	Nuno Marques Pereira.....	535
X	Domingos Affonso Mafrense.....	537
XI	Henrique Francisco Martins.....	539
XII	José Francisco de Mesquita, marquis of Bom-Fim.....	543
XIII	Friar Joaquim do Amor Divino Caneca.....	551
XIV	Jaguary Simão Soares.....	555
XV	Francisco de Paula Brito.....	559
XVI	Francisco de Paula Menezes.....	563
XVII	Antonio Pires da Silva Pontes Leme.....	567
XVIII	Francisco Manoel da Silva.....	571
XIX	Januario da Costa Barboza.....	575
XX	Gregorio de Mattos Guerra.....	581
XXI	Luiz Botelho do Rozario.....	585
XXII	Jacintha de S. José.....	587
XXIII	Bishop D. Manoel do Monte Rodrigues de Araujo.....	593
XXIV	Francisco José de Lacerda e Almeida.....	599
XXV	Martin Affonso de Mello Tebyriçá.....	603

	v
XXVI Antonio Pedro da Costa Ferreira, baron of Pindaré..	607
XXVII João Baptista Vieira Godinho.....	611
XXVIII Francisco Diogo Pereira de Vasconcellos.....	617
XXIX D. Romualdo Antonio de Seixas, archbishop of Bahia, marquis of Santa Cruz.....	623
XXX Luiz Alves Leite de Oliveira Bello.....	631
XXXI Alexandre de Gusmão.....	635



